NATIONAL LIBRARY OF MEDICINE
Washington

JOHN DELAMATTER.
No. 1115

MEDICAL LIBRARY,
OF
WESTERN RESERVE COLLEGE.
Presented by Prof. Delamater
No. 44.

Case 3
Shelf G
No. 106

A

TREATISE

ON

THE BLOOD,

INFLAMMATION,

AND

GUN-SHOT WOUNDS,

BY THE LATE

JOHN HUNTER.

TO WHICH IS PREFIXED

A SHORT ACCOUNT OF THE AUTHOR's LIFE,

BY HIS BROTHER-IN-LAW,

EVERARD HOME.

IN TWO VOLUMES, FROM THE LONDON QUARTO.

VOL. I.

PHILADELPHIA:

PUBLISHED BY THOMAS BRADFORD, PRINTER

BOOK-SELLER & STATIONER,

No. 8,

South Front-Street,

1796.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

THE LIFE OF THE AUTHOR, page i

INTRODUCTION, 1

SECT. I. Of diſeaſed actions, as being incompatible with each other, 3
II. Of parts ſuſceptible of particular diſeaſes, 5
III. Of ſympathy, ibid
IV. Of mortification, 7

PART I.

CHAPTER I.

GENERAL PRINCIPLES OF THE BLOOD. 9

SECT. I. Of the maſs of blood, as compoſed of different parts, 13
II. Of coagulation, and its effects, 15
III. Of the ſerum, 27
IV. Of the red globules, 37
V. Of the quantity of blood, and courſe of its circulation, 63
VI. Of the living principle of the blood, 70
VII. Some unconnected experiments reſpecting the blood, 87

CHAPTER II.

OF THE VASCULAR SYSTEM. 94

SECT. I. General obſervations on muſcular contraction and elaſticity, 94
II. General obſervations on the elongation of relaxed muſcles, 99
III. Of the ſtructure of arteries, 106
IV. Of the vaſa arteriarum, 123
V. Of the heart, 125

406147

VI. General obſervations on blood-veſſels, 133
VII. Valves of arteries, 150
VIII. Of the diviſion or branching of arteries, 154
IX. Of the action of the arteries, and the velocity of the blood's motion, 166
X. Of veins, 170

PART II.

CHAPTER I.

UNION BY THE FIRST INTENTION. 179
SECT. I. Of injuries in which there is no external communication, 182
II. Of injuries where the wound communicates externally, 192
III. Practical obſervations reſpecting union by the firſt intention, 199
IV. Of ſcabbing, 204
V. Accidents attended with death in a ſuperficial part, 209

CHAPTER II.

FUNDAMENTAL PRINCIPLES OF INFLAMMATION, 211
SECT. I. Of the different cauſes which increaſe and diminiſh the ſuſceptibility for inflammation, either in the whole body or in parts, 216
II. Effects of ſtrength, or weakneſs of conſtitution, and of parts, while under inflammation, 219
III. Of parts of the body moſt ſuſceptible of the three different inflammations to be treated of, 224
IV. Of the two parts that have the orders of inflammation reſpecting priority inverted, 230
V. The natural cauſe of the adheſive inflammation being limited, 233
VI. Of inflammation—its ſtages, 237
VII. Of the different degrees, and different kinds of inflammation, 244

A

SHORT ACCOUNT

OF THE

LIFE OF THE AUTHOR.

JOHN HUNTER was the ſon of John Agnes Hunter of Kilbride, in the county of Lanerk; he was the youngeſt of ten children, and was born on the fourteenth of July, 1728, at Long-Calderwood, a ſmall eſtate belonging to the family. His father was deſcended from Hunter of Hunterſton, an old family in Ayrſhire, and his mother was the daughter of Mr. Paul, a very reſpectable man, and treaſurer of the city of Glaſgow.

He had four brothers, John, Andrew, James, and William; and five ſiſters, Elizabeth, Janet, Agnes, Dorothea, and Iſabella; of theſe, John, Andrew, Elizabeth, Agnes, and Iſabella died, while children. James was born in 1715; was brought up to the law, as a writer to the ſignet in Edinburgh, but in the year 1742 went to London on a viſit to his brother William, who was at that time a teacher of anatomy, and ſo much was he captivated by the purſuits in which he found his brother engaged, that he purpoſed to follow them himſelf, and become a practitioner in phyſic. His health however was ſo much impared by his application to anatomy, that he was obliged to return to Long-

Calderwood, where he died of a ſpitting of blood, in the twenty-eighth year of his age*.

William was born on the twenty-third of May, 1718, who became unrivalled as a teacher of anatomy, and it was under his foſtering care that his younger brother John was initiated in theſe purſuits, in which he afterwards became ſo diſtinguiſhed. His hiſtory is already in the hands of the public †.

Janet married Mr. Buchanan of Glaſgow, and died in 1749. Dorothea, who is ſtill alive, married the Rev. Doctor James Baillie, profeſſor of divinity in the univerſity of Glaſgow, by whom ſhe has one ſon, Matthew, doctor of phyſic, ſucceſſor to Dr. Hunter, as a teacher of anatomy and one of the phyſicians to St. George's Hoſpital, and two daughters, Agnes and Joanna.

John Hunter was about ten years old at his father's death, and was left under the direction of his mother, who was particularly indulgent to this her youngeſt ſon.

He was ſent to the grammar-ſchool, but not having a turn for languages, nor being ſufficiently under controul, he neglected his ſtudies, and ſpent the greateſt part of his time in country amuſements. About this time Mr. Buchanan, who had lately come from London to ſettle at Glaſgow as a cabinet-maker, paid his addreſſes to Mr. Hunter's ſiſter

* Mr. James Hunter was a young man of an uncommonly pleaſing addreſs, and of very quick parts. The late Dr. Hunter has been heard to remark, that if he had lived to practice phyſic in London, nothing could have prevented him from riſing to the top of his profeſſion. It would have been a remarkable circumſtance that three brothers ſhould have acquired the firſt reputation in three different branches of the ſame profeſſion.

† Written by Dr. S. Foart. Simmonds, and publiſhed in 1783.

Janet, and having many agreeable qualities, ſhe was induced to marry him, although contrary to the advice of her relations. This marriage gave the family great concern; for the qualities which had rendered Mr. Buchanan agreeable, led him into diſſipation, and made him neglect his buſineſs. Mr. John Hunter, who was now ſeventeen, went to Glaſgow upon a viſit to his ſiſter, for whom he had the greateſt affection, to comfort her in her diſtreſs, and endeavour to aſſiſt her huſband in extricating himſelf from his difficulties; but finding, after ſome time, all his efforts ineffectual, he returned to Long-Calderwood.

Tired of living idle in the country he began to turn his mind to ſome more active employment; and hearing much of the reputation which his brother William had acquired as a teacher of anatomy, he wrote to requeſt that he would allow him to come to London upon a viſit, making at the ſame time an offer to be his aſſiſtant in his anatomical reſearches; or, if that propoſal ſhould not be accepted, expreſſing a wiſh to go into the army. In anſwer to this letter, he received a very kind invitation from his brother, and immediately ſet off for London, accompanied by Mr. Hamilton, a friend of the family who was going upon buſineſs; they rode up together on horſeback.

Mr. Hunter arrived in London in September, 1748, about a fort-night before his brother began his courſes of lectures; and Dr. Hunter, who was very anxious to form ſome opinion of his talents for anatomy, gave him an arm to diſſect for the muſcles with the neceſſary directions how it was to be done; and he found the performance ſuch as greatly exceeded his expectation.

His firſt eſſay in anatomy having thus gained him ſome credit, Mr. Hunter was now employed in a diſſection of a more difficult nature; this was an

arm in which all the arteries were injected, and these, as well as the muscles were to be exposed and preserved; the manner in which this was performed, gave Dr. Hunter so much satisfaction, that he did not scruple to say, that his brother would become a good anatomist, and that he should not want for employment.

From this period we may consider Mr. Hunter as having seriously engaged in anatomy and under the instructions of Dr. Hunter and his assistant Mr. Symonds, he had every opportunity of Improvement, as all the dissections at this time carried on in London were confined to that school.

In the summer 1749, Mr. Cheselden, at the request of Dr. Hunter, permitted him to attend at Chelsea Hospital, and he there learnt the first rudiments of surgery.

The following winter he was so far advanced in the knowledge of human anatomy, as to instruct the pupils in dissection, to whom Dr. Hunter had very little time to pay attention. This office, therefore, fell almost entirely upon him, and was his constant employment during the winter season.

In the summer months of 1750, Mr. Hunter attended the hospital at Chelsea; in 1751, he became a pupil at St. Bartholomew's, and in the winter was present at operations occasionally, whenever any thing extraordinary occurred. The following summer he went to Scotland, and brought up his sister Dorothea, and in 1753 entered as a gentleman commoner at St. Mary Hall, Oxford. In 1754, he became a surgeon's pupil, at St. George's Hospital, where he continued during the summer months, and in 1756, was appointed house-surgeon.

In the winter, 1755, Dr. Hunter admitted him to a partnership in his lectures, and a certain portion of the course was allotted to him, besides

which, he gave lectures when the doctor was called away to attend his patients.

Making anatomical preparations was at this time a new art, and very little known; every preparation, therefore, that was skilfully made, became an object of admiration; many were wanting for the use of the lectures, and the doctor having himself an enthusiasm for the art, left no means untried to infuse into his brother a love for his favourite pursuits. How well he succeeded, the collection afterwards made by Mr. Hunter will sufficiently evince.

Anatomy seems to have been a pursuit for which Mr. Hunter's mind was peculiarly fitted, and he applied to it with an ardor and perseverance of which there is hardly any example. His labours were so useful to his brother's collection, and so gratifying to his disposition, that although in many other respects they did not agree, this simple tie kept them together for many years.

Mr. Hunter worked for ten years on human anatomy, during which period he made himself master of what was already known, as well as made some addition to that knowledge *. He traced the ramifications of the olfactory nerves upon the membranes of the nose, and discovered the course of some of the branches of the fifth pair of nerves. In the gravid uterus, he traced the arteries of the uterus to their termination in the placenta. He was also the first who discovered the existence of the lymphatic vessels in birds.

Many parts of the human body being so complex, that their structure could not be understood,

* An account of his injecting the testis, his description of the descent of that body, with observation on the hernia congenita, and his experiments in proof of the veins not being absorbents, are published in Dr. Hunter's Medical Commentaries.

nor their uſe aſcertained, Mr. Hunter was led to examine ſimilar parts in other animals, in which the ſtructure was more ſimple, and more within the reach of inveſtigation; this carried him into a wide field, and laid the foundation of his collection in comparative anatomy.

In this new line of purſuit this active inquirer began with the more common animals, and preſerved ſuch parts as appeared by their analogy, or in ſome other way, to elucidate the human œconomy. It was not his intention to make diſſections of particular animals, but to inſtitute an inquiry into the various organizations by which the functions of life are performed, that he might thereby acquire ſome knowledge of general principles. This, I believe, had never been before attempted, or certainly had never been carried far into execution.

So eagerly did Mr. Hunter attach himelf to comparative anatomy, that he ſought by every means in his power the opportunities of proſecuting it with advantage. He applied to the keeper of wild beaſts in the Tower for the bodies of thoſe which died there, and he made ſimilar applications to the men who ſhewed wild beaſts. He purchaſed all rare animals which came in his way; and theſe, with ſuch others as were preſented to him by his friends, he entruſted to the ſhowmen to keep till they died, the better to encourage them to aſſiſt him in his labours.

His health was ſo much impaired by exceſſive attention to his purſuits, that in the year 1760 he was adviſed to go abroad, having complaints in his breaſt, which threatened to be conſumptive. In October of that year, Mr. Adair, inſpector-general of hoſpitals, appointed him a ſurgeon on the ſtaff; and in the following ſpring he went with the army to Belliſle, leaving Mr. Hewſon to aſſiſt his brother during his abſence.

Mr. Hunter ſerved, while the war continued, as ſenior ſurgeon on the ſtaff, both in Belliſle and Portugal, till the year 1763; and in that period acquired his knowledge of gun-ſhot wounds; a ſubject which makes no inconſiderable part of the preſent work.

On his return to England he ſettled in London; where not finding the emoluments from his half-pay and private practice ſufficient to ſupport him, he taught practical anatomy and operative ſurgery for ſeveral winters. He returned alſo with unabated ardour to comparative anatomy, and his experiments could not be carried on in a large town, he purchaſed, for that purpoſe, about two miles from London, a piece of ground near Brompton, at a place called Earl's Court, on which he built a houſe.

In the courſe of his inquiries this excellent anatomiſt aſcertained the changes which animal and vegetable ſubſtances undergo in the ſtomach when acted on by the gaſtric juice; he diſcovered, by means of feeding young animals with madder, (which tinges growing bones red) the mode in which a bone retains its ſhape during its growth; and explained the proceſs of exfoliation by which a dead piece of bone is ſeparated from the living.

His fondneſs for animals made him keep ſeveral of different kinds in his houſe which by attention he rendered familiar with him, and amuſed himſelf by obſerving their peculiar habits, and inſtincts; but this familiarity was attended with conſiderable riſk, and ſometimes led him into ſituations of danger, of which the following is a remarkable inſtance.

Two leopards, which were kept chained in an out-houſe, had broken from their confinement, and got into the yard among ſome dogs, which they immediately attacked; the howling this produced,

alarmed the whole neighbourhood; Mr. Hunter ran into the yard to see what was the matter, and found one of them getting up the wall to make his escape, the other surrounded by the dogs; he immediately laid hold of them both, and carried them back to their den; but as soon as they were secured, and he had time to reflect upon the risk of his own situation, he was so much agitated that he was in danger of fainting.

On the fifth of February, 1767, he was chosen a Fellow of the Royal Society. His desire for improvement in those branches of knowledge which might assist in his researches led him at this time to propose to Dr. George Fordyce and Mr. Cumming an eminent mechanic, that they should adjourn from the meetings of the Royal Society, to some coffee-house, and discuss such subjects as were connected with science. This plan was no sooner established, than they found their numbers increased; they were joined by Sir Joseph Banks, Dr. Solander, Dr. Maskelyne, Sir George Shuckburgh, Sir Harry Englefield, Sir Charles Blagden, Dr. Noothe, Mr. Ramsden, Mr. Watt of Birmingham, and many others. At these meetings discoveries and improvements in different branches of philosophy were the objects of their consideration; and the works of the members were read over and criticised, before they were given to the public.

It was in this year that by an exertion in dancing, after the muscles of the leg were fatigued, he broke his tendo achillis. This accident and the confinement in consequence of it, led him to pay attention to the subject of broken tendons, and to make a series of experiments to ascertain the mode of their union. He did not, according to the common practice, confine himself to his bed, but by compressing the muscles, and raising the heel, he was enabled, with the knee being kept straight,

to walk about the third day after receiving the accident. He divided the tendo achillis of ſeveral dogs, by introducing a couching needle through the ſkin at ſome diſtance from it, and with the edge cut through the tendon; in this way the orifice in the ſkin healed up, and made it ſimilar to a broken tendon. The dogs were killed at different periods to ſhow the progreſs of union, which was exactly ſimilar to that of a fractured bone when there is no wound in the ſkin.

In the year 1768, Dr. Hunter having completed the houſe in Wind-mill-ſtreet, in which his collection is at preſent depoſited, and where he afterwards carried on his anatomical lectures, he gave up to Mr. Hunter the leaſe of his houſe in Jermyn-ſtreet, which was commodious and well ſituated for private practice. In this houſe Mr. Hunter lived ten years; the ſame year too he became a member of the corporation of ſurgeons; and in the year following, through his brother's intereſt, he was elected one of the ſurgeons of St. George's Hoſpital.

As he was always engaged in the improvement of his profeſſion, young gentlemen who came to London to finiſh their education were very deſirous of living in his houſe, and ſeveral gentlemen, very eminent in practice in different parts of the country, received part of their education as his houſe-pupils. Dr. Edward Jenner of Berkley, Mr. William Guy of Chicheſter, and Mr. John Kingſton, boarded in his houſe in 1770 and 1771, and lived in habits of intimacy with him till his death.

In May 1771, his Treatiſe on the natural Hiſtory of the teeth was publiſhed; and in July of the ſame year he was married to Miſs Home, the eldeſt daughter of Mr. Home, ſurgeon to Burgoyne's regiment of light horſe. The expence of his purſuits

had been so great, that it was not till several years after his first engagement with this lady, that his affairs could be sufficiently arranged to admit of his marrying.

In June 1772, his son John was born, who is now an officer in the army *. In the autumn of the same year I came to him as an apprentice.

While he was paying his addresses to my sister Miss Home, I was a boy at Westminster-school. During the holidays I came home, and Mr. Hunter who was frequently there, always shewed me particular kindness; he made my father an offer to bring me up to his profession; a proposal which I readily accepted. I was struck with the novelty, and extent of his researches, had the highest respect and admiration for his talents, and was ambitious to tread the paths of science under so able a master. It is a tribute which I owe to his memory to declare, that an intimate knowledge of him for one-and-twenty years has increased my admiration of his uncommon exertions, and my respect for his abilities..

After finishing my education at Westminster-school as a king's scholar, and being elected off to Trinity College, Cambridge, I found that no advantages which could have been derived from a scholarship in the University would compensate for the time I must have given up in keeping my terms, to the disadvantage of my chirurgical education; I therefore thought it prudent to forego my claims upon the Universiry as a king's scholar, and instead of going down to Cambridge, though elected, went immediately to Mr. Hunter.

* He had another son who died an infant, and two daughters, of which Mary Anne died while very young; and Agnes, who is still alive, is married to Capt. James Campbell, eldest son of Sir James, brother of the late Sir Archibald Campbell.

At this time his private practice and his profeſſional character were advancing very faſt, and his family had begun to increaſe, but ſtill no ſmall part of his time was devoted to his collection, which, as it daily became larger, was alſo attended with greater expence. The whole ſuite of the beſt rooms in his houſe were occupied by his preparations; and he dedicated his mornings, from ſun-riſe to eight o'clock, (the hour for breakfaſt) entirely to his purſuits. To theſe he added ſuch parts of the day as were not engaged in attending his patients.

The knowledge he derived from his favourite ſtudies he conſtantly applied to the improvement of the art of ſurgery, and omitted no opportunity of examining morbid bodies, from which he made a collection of facts which are invaluable, as they tend to explain the real cauſes of ſymptoms, which, during life could not be exactly aſcertained, the judgment of the practioner being too frequently miſled by theoretical opinions, and deluſive ſenſations of the patients.

In the practice of ſurgery, where caſes occured in which the operations proved inadequate to their intention, he always inveſtigated with uncommon attention the cauſes of that want of ſucceſs, and in this way detected many fallacies, as well as made ſome important diſcoveries in the healing art.

He detected the cauſe of failure, common to all the operations in uſe for the radical cure of the hydrocele, and was enabled to propoſe a mode of operating, in which that event can with certainty be avoided. He aſcertained, by experiments and obſervations, that expoſure to atmoſpherical air, ſimply, can neither produce nor increaſe inflammation. He diſcovered in the blood ſo many phænomena connected with life, and not to be referred to any other cauſe, that he conſidered it as alive in

its fluid ſtate. This opinion ſeems to be advanced in the Old Teſtament *, and, what is very extraordinary, in the Alcoran † of Mahommed, it alſo appears to have been entertained by the celebrated Harvey ‡; but the mode in which this ſubject is conſidered in the following work will ſufficiently ſhew that in Mr. Hunter's mind this was not an opinion adopted, but one which aroſe from his own inveſtigation of the properties of the blood.

He improved the operation for the fiſtula lacrymalis, by removing a circular portion of the os unguis inſtead of breaking it down with the point of a trochar. He alſo diſcovered that the gaſtric juice had a power when the ſtomach was dead of diſſolving it, and gave to the Royal Society a

* "Ye ſhall eat the blood of no manner of fleſh, for "the life of all fleſh is the blood thereof."

Liviticus, chap. xvii, verſe 14.

† Alcoran, chap. xxiii. intitled, "The true Belie-"ver's revealed at Mecca."

"We formally created man of a finer ſort of clay; af-"terwards we placed him in the form of a ſeed in a ſure "reſceptacle; afterwards we made the ſeed coagulated "blood; and we formed the coagulated blood into a "piece of fleſh; then we formed the piece of fleſh into "bones, and we cloathed thoſe bones with fleſh; then we "produced the ſame by another creation, wherefore, bleſ-"ed be God, the moſt excellent Creator."

Chap. xcvi. intitled "Congealed Blood revealed at "Mecca."

"Read in the name of thy Lord, who hath created all things, who hath created man of congealed blood."

‡ Quinimo ex varioipſius motu, in celeritate aut tarditate vehementia aut debilitate et cætera, eum et irritantis injuriam et foventis commodum perſenticere manifeſtum eſt. Ideoque concludimus ſanguinem per ſe vivere et nutriri;

Gueliemi Harveii,
Operum, tom. ii. Exercitatio 52.

paper on this subject, which is published in the Philosophical Transactions *.

In the winter 1773, he formed a plan of giving a course of lectures on the theory and principles of surgery, with a view of laying before the public his own opinions upon that subject. For two winters he read his lectures gratis to the pupils of St. George's Hospital, and in 1775, gave a course for money upon the same terms as the other teachers in the different branches of medicine and surgery.

Giving lectures was always particularly unpleasant to him; so that the desire of submitting his opinions to the world, and learning their general estimation, were scarcely sufficient to overcome his natural dislike to speaking in public. He never gave the first lecture of his course without taking thirty drops of laudanum to take off the effects of his uneasiness. He was so diffident of himself that he trusted nothing to memory, and made me draw up a short abstract of each lecture, which he read on the following evening as a recapitulation, to connect the subject in the minds of the students.

It is curious that the fundamental doctrines of these lectures, which constitute the principal part of the present work, should be the last of his publications; and that his anxiety to render them complete, should make him patiently revise and correct them for twenty years before he gave them to the press. We learn from these circumstances both his diffidence respecting himself, and the value which he placed upon his future reputation.

Comparative anatomy may be considered as the pursuit in which Mr. Hunter was constantly employed. No opportunity escaped him. In the year

* There are several preparations both in Dr. Hunter's and Mr. Hunter's collection illustrating this fact.

1773, at the requeſt of his friend Mr. Walſh, he diſſected the torpedo, and laid before the Royal Society an account of it's electrical organs.

A young elephant which had been preſented to the Queen by Sir Robert Barker died, and the body was given to Dr. Hunter, which afforded Mr. Hunter an opportunity of examining the ſtructure of that animal by aſſiſting his brother in the diſſection; ſince that time two other elephants died in the Queen's menagerie, both of which came under Mr. Hunter's examination.

In 1774, he publiſhed in the Philoſophical Tranſactions an Account of certain Receptacles of Air in Birds, which communicate with the lungs, and are lodged both among the fleſhy parts and hollow bones of theſe animals; and a paper on the Gillaroo-trout, commonly called in Ireland, the Gizzard-trout.

In 1775, ſeveral animals of that ſpecies, called the gymnotus electricus of Surinam was brought alive to this country, and by their electrical properties excited very much the public attention. Mr. Walſh, deſirous of purſuing his inveſtigations of animal electricity, made a number of experiments on the living animals; and to give his friend Mr. Hunter an opportunity of examining them, purchaſed thoſe that died. Any anatomical account of their electrical organs was drawn up by Mr. Hunter, and publiſhed in the Philoſophical Tranſactions. In the ſame volume there is a paper of his, containing Experiments on Animals and Vegetables reſpecting their power of producing heat.

In the courſe of his purſuits, Mr. Hunter met with many parts of animals where natural appearances could not be preſerved, and others, in which the minuter veſſels could not be diſtinctly ſeen when kept in ſpirits; it was therefore neceſſary to have

them drawn, either at the moment, or before they were put into bottles. The expence of employing profeſſed draftſmen, the difficulty of procuring them, and the diſadvantage which they laboured under in being ignorant of the ſubject they were to repreſent, made him deſirous of having an able perſon in his houſe entirely for that purpoſe.

With this view he engaged an ingenious young artiſt to live with him for ten years; his time to be wholly employed as a draftſman, and in making anatomical preparations. This gentleman, whoſe name was Bell, ſoon became a very good practical anatomiſt, and from that knowledge was enabled to give a ſpirited and accurate reſemblance of the ſubjects he drew; ſuch as is rarely to be met with in repreſentations of anatomical ſubjects. By his labours Mr. Hunter's collection is enriched with a conſiderable number of very valuable drawings, and a great variety of curious and delicate anatomical preparations *.

In January 1776, Mr. Hunter was appointed ſurgeon-extraordinary to his Majeſty, and in the ſpring he gave to the Royal Society a paper on the beſt mode of recovering drowned perſons.

In the autumn he was taken extremely ill, and the nature of his complaints made his friends, as well as himſelf, conſider his life to be in danger. When he reflected upon his own ſituation, that all his fortune had been expended in his purſuits, and that his family had no proviſion but what ſhould ariſe from the ſale of his collection, he became very ſolicitous to give it its full value, by leaving it in a ſtate of arrangement.

* The engravings inſerted in Mr. Hunter's Treatiſe on the Venereal Diſeaſe, in his book upon the Animal Œconomy, and moſt of theſe contained in the preſent work, are taken from Mr. Bell's drawings, and will remain as proofs of his abilities in that particular line of drawing.

As ſoon as he was able to leave his room, his firſt object was to make a catalogue of his collection; but his health requiring him to go to Bath, I was was employed, with the aſſiſtance of Mr. Bell, during his abſence, in making deſcriptions of the preparations, leaving blanks for ſuch as I was not acquainted with. His complaints were a good deal relieved, but his impatience to return to town, made him come back before he was well; he continued, however, to amend, and very ſoon recovered.

In 1778, he publiſhed the ſecond part of his Treatiſe on the Teeth, in which their diſeaſes, and the mode of treatment are conſidered. This rendered his work upon that ſubject complete. He publiſhed alſo in the Philoſophical Tranſactions a paper on the Heat of Animals and Vegetables.

I had now lived ſix years with Mr. Hunter, and had compleated my education; his expences had always exceeded his income, I had therefore no emolument to expect from remaining in his houſe, which made it neceſſary for me to take up ſome line for my own ſupport, and Admiral Keppel's action with the French fleet was the means of procuring me a very eligible ſituation.

The newly finiſhed naval hoſpital at Plymouth received the whole of the wounded men from Admiral Keppel's fleet, and Dr. Farquarſon, the firſt commiſſioner of ſick and hurt, at the requeſt of Mr. Adair, the preſent ſurgeon general to the garriſon of Gibraltar, gave me the appointment of aſſiſtant-ſurgeon, with appartments to reſide at the hoſpital. From the circumſtance of my being the only ſurgeon on that eſtabliſhment, who was a member of the corporation, I was authorized by the ſick and hurt board to perform operations, and aſſiſt the ſurgeon in the more important parts of his duty.

In this ſituation many opportunities occured to me of adding to Mr. Hunter's collection; the ſea furniſhing curious fiſh and other marine productions, and the hoſpital practice preparations of morbid parts.

Mr. Hunter was now wholly aſſiſted by Mr. Bell. In 1779, he publiſhed his Account of the Free Martin in the Philoſophical Tranſactions.

In 1780, he laid before the Royal Society an Account of a Woman who had the Small-pox during Pregnancy, where the diſeaſe ſeemed to have been communicated to the fœtus.

In 1781, he was elected a Fellow of the Royal Society of Sciences and Belles Lettres, at Gottenburg.

In 1782, he gave the Royal Society a paper on the Organ of Hearing in Fiſh. Beſides the papers which he preſented to that learned body, he read ſix Croonion lectures upon the ſubject of Muſcular Action, for the years 1776, 1778, 1779, 1780, 1781, and 1782. In theſe lectures he collected all his obſervations upon muſcles, reſpecting their powers and effects, and the ſtimuli by which they are affected; and to theſe he added Comparative Obſervations upon the moving Powers of Plants.

Theſe lectures were not publiſhed in the Philoſophical Tranſactions, for they were withdrawn as ſoon as read, not being conſidered by the author as complete diſſertations, but rather as materials for ſome future publication.

It is much to be regretted that Mr. Hunter was ſo tardy in giving his obſervations to the public; but ſuch was his turn for inveſtigation, and ſo extenſive the ſcale upon which he inſtituted his inquiries, that he always found ſomething more to be accompliſhed, and was unwilling to publiſh any thing which appeared to himſelf unfiniſhed. His obſervations on the Muſcular Action of the Blood-veſſels

were laid before the Royal Society in 1780, and yet he delayed publiſhing them till his Obſervations on the Blood and Inflammation were arranged, and they will be found to make a part of the preſent work.

In 1783, he was choſen into the Royal Society of Medicine, and Royal Academy of Surgery in Paris.

In this year the leaſe of his houſe in Jermyn-ſtreet having expired, and his collection being now too large to be contained in his dwelling-houſe, he purchaſed the leaſe of a large houſe on the eaſt ſide of Leiceſter-ſquare, and the whole lot of ground extending to Caſtle-ſtreet, on which there was another houſe. In the middle ſpace between the two houſes he erected a building for his collection.

Upon this building he expended above three thouſand pounds, and unfortunately for his family, the leaſe did not extend beyond twenty-four years.

In excuſe for ſo inconſiderate a tranſaction, it can only be ſaid, that the difficulties he had met with in finding ground in an eligible ſituation, had haraſſed his mind, already too much occupied, to ſuch a degree, that he was glad to be relieved from that embarraſſment, and made the intereſt of his family give way to his preſent accommodation.

In the building formed for the collection there was a room fifty-two feet long, by twenty-eight wide, lighted from the top and having a gallery all round, for containing his preparations. Under this were two apartments; one for his lectures, and the other, with no particular deſtination at firſt, but afterwards made uſe of for weekly meetings of medical friends during the winter. To this building the houſe in Caſtle-ſtreet was entirely ſubſervient; and the rooms in it were uſed for the different branches of human and comparative anatomy.

During the execution of this extenſive plan I returned to England from Jamaica, where at the cloſe of the war I had been appointed ſtaff ſurgeon. Sir Archibald Campbell, the governor, coming home, gave me leave of abſence on account of my health, and allowed me to attend him. We arrived in Auguſt 1784, and I was permitted to exchange upon half pay.

I found Mr. Hunter now advanced to a very conſiderable ſhare of private practice, and a ſtill greater ſhare of the public confidence. His collection had increaſed with his income. In this he was materially aſſiſted by the friendſhip of Sir Joſeph Banks, who not only allowed him to take any of his own ſpecimens, but procured him every curious animal production in his power, and afterwards divided between him and the Britiſh Muſeum all the ſpecimens of animals he had collected in his voyage round the world. To his friends the honourable Mr. Charles Greville and Mr. Walſh, he was alſo under particular obligations.

Drawing materials from ſuch ample ſources, ſtanding alone in this branch of ſcience, and high in the public eſtimation, he had ſo much attention paid to him, that no new animal was brought to this country which was not ſhewn to him; many were given to him; and of thoſe that were for ſale he commonly had the refuſal: under theſe circumſtances, his collection made a progreſs, which would otherwiſe have been impoſſible.

In April 1785, the new room was compleated, and I devoted the whole of this ſummer to the object of aſſiſting him in moving his preparations, and arranging them in their proper order. Mr. Bell and Mr. Andre, a gentleman who had been the greater part of his life engaged in anatomical purſuits, were conſtantly employed in this buſineſs.

At this period Mr. Hunter may be conſidered as at the height of his chirurgical career; his mind and body were both in their full vigor. His hands were capable of performing whatever was ſuggeſted by his mind; and his judgment was matured by former experience. Some inſtances of his extraordinary ſkill may very properly be mentioned.

He removed a tumor from the ſide of the head and neck of a patient at St. George's Hoſpital, as large as the head to which it was attached; and by bringing the cut edges of the ſkin together, the whole was nearly healed by the firſt intention.

He diſſected out a tumor on the neck which one of the beſt operating ſurgeons in this country had declared, rather too ſtrongly, that no one but a fool or madman would attempt; and the patient got perfectly well.

He diſcovered a new mode of performing the operation for the popliteal aneuriſm, by taking up the femoral artery on the anterior part of the thigh, without doing any thing to the tumor in the ham. The ſafety and efficacy of this mode have been confirmed by many ſubſequent trials; and it muſt be allowed to ſtand very high among the modern improvements in ſurgery*

I believe Mr. Hunter was one of the firſt who taught, that cutting out the part was the only mode of preventing the hydrophobia; and he extended the time in which that might be done with every probability of ſucceſs, beyond the period generally believed. This doctrine, in favour of cutting out the part, met with the ſtrongeſt confirmation by two melancholy caſes, in which, from the nature of the parts and numberleſs ſcratches on the ſkin, it was impoſſible to remove them. Though cauſtic

* An account of this operation is publiſhed in the Tranſactions of a Society for improving Medical and Chirurgical Knowledge.

was applied to every part that had a visible mark, and every other precaution that could be thought of was used, the wounds in both instances proved fatal.

If we consider Mr. Hunter at this period of his life, it will afford us a strong picture of the turn of his mind, of his desire to acquire knowledge, and his unremitting assiduity in prosecuting whatever was the object of his attention.

He was engaged in a very extensive private practice; he was surgeon to St. George's Hospital; he was giving a very long course of lectures in the winter; he was carrying on his enquiries in comparative anatomy; had a school of practical human anatomy in his house; and was always employed in some experiments respecting the animal œconomy.

He was always solicitous for some improvement in medical education; and, with the assistance of Dr. Fordyce, instituted a medical society, which he allowed to meet in his lecture-rooms, and of which he was chosen one of the patrons. This society, called the Lyceum Medicum Londinense, under his auspices and those of Dr. Fordyce, has acquired considerable reputation, both from the numbers and merits of its members.

In the year 1786, in consequence of the death of Mr. Middleton, Mr. Hunter was appointed deputy surgeon-general to the army. He now published his work upon the Venereal Disease, which had been long expected by the public; and, if we may judge from the rapid sale of the first edition, these expectations have not been disappointed. He also published a work entitled, Observations on certain Parts of the Animal Œconomy. In this work he has collected several of his papers inserted in the Philosophical Transactions, which related to that subject, having permission from the president and council of the Royal Society to reprint them; there are also Observa-

tions upon ſome other Parts of the Animal Œconomy, which had not before been publiſhed. This work met with a ready ſale. It is to be conſidered among the peculiarities of his character, that he choſe to have his works printed and publiſhed in his own houſe, where they were alſo ſold; but finding this meaſure to bear hard upon the bookſellers, in a way which had not been explained, and which was not intended, the ſecond edition was ſold by Mr. Johnſon in St. Paul's Church-yard, and Mr. Nicol in Pall-mall.

In the ſpring of this year he had a very ſevere illneſs, which confined him to his bed, and rendered him incapable of attending to any kind of buſineſs. In this ſtate I was obliged to take upon myſelf the charge of his patients, as well as of his other affairs, and theſe were ſo extenſive that my reſidence in his houſe became abſolutely neceſſary. His recovery was very ſlow; and his health received ſo ſevere a ſhock that he was never afterwards entirely free from complaint, or capable of his uſual bodily exertions.

After his recovery from this illneſs, he was ſubject to affections of his heart, upon every occaſion which agitated his mind, or required any ſudden exertion of the body. In this infirm ſtate he was unable to attend his patients upon ſudden calls in the night, or to perform operations without aſſiſtance; and for theſe reaſons I continued to live with him till within a year of his death, and then took a houſe within a few doors, which in no reſpect detatched me from his purſuits, or prevented me taking a part in his private practice.

In the year 1787, he gave a paper to the Royal Society, containing an Experiment to determine the Effect of extirpating one Ovarium on the Number of Young; a paper in which the Wolfe, Jackall and Dog, are proved to be of the ſame Species;

and a third upon the anatomy of the Whale Tribe. Theſe papers procured him the honour of receiving Sir John Copley's annual gold medal, given as a mark of diſtinguiſhed abilities.

Theſe labours ſhew that the decline of his health, although it diminiſhed his exertions, by no means abated his ardour for the inquiries in which he was always engaged.

In July, he was choſen a member of the American Philoſophical Society. He now applied to the Governors of St. George's Hoſpital, to be allowed on account of his health, an aſſiſtant-ſurgeon, which they very readily granted, and I was appointed to that office.

His collection, which had been the great object of his life, both as a purſuit and an amuſement, was now brought into a ſtate of arrangement ; and gave him at length the ſatisfaction of ſhewing to the public a ſeries of anatomical facts formed into a ſyſtem, by which the œconomy of animal life was illuſtrated. He ſhewed it to his friends and acquaintances twice a year, in October to medical gentlemen, and in May to noblemen and gentlemen, who were only in town during the ſpring. This cuſtom he continued to his death.

Several of his friends had long been deſirous of having an engraving of him, and requeſted him to ſit for a picture to ſome painter of eminence whom they would employ. This he always declined, not chooſing that it ſhould be done at the expence of others; and thinking the price too high for himſelf to pay. His ſcruples were, however, at length ſurmounted, by a deſire to oblige Mr. Sharp, the engraver, of whoſe works he was an admirer. This artiſt made a requeſt that he would ſit to Sir Joſhua Reynolds, who had promiſed to take unuſual pains with the picture; as the engraving was propoſed more

as a teſt of the artiſt's abilities upon which he might eſtabliſh a character, than as a print for ſale.

This picture, which is one of the very laſt works of that eminent painter, and one of his beſt, remains in the poſſeſſion of Mr. Hunter's ſon; and the print which Mr. Sharp engraved from it, is conſidered as one of the moſt ſpirited heads and fineſt engravings, which have been produced in this country.

In the year 1789, Mr. Bell, who was become a very ſkillfull anatomiſt, and a good practical ſurgeon, received an appointment as aſſiſtant-ſurgeon to the Iſland of Sumatra, in the ſervice of the Honourable Eaſt India Company. This appointment, procured by the friendſhip of Sir Joſeph Banks, he accepted with a double view, the one to improve his fortune, the other to collect ſpecimens in natural hiſtory. In both of theſe purſuits he was ſucceſsful beyond his moſt ſanguine expectations; he ſent home ſome very rare ſpecimens of animals and corals, and two papers, ſince printed in the Philoſophical Tranſactions, one on the double horned Rhinoceros, the other giving a deſcription of an uncommonly formed Fiſh; but, unfortunately for ſcience, he died of a fever, very much regretted by his friends, in the year 1792.

In the year 1792, Mr. Hunter found that his courſe of lectures took up ſo much of his time, that he was unable to correct his other papers. He therefore gave it up to me. As a previous ſtep to this arrangement I had given it the two preceeding ſummers. Mr. Hunter now began to prepare the preſent work for the preſs, and intended as ſoon as it was in the hands of the public, to give a courſe of practical lectures in ſurgery, for which he had been many years collecting materials; theſe were ſo far advanced, that another winter, had he lived, would have finiſhed them. The materials of

these lectures having come into my hands; that they may not be entirely lost to the public, I mean to avail myself of them, and am preparing my arrangements for that purpose.

Upon the death of Mr. Adair, which happened in this year, Mr. Hunter was appointed inspector-general of hospitals, and surgeon-general of the army. He was also elected a member of the Royal College of Surgeons in Ireland.

In the year 1791, he was so much engaged in the duties of his office, as surgeon-general to the army, and his private practice, that he had little time to bestow upon his scientifical objects; but his leisure time, small as it was, he wholly devoted to them.

In 1792, he was elected an honorary member of the Chirurgo Phisical society of Edinburgh, and was chosen one of the vice-presidents of the Veterinary college, then first established in London. He published in the Transactions of the Society for the improvement of medical and chirurgical Knowledge, of which society he was one of the original members and a zealous promoter, three papers, on the following subjects: upon the treatment of inflamed Veins, on Introsusception, and on a mode of conveying Food into the Stomach, in Cases of Paralysis of the Œsophagus.

He finished his observations on the Œconomy of the Bees, and presented them to the Royal Society. These observations were made at Earl's court, and had engaged his attention for many years; every inquiry into the œconomy of these insects had been attended by almost insurmountable difficulties; but these proved to him only an incitement, and the contrivances he made use of to bring the different operations of these indefatigable animals to view were almost without end.

Earl's Court to Mr. Hunter was a retirement from the fatigues of his profeſſion; but in no reſpect a retreat from his labours; there, on the contrary, they were carried on with leſs interruption, and with an unwearied perſeverence. From the year 1772 till his death, he made it his cuſtom to ſleep there during the autumn months, coming to town only during the hours of buſineſs in the forenoon, and returning to dinner.

It was there he carried on his experiments on digeſtion, on exfoliation, on the tranſplanting teeth into the combs of cocks, and all his other inveſtigations on the animal œconomy, as well in health as in diſeaſe. The common bee was not alone the ſubject of his obſervation, but the waſp, hornet, and the leſs known kind of bees were alſo objects of his attention. It was there he made the ſeries of preparations of the external and internal changes of the ſilk-worm; alſo a ſeries of the incubation of the egg, with a very valuable ſet of drawings of the whole ſeries. The growth of vegetables was alſo a favourite ſubject of inquiry, and one on which he was always engaged in making experiments.

In this retreat he had collected many kinds of animals and birds, and it was to him a favourite amuſement in his walks to attend to their actions and their habits, and to make them familiar with him. The fiercer animals were thoſe to which he was moſt partial, and he had ſeveral of the bull kind from different parts of the world. Among theſe was a beautiful ſmall bull he had received from the Queen, with which he uſed to wreſtle in play, and entertain himſelf with its exertions in its own defence. In one of theſe conteſts the bull overpowered him, and got him down, and had not one of the ſervants accidentally come by and frightened the animal away, this frolic would probably have coſt him his life.

The collection of comparative anatomy which Mr. Hunter has left, and which may be considered as the great object of his life, must be allowed to be a proof of talents, assiduity, and labour, which cannot be contemplated without surprize and admiration.

It remains an unequivocal test of his perseverance and abilities, and an honour to the country in whose schools he was educated, and by the patronage of which he was enabled on so extensive a scale to carry on his pursuits.

In this collection we find an attempt to expose to view the gradations of nature, from the most simple state in which life is found to exist, up to the most perfect and most complex of the animal creation—man himself.

By the powers of this art, this collector has been enabled so to expose, and preserve in spirits or in a dried state, the different parts of animal bodies intended for similar uses, that the various links of the chain of perfection are readily followed and may be clearly understood.

This collection of anatomical facts is arranged according to the subjects they are intended to illustrate, which are placed in the following order: First, parts constructed for motion. Secondly, parts essential to animals respecting their own internal œconomy. Thirdly, parts superadded for purposes connected with external objects. Fourthly, parts for the propagation of the species and maintenance or support of the young.

The first class exhibits the sap of vegetables and blood of animals, for which fluids all the different parts of the vegetable and animal creation are formed, supported, and increased.

These fluids being more and more compounded, as the vegetables and animals become more

perfect, are coagulated and form a regular series. The sap of many plants does not coagulate spontaneously but is made to undergo this change by adding the extract of Gowlard, in this respect differing from water: the sap of such plants is considered as the most simple: in the onion there is a spontanious coagulation: in insects the blood coagulates, but is without colour: in the amphibia, colour is superadded. The moving powers of animals from the simple straight muscle, to the most complicated structure of that organ, with the different applications of elastic ligaments, form a second series. The growth of bone, horn, and shell, come next in order; and the joints which admit of their moving readily on one another, finish this subject.

The second class begins with those animals of the hydatid kind, which receive nourishment, like vegetables, from their external surface, having no mouth. Then follow those which are simply a bag or stomach, with one opening, as the polypus, having no organs of generation, as every part of the bag is endowed with that power; but in the leech the structure becomes more complex, for although the animal is composed of a bag with only one opening, the organs of generation, brain, and nerves, are superadded, and thence a gradual series is continued to those animals in which the stomach forms only a distinct part of the animal, for the purpose of digestion. The stomachs themselves are also arranged in the order of their simplicity. First, the true membranous digesting stomach, then those with the addition of crops, and other bags, to prepare the food for digestion, as in the ruminating tribe, and, lastly, those with gizzards. Annexed to the stomach, is a very complete and extensive series of teeth, which are varied according to the kind of food and stomach.

After the stomachs, are the different appearances

of the inteſtinal canal, which exhibit almoſt an infinite variety in the ſtructure of their internal ſurface from which the aliment is abſorbed. The quantity of ſurface is increaſed in ſome by tranſverſe folds, in ſome by ſpiral or longitudinal ones, and in others puts on a loculated appearance, as in the whale.

To theſe are added the glands, connected with the inteſtines, as the liver, pancreas, and ſpleen, which may properly be conſidered as appendages.

After digeſtion, follows the ſyſtem of abſorbing veſſels, the ſimpleſt being the roots of plants, after which are lymphatic and lacteal veſſels of different animals. Theſe in the human ſubject and the elephant are ſmall, and in the turtle large and more numerous; but in the ſpermaceti whale, where they are employed for conveying the ſpermaceti, of a ſize infinitely beyond what is met with in any other animal. To theſe are annexed the thoracic ducts in different animals.

The natural order, in following the courſe of the aliment from the ſtomach as a guide, leans from the abſorbents to the heart, which in the caterpillar is a ſimple canal or artery running along the middle of the back of the animal, admitting of undulation of the blood; from this ſimple ſtructure it becomes, in different animals, by ſmall additions, more and more complex, till it arrives at the degree of perfection which is diſplayed in the organization of the human heart. Theſe are followed by the different ſtructures of valves in the arteries and veins, and the coats of theſe veſſels. Then the lungs are ſhown in all their gradations from the ſimple vaſcular lining of the eggſhell, which ſerves as lungs for the chicken, to thoſe of the more perfect animals. In one inſtance, viz. that of the ſyren, both gills and lungs are ſeen in the ſame animal. The windpipe and larynx are then ſhown, under all their different forms. The kidnies, which

ſeparate the ſuperfluous fluids from the circulation, make the laſt part of this ſubject.

The third claſs takes up the moſt ſimple ſtate of the brain, which is in the leech a ſingle nerve with ramifications. In the ſnail, the brain forms a circular nerve, through the middle of which paſſes the œſophagus, from which circle there are branches going to every part of the ſkin of the animal. In the inſect, the brain has a more compact form, is larger in fiſh, but ſtill more ſo in birds, gradually increaſing in ſize as the animal is endowed with a greater degree of ſagacity, till at laſt it becomes the large complex organ found in the elephant and in the human ſubject. The coverings of the brain, and the ganglions and peculiarities of the nerves are annexed. The organs of ſenſe are arranged in the order of their ſimplicity, beginning with that of touch, which is only a villous vaſcular ſurface, the villi very ſhort where the impreſſion is to be made through a thin cuticle, as in the human finger; very long where the covering is thick, as the hoof of the horſe. The organ of taſte is only a modification of touch, and therefore nothing in the organization is different, but the varieties in ſtructure adapting the tongue for different purpoſes are numerous; in many animals it anſwers the poſe of a hand, to bring the food to the mouth, as in many ſhell-fiſh, the ant-bear, woodpecker, and camelion. Connected with the tongue are the fauces which in many animals have peculiarities; in the electric eel, they have a curious carrunculated irregular appearance; but they are yet more extraordinary in the camel, which has an apparatus to moiſten the parts, ſo as to prevent the painful ſenſation of thirſt, thus adapting the animal to the ſandy deſarts which it is deſtined to inhabit; this apparatus conſiſts of a large bag hanging down ſeveral inches in the fauces, and attached to the palate, which the

animals can at pleaſure move up and down, and lubricate the fauces.. The organ of ſmell is variouſly conſtructed, and is more complicated in many animals than in man, as in the lion, and ſea-cow. The organ of hearing in fiſh conſiſts of three ſemicircular canals; but is much more complex in land animals. The organ of ſeeing is different in thoſe animals which are formed to ſee in water, and in thoſe which ſee in air; it differs again in thoſe which are to ſee with little or with much light; all thoſe peculiarities are illuſtrated by preparations. The pigmentum of the eye in ſome fiſh reſembles poliſh'd ſilver; in ruminating animals at the bottom of the eye it has a greeniſh hue, in the lion and cat kind, a portion of the bottom is white; but, as a general principle, the colour of the pigmentum is the ſame as the rete muſcoſum of the ſkin of the animal, being white in white animals and black in very dark ones.

After the brain and ſenſes are arranged the cellular membrane and animal oils, which are followed by the external coverings. Theſe are divided into the different kinds, as hair, feathers, ſcales, etc. with the rete muſcoſum, or that membrane which is interpoſed between the true ſkin and the ſcarf-ſkin for the purpoſe of giving the peculiar colour. Added to theſe are the parts peculiar to different animals, for offence and defence, as ſpurs, hoofs, horns, ſtings, and alſo electric organs. There follow next ſuch peculiar ſtructures as occur in certain tribes of animals, as the air-bladders in fiſh, etc.

The fourth claſs begins with thoſe animals which have no diſtinct parts allotted for generation, that power being diffuſed over the whole animal. In theſe the young grow out of the old, as in the coral and polypi; and next in order come the hermaphrodite organs both of plants, and of animals. The male organs are then taking up as a diſtinct ſub-

ject, first in plants and then in animals, both at the times in which they do not breed, and in the breeding season, to show their different states; to these are added a number of parts which answer secondary purposes in generation, and may be considered as appendages.

The female organs are first exhibited in the maiden state, in every class of animals, demonstrating the shape and length of the oviducts, the form of the uterus, the length of its horns, with the varieties in their structure, and the instances in which these horns are entirely wanting, as in some monkeys; to which are added, the peculiarities respecting the hymen. They are then exemplied in the impregnated state, beginning with the seeds of vegetables and those which have both seeds and young shoots, as the onion. The eggs of insects follow next, with their changes, particularly of the silk worm. The spawn of fish, are next shown, first in those which have eggs, and then in those which have their eggs hatched in the oviducts, as the dog-fish.

The arrangement then proceeds to the formation and incubation of the egg in the fowl, and the process of fœtation in the quadruped, with their peculiarities and the different structures and appearances of the afterbirth. Added to these are the peculiarties of the fœtus, and the different modes by which the mother gives nourishment to her young.

In this collection, besides the preparations of the parts of themselves in spirits, in a dried state or corroded, so as to give the most accurate ideas of their structure, there is a considerable number of very valuable drawings to show the progress of different processes in the animal œconomy, together with such appearances as were not capable of being preserved.

This sketch will give an idea, but a very inadequate one, of the system which is comprehended in

Mr. Hunter's collection. It alſo includes a very large ſeries of whole animals in ſpirits arranged according to their internal ſtructure, and many of the moſt rare ſpecimens of preſerved animals in this country, as the camelopardus, guanica, hippopotamus, tapir, argus-pheaſant, etc.

There is alſo a ſeries of ſkulls of different animals to ſhew their peculiarities, and ſkeletons of almoſt every known genius of animals. There is a large collection of ſhells and inſects; a prodigious number of calculi of different ſorts from the urinary and gall-bladders, the ſtomach, and inteſtinal canal; there are likewiſe the moſt uncommon deviations from the natural ſtructure, both in man and in other animals, preſerved in ſpirits or in a dried ſtate; the moſt extraordinary ſpecimens of this kind are a double human uterus, one of the parts pregnant, and a double human ſkull perfectly formed, the one upon the top of the other. To make this collection more complete in every ſubject connected with comparative anatomy, is added one of the largeſt and moſt ſelect collections of extraneous foſſils that can be ſeen in this country.

The ſymptons of Mr. Hunter's complaint, for the laſt twenty years of his life, may be conſidered as thoſe of the angina pectoris; and form one of the moſt complete hiſtories of that diſeaſe upon record. I have choſen to give this account a place by itſelf diſtinct from the general hiſtory of his life, of which it forms an important part, more eſpecially when prefixed to a medical work.

Each ſymptom was deſcribed at the time it occurred, and either noted by himſelf, or dictated to me, when Mr. Hunter was too ill to write; they will

therefore be found more accurately detailed than in ordinary cases *.

Mr. Hunter was a very healthy man for the first forty years of his life; and, if we except an inflammation of his lungs in the year 1759, occasioned most probably by his attention to anatomical pursuits, he had no complaint of any consequence during that period. In the spring of 1769, in his forty-first year, he had a regular fit of the gout, which returned the three following springs, but not the fourth; and in the spring of 1773, having met with something which very forcibly affected his mind, he was attacked at ten o'clock in the forenoon with a pain in the stomach, about the pylorus; it was the sensation peculiar to those parts, and became so violent that he tried change of position to procure ease, he sat down, then walked, laid himself down on the carpet, then upon chairs, but could find no relief; he took a spoonful of tincture of rhubarb, with thirty drops of laudanum, without the smallest benefit. While he was walking about the room he cast his eyes on the looking-glass, and observed his countenance to be pale, his lips white, giving the appearance of a dead man, this alarmed him, and led him to feel for his pulse, but he found none in either arm; he now thought his complaint serious; several physicians of his acquaintance were then sent for, Dr. William Hunter, Sir George Baker, Dr.

* As the statement of the following case is made up from detached notes which were not written with a view to publication, it will appear in point of language extremely deficient; it was, however, thought better to leave it in its present form, least, by altering the language, the effect of some of the expressions might be diminished, or misunderstood; it was also believed, that an account, however crude, coming directly from the author, would be more acceptable to the public, than one a little more finished from any other hand.

Huck Saunders, and Sir William Fordyce, all came but could find no pulſe; the pain ſtill continued, and he found himſelf at times not breathing. Being afraid of death ſoon taking place if he did not breathe, he produced the voluntary act of breathing, by working his lungs by the power of the will; the ſenſative principle, with all its effects on the machine not being in the leaſt affected by the complaint. In this ſtate he continued for three quarters of an hour, in which time frequent attempts were made to feel the pulſe, but in vain; however, at laſt, the pain leſſened, and the pulſe returned, although at firſt but faintly, and the involuntary breathing began to take place; while in this ſtate, he took Madeira, brandy, ginger, etc. but did not believe them of any ſervice, as the return of health was very gradual; in two hours he was perfectly recovered.

In this attack there was a ſuſpenſion of the moſt material involuntary actions, even involuntary breathing was ſtopped, while ſenſation with its conſequences, as thinking and acting with the will, were perfect, and all the voluntary actions were as ſtrong as before.

Quere. What would have been the conſequence of his not having breathed by means of the voluntary muſcles? It ſtruck him at the time that he would have died; but we cannot ſuppoſe that would have been the conſequence, as breathing moſt probably is only neceſſary for the blood while circulating, and as the circulation was ſtopped, no good could have ariſen from breathing.

From this caſe it appears that, the involuntary actions of the body are not a regular ſeries of actions depending abſolutely on one another, but each part can and often does act independently, or leaves off acting while other actions are going on; but although

there is not an abſolute dependence, there is a neceſſary connexion among them, without which their actions cannot long continue. The ſtomach was probably the ſeat, or origin of this ceſſation of action; as we know that affections of the ſtomach have the greateſt influence on every part of the body, and that affections of every part, have the power of influencing the ſtomach.

Mr. Hunter never had any return of theſe affections of the ſtomach, though frequently troubled with ſlight complaints both in the ſtomach and bowels, which were readily removed by ſmall doſes of rhubarb. In other reſpects he enjoyed his health till the year 1776. Towards the end of the ſpring he was ſeized with a very ſevere and dangerous illneſs, in conſequence of anxiety of mind from being obliged to pay a large ſum of money for a friend, for whom he had been ſecurity, and which his circumſtances made extremely inconvenient.

At two o'clock in the forenoon he eat ſome cold chicken and ham, and drank a little weak punch; immediately after this he went eight miles in a poſt-chaiſe. While he was on the journey he had the feel of having drank too much, but paſſed the remainder of the day tolerably well; at twelve o'clock at night his ſtomach was a little diſordered, for which he took ſome caraways, and went to bed; he had no ſooner lain down than he felt as if ſuſpended in the air, and ſoon after the room appeared to go round; the quickneſs of this motion ſeemed to increaſe, and at laſt was very rapid; it continued for ſome time, then became ſlower and ſlower till the whole was at reſt; this was ſucceeded by vomiting, which was encouraged and gave him a good night's reſt; next day he was tolerably well, but fatigued: the morning after, thinking himſelf quite recovered, he went out before breakfaſt, drank ſome tea and eat ſome bread and butter, which he was not

accuſtomed to do. At eleven o'clock, he felt his ſtomach much in the ſame ſtate as before; in about half an hour, the ſenſation of the room appearing to turn, recommenced, and continued for ſome time, but not with ſuch violence as in the laſt attack; he became ſick and vomited; the ſenſation of himſelf and every thing elſe going round continued for ſome time, but not with ſuch violence as in the laſt attack; he became ſick and vomited; the ſenſation of himſelf and every thing elſe going round, went off, but that of being ſuſpended in the air continued, with a giddineſs; he now could hardly move his head from an horizontal poſition, and about two o'clock was brought home in his carriage, the motion of which was very diſagreeable, giving the ſenſation of going down, or ſinking *.

After he went to bed, the giddineſs and the idea of being ſuſpended in the air increaſed, and the leaſt motion of the head upon the pillow appeared to be ſo great that he hardly durſt attempt it; if he but moved his head half round, it appeared to be moving to ſome diſtance with great velocity; the idea he had of his own ſize was that of being only two feet long, and when he drew up his foot, or puſhed it down, it appeared to him to be moving a vaſt way. His ſenſations became extremely acute or heightened; he could not bear the leaſt light, ſo that although the window-blinds were ſhut, a curtain and blanket were obliged to be hung up againſt it, the fire to have a ſcreen before it, and the bed curtains to be drawn; he kept his eyelids cloſed, yet if a lighted can-

* It is very curious that, the ſenſation of ſinking is very uneaſy to moſt animals. When a perſon is toſſed in a blanket, the uncomfortable part is falling down; take any animal in the hand and raiſe it up, it is very quiet, but bring it down and it will exert all its powers of reſiſtance, every muſcle in the body is in action; this is the caſe even with a child as early as its birth.

dle came acroſs the room, he could not bear it; his his hearing was alſo painfully acute, but not ſo much increaſed, as his ſight; the ſmell and taſte were alſo acute, every thing he put into his mouth being much higher flavoured than common, by which means he reliſhed what he eat; his appetite at firſt was very indifferent, but ſoon became good; his pulſe was generally about ſixty, and weak, and a ſmall degree of heat on the ſkin, eſpecially on the hands and feet; he remained in this ſtate for about ten days, and was obliged to be fed as he lay; by this time he was rather better; that is, he could move his head more freely.

When he was at firſt attacked, the pulſe was full and eight ounces of blood were taken away, but this did not appear to be of ſervice; the day following he was cupped between the ſhoulders, and had a large bliſter applied upon the part; he took an emetic, and ſeveral times purging medicines, and bathed his feet in warm water, but nothing appeared to be of the leaſt uſe. The purging and vomiting diſtreſſed him greatly, for both the ſtomach and inteſtines were ſo irritable, that leſs than half the uſual quantity had the deſired effect. He took ſome James's powder, and drank ſome white wine whey on account of the heat in the ſkin, eſpecially in the feet and hands, which took it off, and gave him for the firſt time a comfortable feel. At the end of ten days all his ideas of his preſent ſtate became more natural, the ſtrange deception concerning his own ſize was in part corrected, and the idea of ſuſpenſion in the air became leſs; but for ſome time after, the fire appeared of a deep purple red. When he got ſo well as to be able to ſtand without being giddy, he was unable to walk without ſupport, for his own feelings did not give him information reſpecting his centre of gravity, ſo that he was unable to

ballance his body, and prevent himſelf from falling.

He gradually recovered from this ſtate, and as ſoon as he was able went to Bath, where he ſtaid ſome time and drank the waters, which were thought to be of ſervice to him; but did not ſtay long enough to give them a fair trial; he returned to town much better, and in a few weeks got quite well. From this period to 1785, he had no particular indiſpoſition, but certainly did not enjoy perfect health, for in 1785, he appeared much altered in his looks, and gave the idea of having grown much older than could be accounted for from the number of years which had elapſed.

About the beginning of April 1785, he was attacked with a ſpaſmodic complaint, which at firſt was ſlight, but became afterwards very violent, and terminated in a fit of the gout in the ball of the great toe; this, like his other attacks, was brought on by anxiety of mind; the firſt ſymptom was a ſenſation of the muſcles of the noſe being in action, but whether they really were, or not, he was never able to determine; this ſenſation returned at intervals for about a fortnight, attended with an unpleaſant ſenſation in the left ſide of the face, lower jaw, and throat which ſeemed to extend into the head on that ſide, and down the left arm, as low as the ball of the thumb, where it terminated all at once; theſe ſenſations were not conſtant, but returned at irregular times; they became ſoon more violent, attacking the head, face, and both ſides of the lower jaw, giving the idea that the face was ſwelled, particularly the cheeks, and ſometimes ſlightly affected the right arm. After they had continued for a fortnight they extended to the ſternum, producing the ſame diſagreeable ſenſations there, and giving the feel of the ſternum being drawn backwards toward the ſpine, as well as that of oppreſſion in breathing, although

the action of breathing was attended with no real difficulty; at these times the heart seemed to miss a stroke, and upon feeling the pulse, the artery was very much contracted, often hardly to be felt, and every now and then the pulse was entirely stopt; he was afterwards attacked with a pain in the back, about that part where the œsophagus passes through the diaphragm, the sensation being that of something scalding hot passing down the œsophagus; he was next seized with a pain in the region of the heart itself, and last of all with a sensation in the left side, nearly in the seat of the great end of the stomach, attended with considerable eructations of wind from that viscus; these seemed to be rather spasmodic than a simple discharge of wind, a kind of mixture of hiccough and eructation, which last symptoms did not accompany the former, but came on by themselves. In every attack there was a raw sore feel, as if the fauces were excoriated. All these succeeding symptoms (those in the stomach and nose only excepted) where, in addition to the first, for every attack began with the first symptoms. The complaint appeared to be in the vascular system, for the larger arteries were sensibly contracted, and sore to the touch, as far as they could be touched, principally in the left arm; the urine at those times was in general very pale.

These symptoms increased in violence at every return, and the attack which was the most violent, came on one morning about the end of April, and lasted above two hours; it began as the others had done, but having continued about an hour, the pain became excruciating at the apex of the heart; the throat was so sore as not to allow of an attempt to swallow any thing, and the left arm could not bear to be touched, the least pressure upon it giving pain, the sensation at the apex of the heat was that of burning or scorching, which, by its violence,

quite exhauſted him, and he ſunk into a ſwoon or doze, which laſted about ten minutes, after which he ſtarted up, without the leaſt recollection of what had paſſed, or of his preceeding illneſs. I was with him during the whole of this attack, and never ſaw any thing equal to the agonies he ſuffered; and when he fainted away, I thought him dead, as the pain did not ſeem to abate, but to carry him off, having firſt completely exhauſted him.

He then fell aſleep for half an hour, and awoke with a confuſion in his head, and a faint recollection of ſomething like a delirium; this went off in a few days.

The affections above-deſcribed were, in the beginning, readily brought on by exerciſe, and he even conceived that if he had continued at reſt, they would not have come on; but they at laſt ſeized him when lying in bed, and in his ſleep, ſo as to awaken him; affections of the mind alſo brought them on; but coolly thinking or reaſoning did not appear to have that effect. While theſe complaints were upon him, his face was pale, and had a contracted appearance, making him look thinner than ordinary; and after they went off his colour returned, and his face recovered its natural appearance. On the commencement of the complaint, he ſuſpected it to be rheumatiſm, and applied electricity to his arm, which took it off for the time only; he then, for two or three nights ſucceſſively, took three grains of James's powder, without any abatement of the ſymptoms; he next had recourſe to the camphorated julep, both at the commencement of the ſpaſm, and while it was upon him, but obtained no relief; he tried Hoffman's anodyne liquor, in the doſe of a tea-ſpoonful, and and not finding it to anſwer alone, joined to it the camphorated julep, but the ſpaſms ſeemed to be more

violent; one night he took twenty drops of the baic tincture, which made his head confuſed all the following day, but did not at all abate the ſpaſms; the following day he took two tea-ſpoonfuls of the bark, which heated him, and gave him a head-ach, thirſt, and dryneſs of his month, which prevented his continuing it. At the deſire of Dr. David Pitcairn, he took the powder of valerian, an ounce a day, which ſeemed for the firſt two days to remove his ſpaſms, but they returned on the third with more violence than uſual, eſpecially one evening at the Royal Society, which induced him to leave off the valerian, and he bathed his feet on going to bed in warm water, mixed with half a pound of flour of muſtard, and took a tea-ſpoonful of tincture of rhubarb in ginger-tea; alſo wore worſted ſtockings all night.

On Friday morning, the twentieth of May, between ſix and ſeven o'clock, he had a violent ſpaſm, attended with moſt violent eructations of wind from the ſtomach for nearly a quarter of an hour. Dr. Pitcairn, who was ſent for upon this occaſion, aſked him, if there was any diſtreſs upon his mind that had brought on this attack; and he confeſſed his mind to have been much harraſſed, in conſequence of having opened the body of a perſon who died from the bite of a mad dog, about ſix weeks before, in doing which he had wounded his hand; and for the laſt fortnight his mind had been in continual ſuſpenſe, conceiving it poſſible that he might be ſeized with ſymptoms of hydrophobia. This anxiety preying upon his mind for ſo long a time, there is every reaſon to believe was the cauſe of the preſent attack, and probably had alſo brought on the former ones, which were all after the accident which had impreſſed his mind with this horrible idea.

At the desire of Dr. Pitcairn, he took at two doses in the forenoon, ten grains of asafœtida, and three grains of opium, and in the afternoon fifteen of asafœtida, and one of opium; in the evening he had a head-ach, which was supposed to be brought on by the opium, his bowels were loaded and oppressed with wind, and he endeavoured in vain to procure a motion by laxative clysters, although repeated, and ten grains of jalap were taken by the mouth; he passed a very restless night. On Saturday morning he was visited by Sir George Baker, Dr. Warren, and the late Dr. Pitcairn; he repeated the asafœtida twice in the course of the day, and two spoonfuls of the following mixture were taken every hour, without producing a motion till about half an hour after the whole was used.

Infusion of senna, six ounces;
Tincture of senna, one drachm and a half;
Soluble tartar, three drachms.

M.

In the afternoon he had another evacuation, soon after which, the most violent attack of spasm which he experienced, came on; nothing was attempted internally during the attack, which lasted two hours; a bladder of hot water was applied to the heart, and afterwards to the feet, without any effect.

The asafœtida was now left off, and this evening he began the oleum succini in saline draughts fifteen drops every six hours. On sunday morning he continued the oleum succini, but the saline draught was changed to cinnamon-water, and a large blister was put upon the back close to the neck; he continued pretty free from spasm. On Monday the blister was taken off, and the oleum succini continued; but about nine o'clock at night he had threatenings of spasm, with head-ach, and the feel of a load in his bowels; he had a pain in the left side and region of

the ſtomach, with violent eructations of wind from the ſtomach, which laſted about two hours; he took thebaic tincture, twenty-five drops, in the warm tincture of rhubarb, and afterwards ſome baume de vie, but the eructations continuing, ſinapiſms were applied to the feet, after which they ceaſed, and the ſinapiſms were ſo troubleſome that he had them taken off five hours after they were applied. On Tueſday morning he felt himſelf eaſier, the oleum ſuccini was continued, five drops of laudanum being added to each doſe; in the evening he bathed his feet in warm water, to clean them from the ſinapiſms, and both the great toes appeared a little inflamed, and very tender; they were more painful after being bathed, and were very troubleſome all night. On Wedneſday morning the inflammation and ſwelling in the great toes appeared evidently to be the gout, and the pain continued very acute till Thurſday, when it began to abate; and on Friday was very much diminiſhed: he continued the oleum ſuccini on Wedneſday, and a took a bolus of aromatic ſpecies before each doſe; but on Friday the oleum ſuccini made him ſick, and was left off. On Saturday he began the bark in tincture and decoction with the ſpecies aromaticæ; Sunday continued the bark, and having eructations and flatulencies after his meals, he was ordered every day before dinner, rhubarb fifteen grains, ginger ten grains, in a bolus. He had no ſpaſm after Monday the thirtieth of May; he however had threatenings, or ſlight ſenſations, ſimilar to thoſe which preceded the ſpaſms, and occaſional eructations. Although evidently relieved from the violent attacks of ſpaſm by the gout in his feet, yet he was far from being free from the diſeaſe, for he was ſtill ſubject to the ſpaſms, upon exerciſe or agitation of mind; the exerciſe that generally brought it on, was walking, eſpecially on an aſcent, either of ſtairs or riſing

ground, but never on going down either the one or the other; the affections of the mind that brought it on were principally anxiety or anger: it was not the cauſe of the anxiety, but the quantity that moſt affected him; the anxiety about the hiving of a ſwarm of bees brought it on; the anxiety leſt an animal ſhould make its eſcape before he could get a gun to ſhoot it, brought it on; even the hearing of a ſtory in which the mind became ſo much engaged as to be intereſted in the event, although the particulars were of no conſequence to him, would bring it on; anger brought on the ſame complaint and he could conceive it poſſible for that paſſion to be carried ſo far as totally to deprive him of life; but what was very extraordinary, the more tender paſſions of the mind did not produce it; he could relate a ſtory which called up all the finer feelings, as compaſſion, admiration for the actions of gratitude in others, ſo as to make him ſhed tears, yet the ſpaſm was not excited: it is extraordinary that he eat and ſlept as well as ever, and his mind was in no degree depreſſed; the want of exerciſe made him grow unuſually fat.

As he had not drank wine for four or five years he was adviſed to try it, which he complied with, but found the ſpaſms more eaſily brought on after uſing it, than on thoſe days on which he drank none; and they were always more readily produced after eating a hearty meal. He continued very much in the ſame way till Auguſt, when he went to Tunbridge and drank the waters for about a fortnight, without the leaſt benefit, but rather conceived he was worſe. From thence he hurried to Bath, the firſt week in September, and drank the waters for four weeks, twice before breakfaſt, and once at noon; having drank them for about a fortnight, he began to bathe every other night in the hot-bath, and on the intermediate nights put his feet into the hot-bath waters, and ſometimes rode on horſeback.

After being there three weeks he did not find the leaſt benefit, but on Monday, the beginning of the fourth week, he found that his walking to the pump-room in a morning did not bring on the ſpaſm as uſual, and found alſo that he could extend his walk very conſiderably on that day; on Tueſday he was not quite ſo well, although when he compared that day with the preceding days, or rather months, he could ſay that he was better; this ſeemed to be a ſtep gained; in this ſtate he left Bath, and continued the ſame through the whole winter. About the beginning of May 1786, he began to believe that the exerciſe he was able to make uſe of affected him leſs; he found that in the months of June, July, Auguſt, and September, he was able to take a long walk ſlowly; he could, however, at any time, bring on the complaint, for upon uſing the leaſt exercile he felt as if it was coming on; and often, by forgetting himſelf, he brought it on ſlighty, which made him ſlacken his pace. In the month of October, when the weather became cold, he was obliged conſtantly to uſe his carriage, becauſe he could not walk ſufficiently faſt to keep himſelf warm, although in other reſpects he was not affected by it. What appeared very extraordinary was, that the ſpaſm did not come on equally upon all kinds of exerciſe; he often performed an operation, as cutting for the ſtone, or extirpation of a breaſt, which, from peculiar circumſtances, required a conſiderable deal of fatigue, and laſted near an hour each time, yet the ſpaſm did not come on. He was employed in embalming the Princeſs Amelia for three hours, in which time he was really fatigued, but had no ſpaſm the whole time; yet, by going the length of Cavendiſh-ſquare, and on towards Oxford-road, he was ſeized with a conſiderable ſpaſm; but the fatigue he had undergone acted, probably, as a prediſpoſing cauſe.

Theſe ſpaſms, although they did not increaſe in violence, were uniformly more frequent, and came on upon a greater variety of occaſions; but as he became accuſtomed to their effects, leſs attention was paid to them. Nothing particular occurred from this period till about the beginning of December 1789, in the evening, when at the houſe of a friend on a viſit, he was attacked with a total loſs of memory; he did not know in what part of the town he was, not even the name of the ſtreet when told it nor where his own houſe was; he had not a conception of any place exiſting beyond the room he was in, yet was perfectly conſcious of the loſs of memory. He was ſenſible of impreſſions of all kinds from the ſenſes, and therefore looked out of the window, although very dark, to ſee if he could be made ſenſible of the ſituation of the houſe; this loſs of memory gradually went off, and in leſs than half an hour his memory was perfectly recovered. About a fortnight after, as he was viſiting his patient one forenoon, he obſerved occaſionally a little giddineſs in his head, and by three o'clock it was attended with an inclination to vomit. He came home and drank ſome warm water, which made him vomit ſeverely, but nothing came off his ſtomach except the water. The giddineſs became ſevere, but went off again about ſeven or eight o'clock; about nine or ten it returned with more ſeverity, and when going to bed, about eleven o'clock, he had entirely loſt the centre of gravity, although he could move his limbs as the will directed; light became offenſive, and every thing had a kind of yellow caſt; ſounds were more acute than natural, objects had loſt their true direction; a perpendicular, for inſtance, ſeemed to lean to the left, making, as nearly as he could conjecture, an angle with the horizon of fifty or ſixty degrees; objects were alſo ſmaller than the natural recollection of them; his idea of his own ſize

was that of only being four feet high; alſo objects appeared to be at an unuſual diſtance, as if ſeen through a concave glaſs; he had a ſlight ſound in the right ear, at every ſtroke of the pulſe; motion in his head was extremely diſagreeable, he therefore moved with great caution; although coughing and ſneezing did not affect it: during this illneſs Dr. Pitcairn and Dr. Baillie attended him. It is difficult to deſcribe ſenſations, eſpecially when they are not common; the ſenſation which he had in his head was not pain, but rather ſo unnatural as to give him the idea of having no head; with all this, neither the mind nor the reaſoning faculty were affected, which is not the caſe when ſuch effects are produced from liquor. Objects in the mind were very lively, and often diſagreeably ſo; dreams had the ſtrength of reality, ſo much ſo, as to awaken him; the remembrance of them was very perfect. The diſpoſition to ſleep was a good deal gone, an hour or two in the twenty-four being as much as could be obtained; theſe ſymptons were much the ſame for about a week, and began gradually to diminiſh, ſo that in a fortnight he was able to ſit up, and in three weeks went an airing in the carriage; cordial medicines were given, and the body kept open; he felt a pain in the joint of the great toe, which inflamed gently, but ſoon left it; his pulſe was rather increaſed in frequency, the urine at firſt was high coloured, depoſited a ſediment, and was rather diminiſhed in quantity; but the retention in the bladder was very great, as he was not able to make water from ten o'clock in the evening till the ſame time the next evening, the quantity being very conſiderable, although not ſo much as would have been made in the ſame time had he been in health. The urine became of a yellow colour, and afterwards pale; the ſtools were ſolid; the taſte of victuals was not impaired, except tea, for which he had no reliſh. Al-

though he had no particular inclination to eat, yet his appetite was not much diminiſhed. To excite the action of the gout, ſinapiſms were applied to the feet, but had not the deſired effect; in the fourth week the head not recovering ſo faſt as was expected, a bliſter was applied between the ſhoulders, but had no immediate effect, probably did harm, by producing irritation and want of ſleep; one night, not having above an hour's ſleep, he drank a tumbler full of hot water, which ſet him immediately to ſleep, in which ſtate he continued near four hours; he took a hint from this and drank a tumbler full of hot water every night, juſt before he went to bed, which did not fail of putting him ſoon to ſleep, and giving him a good night's reſt*.

The apparent obliquity of objects he accounted for by ſuppoſing that the two correſponding oblique muſcles had an unnatural contraction which moved the two eyes round near thirty or forty degrees; we ſhall ſuppoſe that the obliquus ſuperior of the left eye brought the eye-ball forwards to the noſe, while the obliquus inferior of the right eye contracted equal to the ſuperior of the left; this turned the under part of the right eye inwards towards the noſe, and the upper part outwards, which moved a lateral part of the eye upon the object, and gave it that obliquity.

His recovery from this indiſpoſition was leſs perfect than from any of the others; he never loſt entirely the oblique viſion; his memory was in ſome reſpects evidently impaired, and the ſpaſms became

* He took advantage of this circumſtance, and in all caſes of irritable ſtomachs, from whatever cauſe, preſcribed warm water, which in general gave relief; one remarkable caſe of bleeding from the ſtomach, in conſequence of irritation, was entirely cured by the internal uſe of warm water.

more conſtant; he never went to bed without their being brought on by the act of undreſſing himſelf; they came on in the middle of the night; the leaſt exertion in converſation after dinner was attended by them; he felt therefore obliged to confine himſelf within a certain ſphere of action, and to avoid dining in large companies. Even operations in ſurgery, if attended with any nicety, now produced the ſame effects.

In the autumn 1790, and in the ſpring and autumn 1791, he had more ſevere attacks than during the other periods of the year, but of not more than a few hours duration: in the beginning of October 1792, one, at which I was preſent, was ſo violent that I thought he would have died. On October the 16th, 1793, when in his uſual ſtate of health, he went to St. George's Hoſpital, and meeting with ſome things which irritated his mind, and not being perfectly maſter of the circumſtances, he withheld his ſentiments, in which ſtate of reſtraint he went into the next room, and turning round to Dr. Robertſon, one of the phyſicians of the hoſpital, he gave a deep groan, and dropt down dead.

It is a curious circumſtance that, the firſt attack of theſe complaints was produced by an affection of the mind, and every future return of any conſequence aroſe from the ſame cauſe; and although bodily exerciſe, or diſtention of the ſtomach, brought on ſlighter affections, it ſtill required the mind to be affected to render them ſevere; and as his mind was irritated by trifles, theſe produced the moſt violent effects on the diſeaſe. His coachman being beyond his time, or a ſervant not attending to his directions, brought on the ſpaſms, while a real misfortune produced no effect.

At the time of his death he was in the 65th year of his age, the ſame age at which his brother, the late Dr. Hunter, died.

Upon inſpecting the body after death, the following were the appearances: the ſkin in ſeveral places was mottled, particularly on the ſides and neck, which aroſe from the blood not having been completely coagulated, but remaining nearly fluid.

The contents of the abdomen were in a natural ſtate, but the coats of the ſtomach and inteſtines were unuſually loaded with blood, giving them a fleſhy appearance, and a dark reddiſh colour; thoſe parts, which had a depending ſituation, as in the bottom of the pelvis, and upon the loins, had this in a greater degree than the others; this evidently aroſe from the fluid ſtate of the blood. The ſtomach was rather relaxed, but the internal ſurface was entirely free from any appearance of diſeaſe; the orifice at the pylorus was uncommonly open. The gall-bladder contained five or ſix ſmall ſtones of a light yellow colour. The liver and the other viſcera exhibited nothing unuſual in their appearance.

The cartilages of the ribs had in many places become bone, requiring a ſaw to divide them. There was no water in the cavity, of the cheſt, and the lungs of the right ſide were uncommonly healthy; but thoſe of the left had very ſtrong adheſions to the pleura, extending over a conſiderable ſurface, more eſpecially towards the ſternum.

The pericardium was very unuſually thickened, which did not allow it to collapſe upon being opened; the quantity of water contained in it was ſcarcely more than is frequently met with, although it might probably exceed that which occurs in the moſt healthy ſtate of theſe parts.

The heart itſelf was very ſmall, appearing too little for the cavity in which it lay, and did not give the idea of its being the effect of an unuſual degree of contraction, but more of its having ſhrunk in its ſize. Upon the under ſurface of the left auricle and ventricle, there were two ſpaces

nearly an inch and an half ſquare, which were of a white colour, with an opaque appearance, and entirely diſtinct from the general ſurface of the heart: theſe two ſpaces were covered by an exudation of coagulating lymph, which at ſome former period had been the reſult of inflammation there. The muſcular ſtructure of the heart was paler and looſer in its texture than the other muſcles in the body. There were no coagula in any of its cavities. The coronary arteries had their branches which ramify through the ſubſtance of the heart in the ſtate of bony tubes, which were with difficulty divided by the knife, and their tranſverſe ſections did not collapſe, but remained open. The valvulæ mitrales, where they come off from the lower edge of the auricle, were in many places oſſified, forming an imperfectly bony margin of different thickneſſes, and in one ſpot ſo thick as to form a knob; but theſe oſſifications were not continued down upon the valve towards the chordæ tendineæ.

The ſemilunar valves of the aorta had loſt their natural pliancy, the previous ſtage to becoming bone, and in ſeveral ſpots there were evident oſſifications.

The aorta immediately beyond the ſemilunar valves had its cavity larger than uſual, putting on the appearance of an incipient aneuriſm; this unuſual dilatation extended for ſome way along the aſcending aorta, but did not reach ſo far as the common trunk of the axillary and carotid artery. The increaſe of capacity of the artery might be about one-third of its natural area; and the internal membrane of this part had loſt entirely the natural poliſh, and was ſtudded over with opaque white ſpots, raiſed higher than the general ſurface.

On inſpecting the head, the cranium and dura matter were found in a natural ſtate. The pia mater had the veſſels upon the ſurface of the two

hemiſpheres of the brain turged with blood, which is commonly found to be the caſe after ſudden death.

The internal ſtructure of the brain was very carefully examined, and the different parts both of the cerebrum and cerebellum were found in the moſt natural and healthy ſtate; but the internal carotid arteries as they paſs by the ſides of the cella turſica were oſſified, and ſeveral of the ramifications which go off from them had become opaque and unhealthy in their appearance. The vertebral arteries lying upon the medulla oblongata had alſo become bony, and the baſillary artery, which is formed by them, had opaque white ſpots very generally along its coats.

From this account of the appearances obſerved after death, it is reaſonable to attribute the principal ſymptoms of the diſeaſe to an organic affection of the heart. That organ was rendered unable to carry on its functions, whenever the actions were diſturbed, either in conſequence of bodily exertion, or affections of the mind.

The ſtoppage of the pulſe aroſe from a ſpaſm upon the heart, and in this ſtate the nerves were probably preſſed againſt the oſſified arteries, which may account for the excruciating pain he felt at thoſe times.

The other ſymptoms may be explained from the defect in the valves and the dilatation of the aorta, which had loſt its elaſticity.

In the laſt attack the ſpaſm upon the heart was either too violent in the degree of contraction, or too long continued to admit of relaxation, ſo that death immediately enſued.

His remains were interred in a vault under the pariſh church of St. Martin in the Fields, attended by a few of his oldeſt medical friends.

Mr. Hunter was of a ſhort ſtature, uncommonly ſtrong and active, very compactly made, and capa-

ble of great bodily exertion. His countenance was animated, open, and in the latter part of his life deeply impreſſed with thoughtfulneſs. When his print was ſhewn to Lavator, he ſaid, "That man thinks for himſelf." In his youth he was cheerful in his diſpoſition, and entered into youthful follies like others of the ſame age: but wine never agreed with his ſtomach, ſo that after ſome time he left it off altogether, and for the laſt twenty years drank nothing but water.

His temper was very warm and impatient, readily provoked, and when irritated, not eaſily ſoothed. His diſpoſition was candid, and free from reſerve, even to a fault. He hated deceit, and as he was above every kind of artifice, he deteſted it in others, and too openly avowed his ſentiments. His mind was uncommonly active; it was naturally formed for inveſtigation, and that turn diſplayed itſelf on the moſt trivial occaſions, and always with mathematical exactneſs. What is curious, it fatigued him to be long in a mixed company which did not admit of connected converſation; more particularly during the laſt ten years of his life.

He required leſs relaxation than moſt other men; ſeldom ſleeping more than four hours in the night, but almoſt always nearly an hour after dinner; this, probably, aroſe from the natural turn of his mind being ſo much adapted to his own occupations, that they were in reality his amuſement, and therefore did not fatigue.

To his own abilities alone was he indebted for the eminence which he acquired in his profeſſion; for although his medical education, his ſituation as ſurgeon to St. George's Hoſpital, and above all, his brother's recommendation entitled him to notice, yet the increaſe of his private practice was at

firſt but ſlow. The natural independence of his mind, led him rather to indulge in his own purſuits, than to cultivate the means of enlarging the ſphere of his buſineſs; but the proofs which he afterwards gave of his talents commanded the attention of the public and procured him a very liberal income.

In the firſt eleven years of his practice, from 1763 to 1774, his income never amounted to a thouſand pounds a year; in the year 1778 it exceeded that ſum; for ſeveral years before his death it had increaſed to five, and at that period was above ſix thouſand pounds.

In private practice he was liberal, ſcrupulouſly honeſt in ſaying what was really his opinion of the caſe, and ready upon all occaſions to acknowledge his ignorance whenever there was any thing which he did not underſtand.

In converſation he ſpoke too freely, and ſometimes harſhly of his cotemporaries; but if he did not do juſtice to their undoubted merits, it aroſe not from envy, but from his thorough conviction that ſurgery was as yet in its infancy, and he himſelf a novice in his own art; and his anxiety to have it carried to perfection, made him think meanly and ill of every one whoſe exertions in that reſpect did not equal his own.

Public-ſpirited to an extreme, he valued money no farther than as it enabled him to proſecute and extend his various, and nearly univerſal reſearches; and hurried on by the ambition of benefiting mankind at large, he paid too little attention to his own and his family's intereſts. But imprudence almoſt always goes hand in hand with genius; if it deſerves a harſher name, let it be remembered, that his immediate relatives alone, and not the public,

have a right to complain; for viewed in a profeſſional light, and as a man of ſcience, his zeal for the improvement of ſurgery in particular, and for the advancement of knowledge in general, to both of which he himſelf materially contributed, entitles him at leaſt to the gratitude, if not to the veneration of poſterity.

INTRODUCTION.

THE following pages, treating of inflammation, were first arranged in the year 1762, at Belliſle, after the complete reduction of that place. They were compiled from notes, and memorandums of obſervations, made in the courſe of twelve years reſidence in London. During this ſpace, my time was occupied partly in my education under the late Dr. Hunter, and partly in aſſiſting him. In the winter ſeaſon I was principally employed in the diſſecting-room, where I taught the practical part of anatomy; in the ſummer I attended the hoſpitals. The truth of theſe obſervations was, during the ſiege of Belliſle, in ſome degree put to the teſt, by comparing them with many caſes of wounds, which were attended with inflammation. From the frequency of gun-ſhot wounds at that place, I was naturally led to arrange my thoughts upon the ſubject, and was induced to ſelect them more particularly, for the illuſtration of my opinions on inflammation. About the year 1770, when I began my lectures on the principles of diſeaſe, inflammation was the ſubject of a conſiderable part of them; and, from that time till this, though I have been extending and correcting the materials, my principles remain the ſame. To diſtinguiſh the different ſpecies of inflammation*, and to expreſs my own ideas the better, I was naturally led to ſubſtitute ſuch terms as appeared to me more expreſſive of what was meant, than thoſe uſually employed. The beſt teſt of the propriety of theſe terms is, that they have been adopted by many medical writers ſince that period; and indeed my principles have undergone the ſame kind of teſt. In this ſome medical writers have been very liberal, for, not contented with taking hints, they have even laid hold of

* In the courſe of this work I very often make uſe of the word ſpecies or ſpecific, by which I only mean peculiarities or diſtinctions; and probably the term is much too looſe in its application; for as we are not entirely acquainted with the ſpecific differences in diſeaſe, we may call that a ſpecies which more properly ranks as a genus, claſs, &c. Of morbid poiſons we can make a correct arrangement; but, with regard to diſeaſe ariſing from peculiarities in the conſtitution, we have no ſuch abſolute guides.

large portions of my lectures, ſcreening themſelves under the very honourable protection of their not being in print; and, at the ſame time, quoting authors to ſhow their reading and their *candour*. It would appear that they conſider the diſcoveries and opinions of a lecturer, found probably in a manuſcript, as fair game; though their delicate attention to the rights of another would, no doubt, have prevented them from adopting the ſame doctrines, had they been actually in print. Such freedoms have made me anxious to publiſh, not only becauſe the public intereſts itſelf in the origin of every diſcovery or opinion, but becauſe I wiſh to preſerve my right, and alſo to give in a more perfect form, what was thought worthy of the public, even in a mutilated ſtate. My reſpect for that public, however, has withheld me hitherto from publiſhing, that I might firſt be able to complete my ſubject, as far as time and other circumſtances would allow me. I hope this publication will, at leaſt, have equal good effects with thoſe I have before produced, not only enabling perſons to write on the ſame ſubject, who could not otherwiſe have done it, but even to become critics in matters of which, till then, they were entirely ignorant.

I have endeavoured, as far as my other purſuits would permit, to form this work into a regular ſyſtem, one part exactly depending on another; how far I have ſucceeded the world muſt judge; but at the ſame time it ought to be conſidered as a new figure compoſed from rough materials, in which proceſs little or no aſſiſtance could be had from any quarter, wherein the author is conſcious of many imperfections, more of which he is perſuaded he ſhall himſelf obſerve at every ſucceſſive review.

There are many opinions reſpecting the animal œconomy peculiar to myſelf, which are introduced, or frequently referred to, in the courſe of this work. It is therefore neceſſary to premiſe a ſhort explanation of ſome of them, that the ideas and terms which are employed may be better underſtood. To others of them, however, this method cannot be applied, as they belong eſſentially to the body of the work, or are ſo immediately connected with it, as to be beſt underſtood when treated in connection with that part.

I ſhall carry my ideas of life further than has commonly been done: life I believe to exiſt in every part of an animal body, and to render it ſuſceptible of impreſſions which excite action; there is no part which has not more or leſs

of this principle, and conſequently no part which does not act according to the nature of the principle itſelf, and the impreſſions thence ariſing, producing thereby infinite variety, both in all natural and diſeaſed acts. How far every part has an equal quantity of life, or of the powers of life, is not eaſily aſcertained; but if we were to eſtimate them by the powers of action, we ſhould judge tolerably well. Diſeaſe would ſeem to give ſome intelligence with regard to this matter; but how far reſiſtance to diſeaſe, and powers of reſtoration, depend on the powers of life, or ſimply on the powers of action, I cannot ſay; but I believe it may be ſet down as a rule, that thoſe parts that are endowed with moſt action reſiſt diſeaſe moſt ſtrongly, and in diſeaſe reſtore themſelves more readily to a healthy ſtate.

I. OF DISEASED ACTIONS, AS BEING INCOMPATIBLE WITH EACH OTHER.

As I reckon every operation in the body an action, whether univerſal or partial, it appears to me, beyond a doubt, that no two actions can take place in the ſame conſtitution, nor in the ſame part at one and the ſame time; the operations of the body are ſimilar in this reſpect to actions or motions in common matter. It naturally reſults from this principle, that no two different fevers can exiſt in the ſame conſtitution, nor two local diſeaſes in the ſame part at the ſame time. There are many local diſeaſes which have diſpoſitions totally different, but having very ſimilar appearances, have been ſuppoſed by ſome to be one ſort of diſeaſe, by others to be a different kind, and by others again a compound of two diſeaſes. Thus the venereal diſeaſe, when it attacks the ſkin, is very ſimilar to thoſe diſeaſes which are vulgarly called ſcorbutic, and vice versâ. Theſe, therefore, are often ſuppoſed to be mixed, and to exiſt in the ſame part. Thus we hear of a pocky-ſcurvy, a pocky-itch, rheumatic-gout, etc. etc. which names, according to my principle, imply a union that cannot poſſibly exiſt.

It has been conſidered as contradictory to this opinion, that a patient might have the ſcrofula, ſcurvy, venereal diſeaſe, ſmall-pox, etc. at the ſame time; all this is indeed poſſible; but then no two of them can exiſt in the ſame part of the body at the ſame time; but before one of them

can occupy the place of another, that other muſt be firſt deſtroyed, or it may be ſuperſeded for a time, and may afterwards return.

When a conſtitution is ſuſceptible of any one diſeaſe, this does not hinder it from being alſo ſuſceptible of others. I can conceive it poſſible that a man may be very ſuſceptible of every diſeaſe incident to the human body, although it is not probable; for I ſhould believe that one ſuſceptibility is in ſome degree incompatible with another, in a manner ſimilar to the incompatibility between different actions, though not of ſo ſtrict a kind.

A man may have the lues and the ſmall-pox at the ſame time; that is, parts of his body may be contaminated by the venereal poiſon; the ſmall-pox may at the ſame time take place, and both diſeaſes may appear together, but ſtill not in the ſame part.

In two eruptive diſeaſes, where both are neceſſarily the the conſequence of fever, and where both naturally appear after the fever nearly at the ſame diſtance of time, it would be impoſſible for the two to have their reſpective eruptions, even in different parts, becauſe it is impoſſible that the two preceding fevers ſhould be co-exiſtent.

From this principle I think I may fairly put the following queries:—Does not the failure of inoculation, and the power of reſiſting many infections, ariſe from the exiſtence of ſome other diſeaſe at that time in the body, which is therefore incapable of another action?

Does not the great difference in the time, from the application of the cauſe to the appearance of the diſeaſe, in many caſes, depend upon the ſame principle? For inſtance, a perſon is inoculated, and the puncture does not inflame for fourteen days, caſes of which I have ſeen, is not this deviation from the natural progreſs of the diſeaſe to be attributed to another diſeaſe in the conſtitution at the time of inoculation?

Does not the cure of ſome diſeaſes depend upon the ſame principle as the ſuſpenſion or cure of a gonorrhœa by a fever?

Let me illuſtrate this principle ſtill further, by one of many caſes which have come under my own obſervation. On Thurſday, the ſixteenth of May, one thouſand ſeven hundred and ſeventy-five, I inoculated a gentleman's child, and it was obſerved that I made pretty large punctures. On the Sunday following, viz. the nineteenth, he appeared to have received the infection, a ſmall inflammation or redneſs

appearing round each puncture, and a ſmall tumor. On the twentieth and the twenty-firſt the child was feveriſh; but I declared that it was not the variolous fever, as the inflammation had not at all advanced ſince the nineteenth. On the twenty-ſecond a conſiderable eruption appeared, which was evidently the meaſles, and the ſores on the arms appeared to go back, becoming leſs inflamed.

On the twenty-third he was very full of the meaſles; but the punctures on the arm were in the ſame ſtate as on the preceding day.

On the twenty-fifth the meaſles began to diſappear. On the twenty-ſixth and twenty-ſeventh the punctures began again to look a little red. On the twenty-ninth the inflammation increaſed, and there was a little matter formed. On the thirtieth he was ſeized with fever. The ſmall-pox appeared at the regular time, went through its uſual courſe, and terminated favourably.

II. OF PARTS SUSCEPTIBLE OF PARTICULAR DISEASES.

THERE are ſome parts much more ſuſceptible of ſpecific diſeaſes than others. Poiſons take their different ſeats in the body as if they were allotted to them. Thus the ſkin is attacked by what are vulgarly called ſcorbutic-eruptions, as well as many other diſeaſes; it is alſo the ſeat of the ſmall-pox and the meaſles; the throat is the ſeat of action in the hydrophobia and the hooping cough. The abſorbent ſyſtem, eſpecially the glands, are more ſuſceptible of ſcrofula than moſt other parts of the body. The breaſts, teſticles, and the conglomerate glands, are moſt commonly the ſeat of cancer. The ſkin, throat, and noſe, are more readily affected by the lues venerea, than the bones and perioſteum, which however ſuffer ſooner than many other parts, particularly the vital parts, which perhaps are not at all ſuſceptible of this diſeaſe. Theſe differences may ariſe from the nature of the parts themſelves, or from ſome regular circumſtances, which muſt act as an exiſting cauſe.

III. OF SYMPATHY.

IT is unneceſſary to give a definition of ſympathy, for it is generally very well underſtood when applied to the mind,

and alſo by medical men when applied to the body. In the mind its reference is external, it depends upon the ſtate of others, and one of its chief uſes is to excite an active intereſt in favour of the diſtreſſed, the mind of the ſpectators taking on nearly the ſame action with that of the ſufferers, and diſpoſing them to give relief or conſolation; it is, therefore, one of the firſt of the ſocial feelings, and by many uſeful operations, incline mankind to union. In the body, ſympathy has only a reference internally to the body itſelf, and is not ſo evident as the ſympathy of the mind; although in ſome caſes we ſee its effects. It is either natural or diſeaſed; but it is the diſeaſed only that I propoſe at preſent to conſider. I ſhall divide the ſympathy of the body into two kinds, univerſal and partial.

By the univerſal ſympathy is meant, where the whole conſtitution ſympathizes with ſome ſenſation or action of a part. By partial ſympathy is meant, when one or more diſtinct parts ſympathize with ſome local ſenſation or action. The univerſal ſympathies are various in different diſeaſes; but thoſe which ariſe in conſequence of local violence, are principally three, viz. the ſymptomatic, the nervous, and the hectic fever. The ſymptomatic fever is an immediate effect of ſome local injury, and therefore is an univerſal ſympathy ariſing from a local cauſe; the nervous has no determined form nor ſtages of the diſeaſe from the firſt cauſe, as delirium, ſpaſm, almoſt of all kinds and in all parts, locked-jaw, etc. The hectic fever is alſo an univerſal ſympathy, attended with a local diſeaſe, which the conſtitution is not able to overcome. Moſt of theſe will be more fully treated when I have occaſion to deſcribe their cauſes.

I divide partial ſympathy into three kinds; the remote, the contiguous, and the continuous.

The remote ſympathy is where there appears no viſible connection of parts that can account for ſuch effects. In theſe caſes there is commonly a ſenſation in the ſympathizer which appear to be deluſive, and produces a wrong reference of the mind to the ſeat of the diſeaſe, ſuch as the pain of the ſhoulder in an inflammation of the liver.

The contiguous ſympathy is that which appears to have no other connection than ariſes from the contact of ſeparate parts. An inſtance of which we have in contained parts ſympathizing with the containing; ſuch as the ſtomach and inteſtines ſympathizing with the integuments of the ab-

domen, the lungs with the cheſt, the brain with the ſcalp, and the teſticles with the ſcrotum.

The continuous ſympathy is where there is no interruption of parts, and the ſympathy runs, or is continued along from the irritating point as from a centre, ſo as to be gradually loſt in the ſurrounding parts, in proportion to the diſtance; and this is the moſt common of all the ſympathies; an example of it we have in the ſpreading of inflammation, which will be often mentioned in this treatiſe.

IV. OF MORTIFICATION.

MORTIFICATION is of two kinds, the one without inflammation, and the other preceded by it; but as the caſes of mortification, which will be mentioned in this work, are all of the ſecond kind, I ſhall confine my obſervations to that ſpecies.

I conſider inflammation as an increaſed action of that power which a part naturally poſſeſſes; and, in healthy inflammations at leaſt, it is probably attended with an increaſe of power; but in inflammations which terminate in mortification, there is no increaſe of power; but, on the contrary, a diminution of it. This, when joined to an increaſed action, becomes a cauſe of mortification, by deſtroying the balance which ought to ſubſiſt between the power and action of every part. There are beſides, caſes of mortification preceded by inflammation, which do not ariſe wholly from that, as a cauſe, but rather ſeem to have ſomething in their nature; of this kind is the carbuncle, and the ſlough formed in the ſmall-pox puſtule.

If this account of mortifications, ariſing from no ſpecific nature, be juſt, we ſhall find it no difficult matter to eſtabliſh a rational mode of cure; but, before we attempt this, let us take a view of the treatment which has been hitherto recommended, and ſee how far it agrees with our theory. It is plain, from the common practice, that the weakneſs has been attended to; but it is plain that the increaſed action has been overlooked; and, therefore, the whole aim has been to increaſe the action in order to remove the weakneſs. The Peruvian bark, confectio cardiaca, ſerpentaria, etc. have been given in large quantities, as the caſe appeared to require, or the conſtitution could bear; by which means an artificial or temporary appearance of ſtrength has been pro-

duced, while it was only an increaſed action. Cordials and wine, upon the principle on which they have been given, are rationally adminiſtered; but there are ſtrong reaſons for not recommending them, ariſing from the general effect which they poſſeſs, of increaſing the action without giving real ſtrength. The powers of the body are, by this treatment, ſunk afterwards in the ſame proportion as they had been raiſed, by which nothing can be gained, but a great deal may be loſt; for, in all caſes, if the powers are allowed to ſink below a certain point, they are irrecoverable.

The local treatment has been as abſurd as the conſtitutional; ſcarifications have been made down to the living parts, that ſtimulating and antiſeptic medicines might be applied to them, as turpentines, the warmer balſams, and ſometimes the eſſential oils; warm fomentations have been alſo applied, as being congenial to life; but warmth always increaſes action, and, therefore, ſhould be well adjuſted to the caſe; for, on the other hand, cold debilitates, or leſſens powers when carried too far, but at firſt leſſens action. Stimulants likewiſe are improper where the actions are already too violent.

Upon the principles here laid down, the bark is the principal medicine, as yet known, that we depend upon, as it increaſes the powers and leſſens the degree of action. Upon many occaſions opium will be of ſingular ſervice, by leſſening the action; although it does not give real ſtrength. I have ſeen good effects from it, both when given internally in large doſes, and when applied to the part. It is proper alſo to keep the parts cool, and all the applications ſhould be cold.

PART I.

CHAPTER I.

GENERAL PRINCIPLES OF THE BLOOD.

AS the blood is allowed by all to have a conſiderable ſhare in inflammation, or at leaſt to be particularly affected by it, becoming, by its appearances, one of the ſigns or ſymptoms of its exiſtence; and, as the blood is a material object with me in the theory of inflammation, I ſhall begin my treatiſe with its natural hiſtory, a previous knowledge of which is the more requiſite, becauſe the accounts of this fluid, hitherto given, will hardly explain any of its uſes in the machine in health, or of its changes in diſeaſe.

The heart and veſſels are very active in inflammations; and as their ſtructures and actions have not hitherto been underſtood, I have ſubjoined to the natural hiſtory of the blood an account of the ſtructure of the heart and veſſels, together with their actions in the machine; to which I have added one uſe of the abſorbents not hitherto known.

As every natural action of the body depends, for its perfection, on a number of circumſtances, we are lead to conclude, that all the various combining actions are eſtabliſhed while the body is in health, and well-diſpoſed; but this does not take place in diſeaſed actions, for diſeaſe, on the contrary, conſiſts in the want of this very combination; and diſeaſed actions, therefore, vary according to many natural circumſtances, of which I propoſe to point out a few of the moſt ſtriking inſtances.

Inflammation muſt have ſome exciting cauſe, and the ſame cauſe will produce an effect under one circumſtance, which it will not under another. I have, therefore, begun with the ſuppoſition of an injury, attended with ſuch circumſtances as do not excite inflammation,

which will form a ſtrong contraſt to thoſe which do the oppoſite effects mutually illuſtrating each other; but as inflammation is a very general action of the veſſels in diſeaſe, and is of various kinds, I have previouſly given a ſhort account of ſeveral of the moſt common ſorts of inflammation, which will explain the reſt.

The whole material world has been very properly divided into ſolids and fluids; theſe being the only eſſentially different ſtates of matter we are able to obſerve. From one of theſe ſtates, to the other, matter appears to be continually paſſing, but with theſe reſtrictions, that no ſpecies of matter can aſſume a ſolid form, without having firſt been in a fluid ſtate; nor can any change take place in a ſolid till it be firſt formed into, or ſuſpended in a fluid. The living animal body is obedient to theſe general laws, for all ſolid and animal matter has firſt been fluid, and having paſſed into this ſolid form, becomes a recipient for other fluids, out of which the ſolids may themſelves be renovated and increaſed.

The ſolids of an animal, although compoſed of one ſpecies of matter, yet admit of great variety in their appearance, and this variety takes place in ſome animals more than in others. But the fluid part of an animal body, in its natural ſtate, has but one appearance, which is that of blood. There are certain parts of animals which, though hardly ſolid in their own nature, are yet to be conſidered as ſolids, from their being fixed in their ſituation, and appropriated to local actions; ſome of them acting on the fluids (which are, to a certain degree, paſſive in all animals) and diſpoſing of them for particular purpoſes in the animal œconomy, in the ſame manner as is done by thoſe which are uſually called the ſolids in animals; of this ſort are the gelatinous parts in many of the inferior orders of ſea animals, as the Meduſa, the vitrious humour of the eye, etc. There appears to be a ſympathetic intercourſe between the ſolid and the fluid parts of an animal, deſigned by nature for their mutual ſupport. In diſeaſe, when the machine cannot be furniſhed in the common way, the ſolids of the body ſupply the defects, and the perſon becomes lean; and the fluids would appear from this, to be more an object of attention in the machine than even the ſolids.

This fluid part of an animal is called the blood, and in the animals with which we are moſt acquainted, it is of a red colour. The nature and appearances of the blood have

been more attended to in diſeaſes, eſpecially of the inflammatory kind, than in full health, as it is more expreſſive of diſeaſe, when removed from the body, than any of the ſolids, and undergoes changes which the ſolids do not. Some of theſe changes are produced by the ſeparation of parts from one another; but as the body is ſeldom in perfect health, we can hardly procure the blood in the ſame ſtate twice from one perſon, although it may not be ſenſibly diſeaſed. In a hiſtory of the blood theſe varieties muſt be mentioned, although they are often ſlighter appearances of what we find in diſeaſe; for diſeaſe certainly throws great light on the natural hiſtory of the blood, and the apparent changes which it undergoes muſt have unavoidably called medical men to conſider it with attention.

The only knowledge, however, we have of any difference in the blood, ariſes from theſe varieties in its ſpontaneous changes when extravaſated; nor do theſe differences appear always to affect the real nature of the blood, as the animals often continue in health while they are going on.

Blood is moſt probably as much alike in all animals, as the muſcle of one animal is like that of another; only with this difference, that ſome animals have not that part which gives it the red colour; but the other parts, as the lymph and ſerum, are, as far as I yet know, the ſame in all.

Transfuſion of the blood of one animal into the veſſels of another, proves, to a certain degree, the uniform nature of the blood; for, as far as theſe experiments have been urged, no alteration has been obſerved.

Concerning natural objects, we uſually acquire a groſs knowledge, from the frequency with which they are obſerved, and it often requires little more than common attention to have a tolerable conception of their general principles. This is the caſe with the blood.

Blood is known to be of a red colour in a great number of animals, and to be altogether a fluid while circulating in the living body. It is known to ſeparate into parts when out of the body, and a portion of it to become ſolid; it is likewiſe known, that, when deprived of a certain proportion of it, an animal dies; it has, therefore, been held in particular veneration, as conſtituting the life of the animal. Like other things which are diſcovered to be of great uſe, the blood has frequently attracted the attention of mankind, as an object of curioſity only, from which ſome have proceeded to a more critical enquiry into its nature

and properties, and to more extenſive elucidation of the ſubject at large. To this, practitioners in phyſic have a great deal contributed, from a conviction, that this knowledge would be of much uſe to them in their profeſſion; and the teachers of the art have been ſtill more induſtrious in their inveſtigations; but the frequeut recourſe which is had to the lancet in diſeaſes, has afforded the moſt ample opportunities of obſervation, almoſt ſufficient to explain every principle in the blood, without the aid of further experiment.

In animals poſſeſſed of red blood, two modes of inveſtigation may be adopted. One of theſe reſpects the blood while in its circulating, when the colour makes its motion viſible, and gives an idea of the circulation in the ſmaller veſſels. Accidents, operations, and anatomical knowledge of the veſſels in which the blood is contained, have at the ſame time aſſiſted us to form more perfect ideas of its motion in the larger veſſels. The other mode, which is that of examining the blood when out of the body, enables us to obſerve whatever relates to its ſpontaneous changes and ſeparation, together with the apparent properties of each component part. Its chemical properties become known likewiſe by this ſecond mode, though without throwing much light on the nature of the fluid itſelf.

The blood is called a fluid becauſe it is always found in a fluid ſtate in the veſſels of a living animal, while under the influence of the circulation: yet it is not, under all circumſtances naturally ſo; for of one part of it, when not circulating, ſolidity is a neceſſary and eſſential property; fluidity being only neceſſary at the time of circulation for its motion, diſtribution, and the eaſy ſeparation of its parts.

Without being fluid, it could not be propelled through flexible tubes, and diſtributed to all parts of the body. It could not be divided into portions, as the veſſels branch off; it could not paſs through the ſmaller veſſels, nor admit of the various ſeparations of its parts, which are to produce the increaſe and repairs of the whole body; neither could it be adapted for furniſhing the various ſecretions; nor could it be brought back to the heart*.

* The diſtribution of water from the ſea, is ſimilar to the arterial ſyſtem; and the rivers returning to it have an analogy to the veins; but their effects are different; becauſe the globe works entirely upon its own materials. The waters are conti-

The red colour of the blood is produced merely by ſome red matter diffuſed through it, but not common to all animals. The blood exhibits a greater variety of changes, and admits of more experiments to determine its nature and properties than the ſolids. This, in ſome degree, ariſes from its fluidity, in which form it has not yet attained its ultimate ſtate, and is only the ſubſtance that furniſhes materials, out of which the ſolids are produced or augmented.

The heat in the animal body, principally in thoſe which are called warm animals, has been commonly conſidered as depending principally on the blood, or at leaſt as being connected with it, as much as with any other portion of the body†: as I ſhall have occaſion to take notice of the increaſed heat of inflamed parts, it might be expected, that I ſhould endeavour to explain this principle in the hiſtory of the blood. I profeſs, however, not thoroughly to underſtand it, and the theories hitherto brought forward, do not in the leaſt ſatisfy me; as I think that none of them accord perfectly with every circumſtance obſervable in theſe caſes.

I. OF THE MASS OF BLOOD, AS COMPOSED OF DIFFERENT PARTS.

THE blood, while circulating in the veſſels, appears to the eye to be a homogeneous maſs; but when it is paſſing in veſſels ſo ſmall as almoſt to ſeparate its viſible parts, and is viewed in a microſcope, there is no appearance but that of globules moving in the veſſels.

In ſuch a ſituation the other parts called the coagulable lymph, and the ſerum, are not diſtinguiſhable, on account

nually carrying away the land from one ſituation, and depoſiting it in another; taking down continents, and leaving the ocean in their place; while at the ſame time they are raiſing continents out of the ſea. But animals work upon foreign matter, introduced from time to time into the ſyſtem.

† From whence the expreſſion, warm blooded, or cold blooded animals; but the expreſſion ſhould rather be, the animals of a permanent heat in all atmoſpheres, and animals of a heat variable with every atmoſphere.

of their being tranſparent, and the globules do not, ſtrictly ſpeaking, conſtitute a part of the fluid, but are only diffuſed through it. Theſe globules being red, give this colour to the blood, and are called the red part, but are not always of the ſame redneſs when collected in a maſs; this is probably owing to each globule being changed in its tint of colouring. The blood of ſome animals has no ſuch globules, but is perfectly tranſparent, indeed more ſo than the moſt tranſparent parts of the red blood, to which it is analogeous. A red colour is therefore not eſſential to conſtitute true blood; and I believe the ſlight tinge of colour there is in the blood, independent of the globules, ariſes from the ſolution of various ſubſtances in the ſerum. The blood has a peculiar taſte, being ſaltiſh, but of a peculiar flavour: we can always diſtinguiſh by the taſte when there is blood in the mouth.

Theſe are the principal obſervations we can make on the blood when circulating, or in its fluid ſtate; but as one part of it under certain circumſtances changes into a ſolid, or as it is commonly termed, coagulates, more of its parts are thus expoſed; in this proceſs the blood ſeparates into two diſtinct ſubſtances, a coagulating part, and another which ſeparates from it and remains fluid; but the coagulum entangles the red part, and this alone ſhews the blood to be formed of theſe component parts. The parts of the blood ſo ſeparated, have been named according to their apparent properties; the one, the coagulable lymph; the other, the ſerum; and the red part has been called the red globules; but upon a more intimate knowledge of the different parts of this fluid, we ſhall find that thoſe terms are not expreſſive of all their properties.

The term *coagulable* lymph, is not expreſſive of this property, as one which is inherent in the lymph itſelf; for many ſubſtances are capable of being coagulated, though not ſpontaneouſly, yet by chemical means. For inſtance; heat coagulates the farinaceous part of vegetables, and thus forms paſte; and alſo mucus. Spirits of wine coagulates many animal ſubſtances; acid coagulates milk, &c. the term, therefore, to be uſed reſpecting this property of the blood, ſhould be ſuch as expreſſes its inherent power of ſelf-coagulation: perhaps *coagulating* might be better applied to what is called *coagulable* lymph; and the epithet coagulable might be reſerved for thoſe fluids which require a chemical proceſs to produce that effect. Of this kind is the ſerum,

for I have discovered this fluid to be composed of two parts, which is ascertained by means of the different causes of coagulation. To discover all the various properties and uses of the component parts of the blood in the machine, may be impossible; and to determine whether they will act, or are employed conjunctively to produce the effect, is not easy: but there are some properties, discoverable which would incline us to believe, that particular parts of the blood are employed to compose particular solid parts, which are found to possess properties similar to different parts of the blood.

II. OF COAGULATION, AND ITS EFFECTS.

As coagulation is the first change which the blood undergoes, when out of the vessels, and as it even coagulates while in them, under certain circumstances, we shall consider this process first. Though fluidity is necessary to enable the blood to circulate, yet coagulation is no less necessary, when it is to be disposed of out of the circulation, even within the body, and therefore deserves to be considered with no less attention. There is, I think, more to be learned of the use of blood in the animal œconomy, from its coagulation, than from its fluidity. The coagulation of the blood, when out of the circulation, would seem to be unconnected with life, yet life could not go on without it; for as all the solid parts of the body are formed from the blood, this could not take place, if there did not exist in it the power of coagulating. Many diseases exhibit the blood coagulated in the living body, even in the vessels themselves, but more frequently when extravasated. Coagulation does not belong to the whole mass of circulating blood; but only to the part I have called coagulating lymph, which during this action commonly detaches itself from the other part, called the serum.

Whether the whole mass of the serum be a distinct part of the blood when circulating, is not easily determined, as we have no mode of separating it from the coagulating lymph, while both are fluid. The serum making a part of the whole mass in the fluid state, the first stage in the coagulation is a species of decomposition, forming a sepa-

ration of the ſerum. But, on the other hand, there are reaſons for conſidering the coagulating lymph as diſtinct from the ſerum, even when both are fluid; ſince the ſerum can be ſeparated from the lymph, without coagulating, by many actions of the veſſels, both natural, preternatural, or diſeaſed. Thus the liquor of the amnios, and that of dropſies, are formed; and therefore we may conclude, that the ſeparation of the ſerum, when the lymph is coagulated, is not an act neceſſary to the coagulation, but an effect of it.

The circumſtances attending the coagulation of the lymph are ſubject to great varieties. Theſe depend upon or correſpond with the ſtate of the body at the time, of which we can beſt judge by the readineſs or difficulty with which the blood coagulates, and by the firmneſs or looſneſs of the coagulum. The whole maſs of the blood being a compound, of which the parts are in ſome degree ſeparated: the appearances upon coagulation are attended with ſtill more variety than the lymph alone could exhibit, or than could occur in thoſe animals which are not poſſeſſed of red blood, as the red part brings to view many of the changes in the lymph, by the difference of its colour, as well as of its ſpecific gravity.

The three ſubſtances which become viſibly diſtinct when the lymph coagulates, differ as to gravity; the ſerum is the lighteſt, and remaining fluid ſwims upon the top; the red globules which undergo no change, are the heavieſt, and ſink more or leſs in the lymph; but being entangled in it, add to its weight ſo as to make it ſink deeper in the ſerum.

Blood when extravaſated coagulates ſooner or later, according to the quickneſs or ſlowneſs of its extravaſation, and the quantity extravaſated: it coagulates late when drawn into a baſon rapidly, and in conſiderable quantity; ſoon, when allowed to flow ſlowly, and in ſmall quantities. This will be better underſtood when I treat of the principles of coagulation.

When blood is received into a cup, and thereby expoſed, it certainly coagulates more readily than when extravaſated in the cellular membrane, or in the veſſels; and on the expoſed ſurface it coagulates more readily than any where elſe, except round the edges of the diſh in which it is contained. It has been obſerved, that the upper ſurface of the blood coagulates firſt, forming a thin pellicle, as milk does,

when near boiling; while underneath it ſtill remains fluid; but the whole gradually becoming thicker, and loſing its tranſparency, coagulates in about fifteen or twenty minutes into a ſubſtance of pretty thick conſiſtence. The time required will vary according to the quantity of blood in one maſs, and the diſpoſition of the blood at the time.

We may obſerve the following appearances when the blood is coagulated. The coagulum is generally, but not always, ſwimming in a fluid; for it ſometimes happens that the lymph does not ſqueeze out the ſerum in the act of coagulation, in which there is an act of contraction. The top of the coagulum is toughеſt, or firmeſt; and it becomes leſs and leſs ſo towards the bottom, becauſe there is leſs of the coagulating lymph at the bottom, in proportion as the red globules ſubſide in the lymph before it coagulates. The coagulating lymph has a degree of toughneſs in proportion as it is free from ſerum; for while the ſerum is mixed within it, though there may be red globules, it is not very tough; but when preſſed between the finger and thumb, ſo as to ſqueeze out the ſerum, it becomes nearly as tough, and elaſtic, as the coats of an artery, to appearance, becoming fibrous, and even, forming lamina; and indeed appears to be very much the ſame kind of ſubſtance with an artery, which gives us a clear idea how a membrane may be formed, and probably can be varied according to the impreſſion made on it by the ſurrounding parts. This is one reaſon why the lymph, which has the ſtrongeſt diſpoſition for coagulation, is the toughеſt, as it parts with more of its ſerum. The lymph is tranſparent, but whether tinged as the ſerum is found to be, we can hardly ſay, as it is ſeldom poſſible to catch it in a fluid ſtate free from red globules, and never from ſerum, which has itſelf a tinge. When out of the body in a diſh, where it is long in coagulating, and the red globules ſink faſt, we find it tranſparent; but, during coagulation, it becomes more muddy, till at laſt it is opaque, but with a tinge of colour. On being ſteeped in water it is often rendered very white, which would not probably be the caſe if it had a tinge of its own, independent of the ſerum.

Blood uſually requires a conſiderable time for its complete coagulation, or rather contraction; for, if allowed to ſtand ſome days, the coagulated part becomes leſs and leſs, as more and more of the ſerum is ſqueezed out, which cannot

ariſe from the ſerum being lighter, and iſſuing out ſpontaneouſly; for without ſome expelling force it would be retained mechanically by the capillary attraction, as in a ſponge. The blood which is longeſt in coagulating, coagulates moſt ſtrongly, and produces the moſt complete ſeparation of its parts. In ſuch inſtances as the coagulating lymph continues longer fluid, it allows the red globules more time to ſubſide, and the ſerum to be more ſqueezed out from the craſſimentum. When the coagulation is ſlow, and of that kind which will be firm when completed, we may ſkim off the fluid coagulating lymph, free from the red globules; and the part ſo taken will coagulate immediately, while that in the cup remains fluid ſome time longer.

Many cauſes have been aſſigned for the coagulation of the lymph, which appear to me to be ill-founded. It frequently happens that when changes take place in matter of which the immediate cauſes are unknown, the mind refers them to ſome circumſtances which accompany theſe changes; although, perhaps, they may have had no concern whatever in producing them, and may be only attendants. This will always be the caſe where thoſe changes ariſe out of the nature of the part itſelf. A ſeed put into moiſt ground grows; but the moiſt ground is only a neceſſary attendant, and not the immediate cauſe. The life of the ſeed, ſtimulated to action by the moiſture, is the immediate cauſe of its growth, aud it continues to grow becauſe its action is always excited. All the water in the world would not make a dead ſeed grow. The ſame mode of diſtinction is applicable to the coagulation of the lymph.

The firſt obſervations on the blood were moſt probably made on that of the more perfect animals, whoſe heat is commonly greater than the heat of the atmoſphere. Such blood when extravaſated, was found to coagulate on cooling; it was therefore natural to ſuppoſe that the coagulation of the lymph aroſe from its becoming colder, as happens in jelly*; but cold, ſimply, has certainly no effect upon the coagulating lymph.

If we take a fiſh out of the ſea, the heat of its body,

* This term has been applied to the coagulation of the blood, but I think improperly; for I ſhould only call that jelly, which became ſolid by cold, and fluid again by heat; coagulation is totally different, for it is a new ſpecies of combination. The freezing of blood may be called, congelation.

perhaps about 60°, and bring it into an atmosphere of 70°, the blood, on being let out of the vessels, will immediately coagulate. This was ascertained on board of a ship lying off Bellisle, in the summer 1761; for immediately upon a fish being caught, I ascertained its heat, and letting out part of its blood, it immediately coagulated, although the blood discharged was become warmer than that remaining in the vessels of the fish; which, however, still continued fluid.

Indeed common experience and observation shews us, that cold alone has no power to coagulate the blood. It often happens that particular parts of an animal, such as the fingers, face, nose, ears, &c. are cooled nearly to the freezing point, and frequently are in that state for a considerable time; yet the blood retains its fluidity in those parts, as I have experienced in my own fingers; and indeed in those parts of an animal where the blood has been frozen, and again thawed, the blood appears as fluid as before, and circulates as usual. Heat has the power of exciting action in an animal; and we find that heat even increases the action of coagulation; for, if blood be heated to about 120°, it will coagulate five minutes sooner than when kept at its natural heat, and even sooner than the blood of the same animal, taken at the same time and cooled to 50°*. Mr. Hewson has laboured this point, endeavouring to shew it is not cold that makes the blood coagulate; and he has laboured no less to shew the real cause of such a change.

He took fresh blood and froze it quickly; on being thawed, it was again fluid, but soon afterwards coagulated: this he conceived to be a sufficient proof, that it was not cold which made the blood coagulate†.

From the above observations, and experiments, it must appear that cold, simply, has no influence whatever upon the coagulation of the blood.

And in most of the cases in which the blood is observed to coagulate, the air is commonly in contact with it; this was next presumed to be the cause of its coagulation‡; but

* These experiments were made on the jugular veins of dogs, by taking a section of the veins on each side filled with blood, and immersing them in water, either warmer, or cooler, or of the natural heat, and observing the comparative difference.

† Hewson on the blood, page 21. ‡ Ibid, page 23.

the air has really no more effect than any other extraneous body, in contact with the blood, that is capable of making an impreſſion upon it; for the blood coagulates more readily in a vacuum than in the open air; nor will either of theſe ſuppoſed cauſes aſſiſt in explaining why it is not found coagulated after many kinds of death, nor in the menſtrual diſcharge. Neither will they account for the very ſpeedy coagulation of the blood which uſually takes place in all the veſſels after death, or when it has been extravaſated into cavities, or cellular membranes, where no air has ever been admitted.

Reſt is another cauſe upon which the coagulation of the blood has been ſaid to depend: and although this opinion be not true in the full extent in which it has been taken, I think that reſt has greater influence in the change than any other circumſtance whatever. But though reſt ſeems greatly to diſpoſe the blood to coagulation, it is the operation of reſt alone, without expoſure, which we are to conſider; as otherwiſe we ſhall be apt to confound it with the two foregoing cauſes, viz. cold, and the contact of air.

Since therefore the blood may coagulate in the veſſels, either of a living, or a dead body, and ſince it coagulates when extravaſated into different parts of a living body, reſt, like cold, or air, might be ſuppoſed to be the ſole cauſe of the coagulation of the blood: yet it is not reſt, conſidered ſimply, but reſt under certain circumſtances, which appears to poſſeſs ſuch a power; for motion given to the blood, out of the veſſels, will not of itſelf prevent its coagulation; nor will it even in the veſſels themſelves, if all the purpoſes of motion are not anſwered by it. Motion ſeems to retard coagulation*; yet we know for certain that blood will in time coagulate, even in the veſſels themſelves, and under certain circumſtances ſooner, perhaps, than any where elſe; as for inſtance, when there is a diſpoſition to mortification. In this caſe we find the blood coagulated even in the larger veſſels.

I have ſeen a mortification come on the foot, and leg, and when it had advanced only to a certain degree, the perſon died. On examining the parts above the mortified part, I found the crural, and iliac arteries, filled completely with ſtrong coagulated blood; we may thence infer,

* This is motion given to it in a veſſel, without any empty ſpace, and having beads put into it, which are ſhaken.

that the tendency to mortification in the veſſels produced this diſpoſition in the blood. If the coagulation ſhould be ſuppoſed to have ariſen from the blood being ſtopped in the large veſſels, at the mortified part, let us reflect, that this cannot account for it; the ſame thing ought then to happen in an amputation, or in any caſe where the larger veſſels are tied up.

In a priapiſm the blood does not coagulate, except it threatens mortification.

The ſeparation of the blood, either from itſelf, that is, when divided into ſmall portions, or ſeparated from the living body, becomes one of the immediate cauſes of the coagulation of the lymph; therefore, the contact of blood with blood, or with living veſſels, in ſome degree retards coagulation: this is the reaſon why blood which comes from the veſſels ſlowly, or falls from ſome height, or runs ſomeway on the ſurface of a diſh, coagulates ſooner than when the contrary circumſtances happen; and upon this principle it is, that blood, when ſhaken in a phial, will coagulate the ſooner, even if ſhaken in a vacuum. A deep maſs of blood is alſo from the ſame cauſe, longer in coagulating than a ſhallow one.

From the above obſervations it muſt appear evident, that neither cold, nor air, nor reſt alone, have any influence on the coagulating power of the blood; there muſt, therefore, be ſome other principle on which this proceſs depends, and, as it retains its fluid ſtate while circulating, and even for a long time when at reſt in the living veſſels, and coagulates when the veſſels or the body dies, it might naturally be ſuppoſed that it was the life of the body or veſſels which kept it fluid; we know, however, that life in the body or veſſels does not hinder the blood from coagulating under certain circumſtances, but often rather excites coagulation; nor does death, in the body or veſſels, in all caſes become a cauſe of coagulation; for we find that in many who die ſuddenly, from a ſtrong impreſſion of the mind, the blood does not coagulate; there is, therefore, ſomething more than the mere ſituation of the blood, ſurrounded with dead parts, that allows of coagulation; and that muſt be a ſomething in the blood itſelf.

From theſe obſervations it muſt be evident, that the fluid ſtate of the blood is connected with the living veſſels, which is its natural ſituation, and with motion; and that where there is a full power of life, the veſſels are capable of

keeping the blood in a fluid ſtate: I believe, however, very little motion is required to keep up this fluidity when the other is preſent. A total ſtagnation of the blood, while the body is alive, as in a trance, or where the circulation has been ſtopt for ſeveral hours, as in the caſe of perſons apparently drowned, does not make it coagulate; yet where there are no actions going on, in a part, if the blood ſtagnates for a much ſhorter time than in a trance, it will be found coagulated, as in mortifications; but then this coagulation is to anſwer a good purpoſe, and ariſes from neceſſity*, which appears to act as a ſtimulus in diſpoſing the blood to coagulate.

As a proof that blood will not coagulate in living veſſels, in a perfect and natural ſtate, and ready to act when powers were reſtored to it, I found that the blood of a fiſh, which had the actions of life ſtopped for three days, and was ſuppoſed to be dead, did not coagulate in the veſſels; but, upon being expoſed, or extravaſated, ſoon coagulated.

The blood of a lamprey-eel, which had been dead to appearance ſome days, was found fluid in the veſſels, becauſe the animal was not really dead; there had, however, been no motion in the blood, as the heart had ceaſed acting; but upon its being expoſed, and extravaſated into water, it ſoon coagulated†: yet under certain circumſtances in life, it had been obſerved, that the blood will in a ſmall degree coagulate: this is in the ſtate of torper. It is aſſerted by ſome author, whom I now do not recollect, that

* By action taking place from neceſſity, effects are meant which ariſe in conſequence of ſome unuſual, or unnatural change, going on in the parts, and become a ſtimulus to action. The ſtimuli from this cauſe, may vary exceedingly among themſelves; but as we are unable to inveſtigate them, I have included them under this general term, ſtimulus of neceſſity.

† There are ſome circumſtances which hinder the coagulation of blood in living bodies although extravaſated. Two leeches had been applied, and had ſucked till full. Theſe were preſerved for ten weeks, and then had contained conſiderable quantity of blood, which appeared like that recently drawn from a vein, and coagulated when expoſed. I have known, in tapping a hydrocele, that a ſmall veſſel has been wounded, and the blood, as it extravaſated, got into the ſack, and when tapped ſixty-five days after, the blood has come out thickiſh; but when extracted it coagulated, and ſeparated into different parts.

the blood of a bat coagulates when in that ſtate; and Mr. Corniſh, ſurgeon, at Totneſs, Devonſhire, to whom I applied for ſome bats in the torpid ſtate, ſent me them, but in the carriage they always died; however, he took opportunities of examining them, and he found that the blood was in a certain degree coagulated; but it ſoon recovered its fluidity on motion and heat.

From theſe remarks I ſhould conclude, that reſt does not of itſelf in the leaſt aſſiſt the coagulation of the blood; but that this effect ariſes from the blood being ſeparated from the living veſſels, and being deprived of motion; and that it happens ſooner, or later, according to other circumſtances. It might be ſuppoſed that theſe are rather negative cauſes of coagulation, than poſitive ones; but it is to be conſidered, that in a living body, the ceſſation of a natural action, the abſence of an uſual impreſſion becomes a cauſe of action, of which innumerable inſtances may be given.

I have now conſidered the circumſtances under which the blood coagulates, and ſhewn that none of them alone, nor all of them combined, induce the blood to coagulate. My opinion is, that it coagulates from an impreſſion: that is, its fluidity under ſuch circumſtances, being improper, or no longer neceſſary, it coagulates to anſwer now the neceſſary purpoſe of ſolidity. This power ſeems to be influenced in a way, in ſome degree ſimilar to muſcular action, though probably not entirely of that kind; for I have reaſon to believe, that blood has the power of action within itſelf, according to the ſtimulus of neceſſity; which neceſſity ariſes out of its ſituation.

I ſhall now conſider the ſimple act of coagulation, abſtracted from cauſes.

Coagulation I conceive to be an operation of life; and I imagine it to proceed exactly upon the ſame principle as the union by the firſt intention; it is particle uniting with particle, by the attraction of coheſion, which, in the blood, forms a ſolid; and it is this coagulum, uniting with the ſurrounding parts, which forms the union by the firſt intention: for union by the firſt intention, is no more than the living parts when ſeparated, whether naturally, or by art, forming a reciprocal attraction of coheſion with the intermediate coagulum, which immediately admits of mutual intercourſe, and as it were, one intereſt.

To produce coagulation of the blood, however, ſomething more is required than merely the reverſe of the cauſes above-mentioned, as having the power to keep it fluid; for the blood becomes in many caſes inſtantaneouſly incapable of coagulation, either in or out of the veſſels, even when nothing has been added, or taken away, and muſt be therefore under the influence of ſome other cauſe. This, I believe, muſt be ſought in ſome property inherent in the blood itſelf: beſides, ſome natural operations deſtroy this principle in the blood, when extravaſated.

In many modes of deſtroying life the blood is deprived of its power of coagulation, as happens in ſudden death produced by many kinds of fits; by anger, electricity, or lightening; or by a blow on the ſtomach, etc. In theſe caſes we find the blood, after death, not only in as fluid a ſtate as in the living veſſels, but it does not even coagulate when taken out of them. As in the bodies of ſuch perſons as no action of life takes place, the muſcles do not contract. There are partial influences, likewiſe, which deſtroy the power of coagulation, as a blow on a part producing a conſiderable extravaſation. This forms an ecchymoſis, in which we ſhall often find the blood not in the leaſt coagulated. In healthy menſtruation, the blood which is diſcharged does not coagulate; in the irregular or unhealthy it does. The healthy menſes, therefore, ſhew a peculiar action of the conſtitution; and it is moſt probably in this action that its ſalubrious purpoſes conſiſt; for if twice the uſual quantity is evacuated with the power of coagulation, even from the ſame veſſels, the ſame benefit is not produced; much leſs when taken from another part by art.

Many ſubſtances, when mixed with the blood, prevent coagulation; bile has this effect out of the body; but we cannot ſuppoſe that in a living body it can be taken into the blood in ſuch quantity as to produce this effect; for we find in a very ſevere jaundice, that the blood is ſtill capable of coagulating ſtrongly.

That probably every inanimate fluid in nature, which is capable of being rendered ſolid, produces heat, during that change; and in the contrary change cold is commonly known; it is on that principle Dr. Black has eſtabliſhed his very ingenuous theory of latent heat. Thus in the freezing of water, heat is produced.

To see how far the coagulation of the blood was similar in this respect to the same change in other substances, I first coagulated the white of an egg, by applying to it rectified spirits of wine: the heat of both was the same before their union; but I found upon uniting them, that the white of the egg was immediately coagulated, and that the heat of the mixture was increased four, sometimes five degrees, according as it coagulated, slowly, or quickly.

As the blood in the animals upon which we most commonly make our experiments is warm, it becomes a difficult matter to ascertain whether it produces heat upon coagulation. In holding the ball of the thermometer in the stream of blood coming from the arm, I found the heat raised to ninety-two degrees: I then took a cup of human blood, allowed it to coagulate, and put it up to the brim in water warmed to ninety-two degrees, till the whole mass was heated to this point. I bled afterwards another person to the same quantity, in a similar cup, which was put into the same water. Having two well regulated thermometers, one in each cup of blood, I observed which cooled first, for I did not expect so much heat to be produced as to make it warmer; but conceived, if any heat was formed, it would retard the cooling of the fresh blood; but it rather cooled faster, which I imputed to the coagulated blood parting with its heat slower than the fluid blood. These experiments I have repeated several times, with nearly the same effect. I then conceived the experiment would be more conclusive if I could get blood in a fluid state, which was naturally of the heat of the atmosphere, for which purpose I took the blood of turtles.

A healthy turtle was kept in a room all night, the floor of which was about 64°, and the atmosphere 65°. In the morning the heat was nearly the same. The thermometer was introduced into the anus, and the heat of that part was 64°. The animal being suspended by the hind legs, the head was cut off at once, and the blood caught in a bason; the blood while flowing, was 65°, and when collected, was 66°, but fell to 65° while coagulating, which it did very slowly: it remained at 65°, and when coagulated, was still 65°. These experiments had been made several times, but not with that nice accuracy which was obtained by causing all the heats to correspond exactly; yet as they were all known, and marked down, if any heat had

been produced upon coagulation, its exact quantity would have been aſcertained in each; and, indeed, in ſome, it ſeemed to cool, but in none it became warmer. From theſe experiments I ſhould ſay, that in the coagulation of the blood, no heat is formed.

Coagulated blood, is an inorganized animal ſubſtance. When the blood is thinly ſpread before coagulation, or oozes out on ſurfaces, in which act it immediately coagulates, and coagulates in that form, it may then be ſaid to form an inorganized membrane, of which there are many; and organization is ſeemingly ſo ſimple in many (which we know to be conſtituent parts of the body) that theſe coagula, more eſpecially the thin ones, cannot eaſily by their appearances be diſtinguiſhed from them.

The coagulating lymph of the blood being common, probably to all animals, while the red particles are not, we muſt ſuppoſe it from this alone, to be the moſt eſſential part; and as we find it capable of undergoing, in certain circumſtances, ſpontaneous changes, which are neceſſary to the growth, continuance, and preſervation of the animal; while to the other parts we cannot aſſign any ſuch uſes, we have ſtill more reaſon to ſuppoſe it the moſt eſſential part of the blood in every animal.

Beſides a diſpoſition for coagulation under certain circumſtances, as before deſcribed, the blood has alſo a diſpoſition for the ſeparation of the red globules, and probably of all its parts; for I think I have reaſon to believe that a diſpoſition for coagulation, and a diſpoſition for a ſeparation of the red part, are not the ſame thing, but ariſe from two different principles. Indeed, a diſpoſition to coagulation would counteract the effect, and hinder the ſeparation of the red particles from taking place. Thus we ſee that reſt, or ſlow motion of the blood in the veſſels, gives a diſpoſition towards a ſeparation of the red part, as well as when it is extravaſated; ſince the blood in the veins of an animal acquires a diſpoſition to ſeparate its red parts, more than in the arteries, eſpecially if it be retarded in the veins; the nearer, therefore, to the heart in the veins the greater will the diſpoſition for ſeparation be; though it does not ſeem to retard coagulation. This is always obſervable in bleeding; for if we tie up an arm, and do not bleed immediately, the firſt blood that flows from the orifice, or that which has ſtagnated for ſome time in the veins, will ſooneſt ſeparate into its three conſtituent parts: this circumſtance

expoſes more of the coagulating lymph, at the top, which is ſuppoſed by the ignorant to indicate more inflammation, while the next quantity taken ſuſpends its red parts in the lymph, and gives the idea that the firſt ſmall quantity had been of ſuch ſervice at the time of its flowing, as to have altered for the better the whole maſs of blood. Reſt, therefore, may be regarded as one of the immediate cauſes of the ſeparation.

III. OF THE SERUM.

THE ſerum is the ſecond part of which the whole maſs of blood appears to be compoſed; or is one of thoſe ſubſtances into which the blood ſpontaneouſly ſeparates itſelf. So far it appears as a ſimple fluid, in which light I ſhall firſt conſider it; though we ſhall find hereafter that it is compoſed of two ſubſtances, which, in many of our experiments, ſeparate. Serum, I believe, is common to the blood of all animals; but there is more of it, I think, in thoſe animals which have red blood: perhaps it may bear ſome proportion to the qaantity of red particles in the blood, and may be of uſe to dilute it.

The ſerum is lighter than the other parts of the blood, and therefore ſwims above them when ſeparated. It is commonly ſeparated from the coagulating lymph when that fluid coagulates; and is, therefore, almoſt always found when the blood is taken out of the blood veſſels, and kept together in a conſiderable maſs. When the lymph coagulates ſtrongly, we commonly find more ſerum, becauſe it is then ſqueezed out more forcibly than when the coagulation is formed looſely; it is not, however, neceſſary for the lymph to coagulate, in order to ſeparate the ſerum, for we find that it ſeparates in diſeaſe, as in the dropſy. It is ſeparated alſo from the maſs of blood in uterine-geſtation, being the fluid in which the fœtus is immerſed or ſwims.

I have ſeen it ſeparate from the remaining maſs before the coagulation of the lymph. I obſerved once in the blood of a lady, that a ſeparation between the two fluids almoſt immediately took place, the ſerous part ſwimming on the top, while the lymph remained ſtill fluid. From this appear-

ance I had pronounced that there would be a great deal of buff, ſuppoſing that the tranſparent fluid at the top was coagulating lymph; but I was miſtaken, for when the lymph was coagulated, there was no buff, and the tranſparent fluid remaining at top, proved to be the ſerum.

In this there could be no deception, as there was no buff, or ſize; for if there had been ſize at the top of the coagulum, it might have been ſuppoſed that this fluid, which appeared ſo ſoon after bleeding, had been the coagulating lymph, and that the ſerum had been ſeparated in the act of coagulation as uſual. The ſerum is commonly of a yellowiſh colour, ſometimes more ſo than at others; and this I ſhould conceive ariſes from the ſubſtances diſſolved in it*, by means of the water it contains; for it probably ſuſpends every ſalt ſoluble in water, many of which are diſſolved in it. If ſerum be not coagulable in itſelf, though it contains a large quantity of coagulable matter, yet I conceive it to be in a more fluid ſtate when circulating. As it is ſeparated from a compound maſs, it appears in this reſpect to be ſomewhat ſimilar to the whey of milk, though not exactly. This fluid undergoes no ſpontaneous changes but what may ariſe from its ſeparation, from the coagulating lymph, except putrifaction. Though not coagulable in itſelf, yet one of its properties out of the body, is to coagulate upon the application of certain ſubſtances. This is the principal change it undergoes, and during the proceſs, it more or leſs ſeparates into two parts; one of which is not coagulable by ſuch means.

The coagulable part, which I now mean to deſcribe, ſeems to be in ſome degree the ſame with that in the white of an egg, ſynovia, etc. and many other ſecretions, but not exactly; for thoſe ſecretions contain, as I conceive, a quantity of the coagulating lymph united to them, which makes them in part, coagulate after ſecretion; and the further coagulation of thoſe ſecretions afterwards, by mixture with other ſubſtances, is owing to this part of the ſerum. Though the ſerum is coagulable under certain circumſtances, and with certain mixtures, yet this power, or effect, may be prevented by other mixtures. Heat, to a certain degree, coagulates this part; and probably this is the only teſt neceſſary to know whether a fluid found any where in the bo-

* The red globules are ſuſpended without being diſſolved in the ſerum, in which they are commonly examined.

dy, not coagulable in itſelf, is this part of the ſerum; but as many ſubſtances do alſo coagulate it, I ſhall mention a few of them, although to me their effects do not ſeem to throw any light on the ſubject. Heat coagulates the ſerum at 160°, or 165°; it ſtood at 150°, for ſome time perfectly fluid. There is a great deal of air contained in the ſerum, which is let looſe by heat; but not from its coagulation, for when it is coagulated by other means, no air is ſeparated. The ſerum, which was a little whitiſh, coagulated in that degree of heat neceſſary for ſeparating its air, which was extricated in very large quantities. This coagulum becomes firſt like the ſynovia, and then thicker. Many ſubſtances which do not coagulate this part of the ſerum, do not, however, hinder its coagulation by heat; ſuch as vinegar, acid of lemon, ſalt of wormwood, nitre, ſea-ſalt.

Serum coagulates with ſpirits of wine, in about equal quantities, into a ſort of curd and whey; which, upon heating, becomes ſomething like a jelly, but the ſpirit ſeems to evaporate.

It coagulates with volatile ſpirits, into a milky fluid, which becomes like a jelly upon heating; it requires a greater proportion of the ſpirit than the ſerum; and the ſpirit ſeems chiefly to evaporate.

When mixed with ſalt of hartſhorn, it does not coagulate with heat, but makes a large efferveſcence, till the whole is formed into froth. This again becomes a fluid, by the froth ſubſiding, but at laſt it forms a ſort of coagulum, which is not tough. Being mixed with water, and let to ſtand for twelve hours, it coagulates like pure ſerum upon heating. If this be mixed with ſal. cernu cervi, as above, it rather becomes more fluid, and continues ſo for a long time, with a ſtrong efferveſcence; but it forms at length into a jelly, or paſte, though not a ſolid one.

Here I ſuſpect that the ſalt is evaporated, and likewiſe the water in the paſte, ſo that it is not a true coagulation.

When mixed with common water, it is coagulated by heat; but the water ſeparates with the other ſubſtance, and does not unite with the coagulum.

Upon the coagulation of the ſerum, by heat, I have obſerved that it ſeparates a fluid, which is not coagulable by heat; and, I have reaſon to believe, by none of the other means, viz. ſpirits of wine, etc. though this is not ſo eaſily aſcertained; for the other coagulating ſubſtances, as

ſpirits of wine, etc. are applied in a fluid form, and therefore, a fluid may remain after the coagulation of the ſerum, which might be ſuppoſed to be the fluid ſeparated; but from other experiments, it is proved that thoſe ſubſtances coagulate the coagulating part, and unite with the other. It is alſo obſervable in meat, either roaſted, or boiled, or when cut, there flows from it a fluid, more or leſs tinged with the red part, commonly called gravy. I conceived that this muſt be different from the coagulating part of the ſerum, believing that the heat had been ſufficient to coagulate it; but I choſe to try it further, and therefore gave it ſuch heat, as would have produced the effect if it had been coagulable by heat; but I found it did not coagulate. The fluid ſeparated from the coagulable part of the ſerum, I conceived to be the ſame with this. Thus then I ſaw there was in the ſerum a matter coagulable by heat; and a fluid which was not ſo.

Purſuing the above obſervations on dreſſed meat, I obſerved that the older the animal had been, the more of this fluid was contained in the meat. In lamb we have hardly any of it: in young mutton of a year old, but little; but in mutton of three, four, five, or ſix years old, it is in large quantity: in veal alſo we have but little; while we have it in great quantity in beef; but perhaps we know leſs in general of the age of our beef, than of our mutton.*

Poultry is commonly killed young in this country, therefore we have not the comparative trials; but in wild fowl, and what is commonly called game, we find the above obſervations hold good. I likewiſe obſerve that animals who have not had exerciſe, ſuch as houſe-lamb, veal, etc. have leſs of this fluid, than thoſe of the ſame claſs which have been allowed to go at large: nothing can be drier than the Engliſh veal, though kept to a greater age than any where elſe; while it is juicy in every other country, though killed much younger.

In many of the trials reſpecting the coagulation of the ſerum, I obſerved, that it had in ſome caſes much more

* It may be obſerved here that this is very different from the jelly formed in boiling, or roaſting meat; that which forms the jelly, is part of the meat itſelf, diſſolved down in this very fluid, and the water in which it is boiled; and we find that this effect is juſt the reverſe of the above, for in young meat there is the moſt of this jelly.

coagulum than in others; and of courſe a leſs proportion of the fluid part that ſeparated, and vice versâ: from the above obſervations too, I conceived that a deficiency of this fluid-part beſpoke a greater quantity of coagulating matter in the ſerum; and to aſcertain this, I took the ſerum of perſons of different ages. This fluid, like the ſerum itſelf when united with the coagulating lymph, appears only to be mixed with the ſerum; for it is ſeparated in the living body for many purpoſes of the œconomy; it is not therefore ſerum in another form; but a diſtinct fluid, which, before the coagulation, is mingled with the ſerum, and ſeems to make a part of it.

The following experiments are, perhaps, not perfectly concluſive; for many were obliged to be made on blood taken from thoſe who were not perfectly in health: peculiar diſpoſitions in the body may make a material difference in the ſerum. It is probable, however, that diſeaſe may not have any great effect upon the ſerum; for I found, from experiment, that the ſerum of blood taken from a perſon labouring under an inflammatory complaint, and the ſerum of blood in a caſe not at all inflammatory, were nearly the ſame reſpecting coagulation, and the quantity of matter not coagulable by heat.

The ſerum of a man fifty-ſix years of age, who had met with a ſlight accident, and was of a healthy conſtitution, coagulated by heat, almoſt wholly into a pretty firm coagulum, ſeparating only a ſmall portion of that fluid which is not coagulable by ſuch means.

The ſerum of the blood of a man ſeventy-two years of age, of a healthy conſtitution, hardly coagulated by heat, became only a little thicker, and formed a ſmall coagulum, adhering to the bottom of the veſſel. With ſpirits, it formed but a very ſmall quantity of coagulable matter.

On putting about three-fourths of water to the blood of the perſon aged fifty-ſix, and heating it as above, it coagulated much in the ſame way with the ſerum of ſeventy-two.

The ſerum of a boy fifteen years of age, coagulated wholly; there was hardly any of the fluid part that could be ſqueezed out; at the ſame time I coagulated the ſerum of a man ſixty-three years of age, in which there was but a ſmall quantity of the fluid part.

Conceiving that the whey of milk, made with runnet, was the ſerum of the blood, I made experiments on it, analogous to the above. I heated ſome of the whey, and

found it formed a coagulable matter, which floated in flakes in a fluid, which did not coagulate by this means.

As this leſs coagulable fluid is a ſubſtance hitherto not taken notice of, and makes perhaps as intereſting a part as any of the whole maſs of blood, it will be neceſſary to be more deſcriptive in giving an account of it than of the other parts. As urine does not coagulate by heat; but I had found that it coagulated with the extract of Goulard*; and as I alſo knew that this extract coagulated the whole maſs of the ſerum, I conceived that the fluid in queſtion might be ſimilar to urine, and that the coagulation of the ſerum might be owing to the coagulation of this part; I therefore put the fluid to this teſt, and found that it was coagulated by the extract, which led to a ſeries of experiments.

As ſeveral fluids, apparently different from each other, appear to be thrown out from the blood on many occaſions, I wiſhed to ſee how far they conſiſted of the common ſerum, viz. of a pretty equal quantity of matter coagulable by heat, or principally of that coagulable by Goulard's extract; I therefore collected the ſeveral kinds, not only thoſe which may be called natural, but alſo thoſe proceeding from diſeaſe, which appear more like ſerum than the others. Of the natural, I took the aqueous humor of the eye, and firſt heated it in a ſpoon, to ſee what quantity of coagulable matter by heat was in it, and I found it became gently wheyiſh; therefore it had a ſmall portion of matter coagulable by heat; but, upon adding the extract to it, it coagulated immediately. The ſame exactly happened with the water in the ventricles of the brain; and alſo with the tears.

Water was taken from the leg of a dropſical boy, who was extremely reduced by a compound fracture of the oppoſite thigh-bone; which water was much clearer than any ſerum. Upon heating it in a ſpoon over a candle, it be-

* What led me to the above knowledge, was, mixing this extract of Goulard with ſolutions of gum arabic in water, for injections; when I found that the whole always became a ſolid maſs; while injections with ſachrum ſaturni, had not that effect. I then tried it upon many other vegetable juices, and found it coagulated every one of them. In ſome of theſe experiments, I put ſome of the compounds into a veſſel where there was ſome urine, and I found that when the extract had been in too large a quantity, that the urine was alſo coagulated.

came a little wheyiſh, and had a few flakes of coagulum floating in it.

The water from the abdomen of a lady, which was a little wheyiſh, coagulated before it gave out its air; but the coagulum was not one half of its quantity.

In another caſe of aſcites, the water coagulated wholly, although not to a firm coagulum.

Water drawn from the abdomen of a gentleman, which was pretty clear, when held over a lamp to coagulate, became at firſt wheyiſh.

The liquor amnii has but little coagulable matter in it.

In coagulating all the above kinds of ſerum by heat, and taking the incoagulable parts, and putting extract of Goulard to them, they coagulated immediately.

Whether this fluid is of the ſame ſpecific gravity with the other, I do not know; for though when part of it is coagulated by the extract of lead it is the heavieſt; yet as it is united with the lead, it may acquire its additional weight from this union.

The uſe of the ſerum is probably to keep ſuſpended, and undiſſolved, the red globules; for we find it in largeſt quantity when theſe globules are moſt abundant. It is alſo intended to ſuſpend, and diſſolve any foreign ſubſtances in the blood, whether they are of uſe to the body, or otherwiſe, acting upon them as a common ſolvent.

Thus we ſee in a jaundiced perſon, the ſerum is yellower than common. When a perſon has taken rhubarb, the ſame thing happens. It is probably the ſolvent of all our ſecretions.

I conceive it to be unneceſſary to ſay how much water enters into the compoſition of the blood. In order to conſtitute a perfect body or compound, it is neceſſary that all its parts ſhould be in due proportion; but as the blood in many animals is made up of four diſtinct parts, viz. the coagulating lymph; ſerum, which we find is compoſed of two parts; and the red globules, each muſt have its due quantity of water when in a perfect ſtate; and I think it is probable that the lymph, and red part, cannot have more water than a certain quantity, but that the ſerum may be diluted with any proportion of it; yet as ſerum, it can have a certain proportion only; and indeed this was in ſome degree proved by the experiment of mixing ſome water with

ſerum, and then coagulating the whole with heat: the water ſeparated and did not make part of the coagulum.

Some of the juices of a living animal, whether circulating, or out of circulation, as thoſe which lubricate ſurfaces, are in a volatile ſtate while the animal is alive; for when the ſcarfskin is taken off, the part ſoon dries; and if the ſkin is removed from a new killed animal, it immediately dries; or if a cavity is opened, the ſurface of the cavity dries quickly; this ſhews that ſome part of the juices muſt have evaporated from the ſurface: but let the animal cool, before it is ſkinned, or the cavity is opened, and then give it the ſame degree of heat that it had when alive, you will find, on taking off the ſkin, no immediate ſenſible evaporation; but the parts ſo expoſed will remain moiſt. This volatility I conceive therefore to be connected with life, and not with the circulation; for that is ſtopped in both cases before the experiment. Whether it is this volatile part that gives the ſmell that moſt recent killed animals have upon being ſkinned, or opened, I do not know; but it may be obſerved that it follows the ſame rules; for if the animal is allowed to cool, it looſes this ſmell, although warmed to the ſame degree of heat as when alive.

The ſerum of the blood is ſometimes wheyiſh, and then upon ſettling, it often throws up a white ſcum like cream: this was moſt probably firſt obſerved in the human blood; but is not peculiar to it; although theſe appearances pretty often happen, yet few inſtances fall under the obſervation of one man in the common courſe of bleeding. When they have occurred to myſelf, I have made inquiry after the ſtate of health of the patient, as well as examined the nature of this change; and whether there was any variety in it. So far as I have been able to obſerve, it can hardly be ſaid to have any leading cauſe; having found it, however, more frequently in the blood of breeding women, I conceived it might have ſome connection with that ſtate; but I have ſeen it in others, and ſometimes in men: yet it is poſſible that the ſtate of pregnancy may adapt the conſtitution for forming ſuch appearances, as well as for producing other ſymptoms in the blood like thoſe of inflammation; for we often find the ſame effect, or diſeaſe, ariſing from various cauſes, which have no immediate connection with each other. There have been many opinions formed about the nature and cauſe of this appearance of the ſerum.

It has been ſuppoſed to be occaſioned by chyle not yet aſſimilated; but it does not occur frequently enough to be attributed to this fluid. Mr. Hewſon ſuppoſed it to be abſorbed fat, or oil; which certainly is not the caſe; for it is not the ſame in all caſes.

The globules forming this wheyiſh appearance are not of the ſame ſpecific gravity in every caſe; for though they always, I believe, ſwim on the ſerum, and often on water, yet they ſometimes ſink in water. The white cream that ſwims on the top of the ſerum, I believe to be formed after the ſerum is ſeparated from the maſs; for, if it exiſted as ſuch, prior to this, it would be retained in the coagulum, as the red globules are, which is not the fact; and therefore it does not exiſt in the blood while circulating.

I bled a little woman who ſeemed half an ideot, and was big with child, this happened in the afternoon, about three or four hours after her having eat ſome veal-cutlets: the day following I went to ſee the blood, and found the ſerum of a milky white, with a white pellicle ſwiming at the top like cream.

I bled a lady in the arm, who was ſix months gone with child. It was about two o'clock in the forenoon: ſhe had only eaten a dry toaſt, and drank a cup of chocolate for breakfaſt, about ten o'clock, which was four hours before ſhe was bled. On ſeeing the blood the next day, I found it inflamed rather more then is common in women who are pregnant; and I alſo found a thin white ſcum on the top of the ſerum; this ſcum I examined in the microſcope, and found it to be globular: I diluted it with water, and found the globules did not diſſolve, as the red globules do. I put ſome of them in water, and found that they roſe to the top, but not ſo faſt as in the ſerum.

About ſix days after I bled the ſame lady again, after ſhe had eaten the ſame kind of breakfaſt, and about the ſame interval of time from it. The blood was ſtill ſizy, but the ſerum had no white appearance at the top.

I examined the wheyiſh ſerum taken from the blood of a man at St. George's Hoſpital, who had received a ſevere blow on the head, which had ſtunned him, but had produced no bad ſymptoms. In this ſerum, when viewed in the microſcope, I could not obſerve any thing like globules or flakes, although the magnifier was a deep one. The red

globules when mixed with it were the ſame as in common ſerum. It dried uniformly like ſize.

Blood was taken away from the arm, being of no particular quality, except in having a wheyiſh ſerum, and was allowed to ſtand quiet in order to ſee the ſpontaneous changes of this ſerum. The white part came to the top like cream, being therefore lighter than the ſerum, and was very white when collected. When viewed in a microſcope it was plainly globular, but the globules were ſmaller than thoſe of red blood. They did not ſeem to be diſſolved when mixed with water, as red globules are.

Thomas Skelton, a publican, forty-ſeven years of age, being rather luſty, ſubject to frequent colds, attended with coughs, hoarſneſs, and a diſcharge of matter from the lungs or throat, but otherwiſe enjoying a good ſtate of health, was attacked with a violent cold, together with a difficulty of breathing, and applied to Mr. Wilſon, apothecary, who took twelve ounces of blood from his arm, which relieved him greatly. He had taken ſome bread and butter, with ſome tea, without milk, about four hours before he was bled. The blood coagulated firmly, and the ſerum which ſeparated, was of a white colour with a yellowiſh tinge, appearing like the colour of cream; upon the top of this floated a whiter ſcum, like another cream.

On viewing this cream in a microſcope, it had a flaky appearance. It did not coagulate ſooner than common ſerum.

In ſpirits of wine, a white mixture was produced, which, on ſtanding fell to the bottom of the glaſs; this moſt probably aroſe from the ſerum with which it was mixed, coagulating.

The globules of the white ſerum, differ from the red globules in colour; ſpecific gravity, ſize, and in not diſſolving in water.

To ſee how far this is chyle, it would be proper to try the chyle in the ſame way in ſerum, &c.

After dipping a bit of blotting paper into the cream, and abſorbing all of it, and alſo dipping a piece of the ſame paper into the ſerum, and drying them, I burnt them both, to ſee if one burnt more briſkly than the other; but there appeared to be no difference.

The white part of the white ſerum ſunk in water.

IV. OF THE RED GLOBULES.

THE red part of the blood I chooſe to conſider laſt, although it has been more the object of attention than the other two, becauſe I believe it to be the leaſt important; for it is not an univerſal ingredient in the blood of animals, like the coagulating lymph, and the ſerum; neither is it to be found in every part of thoſe animals who have it* in the general maſs of their blood.

The blood, as I have already obſerved, in thoſe animals we are moſt acquainted with, appears to the naked eye to be a red maſs of fluid, having a part which coagulates upon being extravaſated. The red part, however, may be waſhed out of this coagulum, ſo as to leave it white; and this ſhews that the blood is not wholly red, but only has a red matter diffuſed through its other component parts.

Any further information we receive concerning the red part of the blood, is by means of magnifying glaſſes, which appear to give a good deal of information.

They ſhew us that the red part is compoſed of bodies of a globular form, ſwiming in the lymph and ſerum of the blood: this circumſtance, of the red part having form, probably led anatomiſts to pay more attention to it than it deſerves; as if they could thence explain any eſſential principle in the blood, or animal œconomy.

This knowledge is of late date, for ſuch examinations of minute bodies could only have taken place ſince the invention and application of magnifying glaſſes.

Malpighi was probably the firſt who employed the microſcope for this purpoſe, and he, in 1668, wrote a deſcription of the appearance of the globules in the blood-veſſels of the omentum, which he miſtook, however, for globules of fat. Microſcopical obſervations were purſued with great ardour by Antonius Van Leeuwenhoeck, who

* The blood of the inſect-tribe of every kind is free from any red parts, as is probably that of moſt animals below them; yet it has been aſſerted, and ſuppoſed, that their blood contains globules, although not red. I have examined the blood of the ſilk-worm, lobſter, etc. and with conſiderable magnifying powers; but never could diſcover any thing, but an uniform tranſparent maſs.

ſaw the red globules, Auguſt the 15th, 1763*. Theſe early obſervers probably imagined more than they ſaw.

When an old opinion is partly exploded, and a new one brought forward, it becomes only neceſſary to ſee how far the new one is juſt; becauſe, if it be not proved, we muſt revert to the old opinion again or to ſome other.

Mr. Hewſon has been at great pains to examine the blood in the microſcope, and has given us figures of the different ſhapes of thoſe globules; but there is reaſon to think he may have been deceived in the manner I have juſt mentioned.

The red globules are always nearly of the ſame ſize in the ſame animal, and when in the ſerum do not run into one another as oil does when divided into ſmall globules in water. This form, therefore, does not ariſe ſimply from their not uniting with the ſerum, but they have really a determined ſhape and ſize. This is ſimilar to what is obſerved of the globules in milk; for milk being oily, its globules are not ſoluble in water; neither do they conſiſt of ſuch pure oil as to run into each other; nor will they diſſolve in oil. I ſuſpect, therefore, that they are regular bodies, ſo that two of them could not unite and form one †.

What this property in the red part is, I do not know, for it has ſomething like the nature of a ſolid body, yet the particles ſeem not to have the properties of a ſolid; for to the touch they yield no feeling of ſolidity; when circulating in the veſſels they may be ſeen to aſſume eliptical forms, adapting themſelves to the ſize of the veſſels; they muſt, therefore, be a fluid, with an attraction to themſelves while in the ſerum, which forms them into round globules, yet without the power of uniting with one another, which may ariſe from their central attraction extending no farther than their own circumference: if they are found, however, of an oval figure in ſome animals, as authors have deſcribed, that circumſtance would rather oppoſe the idea of their being a fluid, having a central attraction; but this is probably an optical deception. Whatever their ſhape is, I ſhould ſuppoſe it to be always the ſame, in the ſame animals, and indeed in all animals, as it muſt depend upon a fixed principle in the globule itſelf.

* Haller's Phyſiology, vol. ii. lib. v. Sangui. ſect. xi. p. 51.

† Milk appears to be oil united with a proportion of mucus.

Hence, the leſs credit is to be given to thoſe who have deſcribed the globules as being of an oval figure in ſome animals; for they have alſo deſcribed them as being of different and ſtrange ſhapes, even in the ſame animal*.

* I am led to believe that we may be deceived by the appearances viewed through a magnifying glaſs; for although objects, large enough to be ſeen by the naked eye, are the ſame when viewed through a magnifying glaſs which can only magnify in a ſmall degree, yet as the naked eye, when viewing an object rather too ſmall for it, is not to be truſted, it is much leſs to be depended upon, when viewing an object infinitely ſmaller, brought to the ſame magnitude by a glaſs. In ſuch a ſituation, reſpecting our eye, all the relative objects, by which the eye, from habit, judges with more nicety of the object itſelf, are cut off; the eye has likewiſe a power of varying its form, adapting it to the different diſtances of the parts of an object within its compaſs, making the object always a whole; but a magnifying glaſs has no ſuch power: for inſtance, in viewing a ſpherical body, a magnifying glaſs muſt be made to vary its poſition, and bring in ſucceſſion the different parts of the hemiſphere into ſo many focal points; every part ſeparate, not having the ſame relative effect on our organ of viſion as when they are all ſeen at the ſame time; and the eye, under ſuch circumſtances, being unable to vary itſelf ſufficiently to alter the focal diſtance of the glaſs, is the reaſon why rounded bodies appear of different ſhapes, giving the ſhape only of the part that is within the focus of the glaſs, placed upon an undefined plane; and if it ſhould have more focal points than one, then there is an increaſe of parts; and this will vary according to the opacity or tranſparency of the body. It may alſo be remarked, that from habit our minds are informed by the neceſſary actions of our body, therefore the eye taking in the neceſſary actions (as it were inſtinctively) adapting itſelf at once to the circumſtances of the object, gives an intelligence to the mind, independent of the real impreſſion of the object, ſo that both the impreſſion and the conſequent action give information; but this cannot be effected by glaſſes for the different focal diſtances of the hemiſphere do not accord with thoſe to which we vary our eyes in adapting them to the diſtances of the different parts of a rounded body; we are, therefore, left to the impreſſion alone, which is new, and conſequently imperfect, the centre being too near for the circumference to be ſeen at one diſtance, and the circumference, when ſeen, bringing the centre within the focus, ſo as to obſcure it: for an eye with a given focus which can vary it in a certain degree when viewing objects alone, yet when looking through a magnifying glaſs of any power, muſt now vary the diſtance of the object, according to the magnifying

The globules of the blood are endowed with a number of properties. They are the only part of the blood which has form or colour; two properties which are ready to catch the eye, and render the mafs more vifible. In the living body, by making it an object of fight, they give fome idea of the motion of the blood in the fmaller veffels where it is much divided; being there viewed with microfcopes, the red gobules are feen moving with different velocities in different parts, and taking retrograde, or lateral motions, according as mechanical obftructions, or thofe arifing from contractions in the veffels, may happen to retard or change their motion.

They are heavier than the coagulating lymph, and of courfe heavier than the ferum, which is known by their

power in the glafs, the eye not being able to vary the focal diftance of both; and this, probably, in an inverfe degree, to the magnifying power of the glafs. This may be obferved to take place in very fhort-fighted people, for in them the eye has the leaft variation refpecting diftance. A rounded body may be juft of fuch a fize as fhall have either of its parts out of the focal diftance of the eye, and muft be moved to and fro, alternately, before the centre and circumference can be feen; and indeed, it is only having a fpherical body, of a fize proportional to the length of focus, to produce the fame effect in every eye.

The appearance in a tranfparent body, when viewed through a magnifying glafs, are ftill more fallacious than of an opaque one; for an opaque body gives only the reflected light, which, however, will vary according as the rays come on the object. The moon, an opaque body, gives us various fhapes, and therefore fhews only the light and fhade arifing from the irregularity of the furface; but a femi-tranfparent body, like a red globule, gives both the reflection of the light from the furface and alfo the refraction of other rays of lights, which vary according to the direction of the light thrown upon the object refpecting our eye.

In fome tranfparent bodies we have ftill a greater variety, for we have both the reflex and refracted light, and thefe varying according to the diftance of the object from the eye, or the diftance of the light.

If the tranfparent body is not perfectly round, or is by any circumftance broken in the uniformity of ftructure on which tranfparency depends, which, I conceive happens to the red globules when diluted in the ferum, then the different reflections and refractions will give to the eye the impreffion of fo many fhapes.

falling to the bottom of the cup when blood is taken out of a blood-veſſel. This allows the coagulating lymph to be ſeen more or leſs at the top, and produces on the ſurface various hues, according as the red globules ſubſide: when they ſubſide much, the buff is then of a yellowiſh colour; when the buff is thin at the top, then we have the red gobules ſhining through it, of various colours, ſuch as blue, purple*, &c. according to the reflection or refraction, which is according to the depths.

In healthy blood, however, the coagulum is commonly formed before the red part has time to ſubſide; but we may always obſerve, that the lower part of the maſs contains more red globules than the top, and will ſink more quickly in water. The red globules do not retain their globular form in every fluid, but are diſſolved and diffuſed through the whole, and this probably happens ſooner in water than in any other fluid, though the red globules are not ſoluble in the ſerum of the blood, yet it is not the only fluid in which they are inſoluble; the urine does not diſſolve them; but urine might be ſuppoſed to be principally ſerum. Water itſelf, however, ceaſes to diſſolve them when ſaturated with many of the neutral ſalts, or with ſome of the acids. The red globules are not ſoluble in water mixed with common ſea-ſalt, ſal-armoniac, Epſom-ſalt, nitre, Glauber-ſalt, ſoluble tartar, Lymington-tartar; nor in the fixed vegetable alkalies, when ſaturated with fixed air. As they do not diſſolve in the ſerum or urine, it might be imagined to ariſe from the neutral ſalts which they contain; but I ſhould believe that neither of theſe fluids have a quantity ſufficient for that purpoſe.

The vitriolic acid does not diſſolve the red globules when diluted ſo low as to have leſs pungency of taſte than common vinegar.

The red globules are ſoluble in common vinegar, but take a longer time to diſſolve than in water; and they alſo diſſolve much ſooner when the vinegar is diluted with water.

In muriatic acid, diluted ſo as to be more pungent to the tongue, and three times ſtronger than the vinegar, the red globules are not diſſolved, but loſe their red colour:

* The blood in the veins, when near the ſkin, gives the ſame hues.

by adding more water to the red globules they diſſolve; lemon juice diſſolves the red globules: all this, however, throws but little light on this part of the blood.

When the globules are put into water they diſſolve, which deſtroys their globular form: it is therefore the ſerum, and probably the coagulating lymph alſo, when circulating, which confines them to this form; but when the ſerum is diluted with water, they diſſolve in it; and this appears to take place at once; as quick as water unites with water. I could not obſerve that it was like the ſolution of a ſolid body, as a ſalt for inſtance; a drop of blood requires about two drops of water added to it to diſſolve its globules: if urine alſo be diluted with water, the globules diſſolve in it. However, after ſtanding ſome days, the globules diſſolve both in ſerum and urine; but I think later in the laſt. When the globules are not diſſolved in any fluid, the whole looks muddy, not tranſparent; but when diſſolved in water the whole is a fine clear red. What are the properties of the ſerum, and thoſe other ſubſtances that preſerve the red part of the blood in a regular form, I do not know.

The red globules, when dried in the ſerum, and moiſtened in the ſame, do not again reſume their regular form; nor do they diſſolve in it, as they do in water, but form rather a ſort of flakes. As the ſerum and ſolutions of many kind of ſalts do not diſſolve the red globules, I conceived that it might be poſſible for them to reſume their globular figure (after having been diſſolved in water) by adding ſuch a quantity of ſerum as to make the proportion of water very little; but I could not produce this effect, although the menſtruum was ſuch as not to diſſolve freſh globules.

The red globules not diſſolving in the ſerum, nor in the coagulating lymph, become ſeparable from thoſe parts, when circulating, and therefore may be prevented from going where the coagulating lymph paſſes in a natural ſtate; which they certainly do not *; and which alſo is the reaſon why they are ſo perfectly retained in the coagulum when extravaſated. The globules, beſides being heavier than the ſerum, or the coagulating lymph, appear to have more ſubſtance, for they do not loſe ſo much upon drying, and when dried with ſerum, they give a kind of roughneſs to the ſur-

* This will be more fully explained, when on the colour of parts from the blood.

face which ſerum has not by itſelf. They appear not to be a natural part of the blood; but as it were, compoſed out of it, or compoſed in it, and not with it; for they ſeem to be formed later in life than either of the other two; thus we ſee, while the chick is in the egg, the heart beating, and it then contains a tranſparent fluid before any red globules are formed, which we may ſuppoſe to be the ſerum, and the lymph. The globules do not appear to be formed in thoſe parts of the blood already produced, but rather to riſe up in the ſurrounding parts *. It would alſo ſeem to be formed with more difficulty, than either of the other two parts. When an animal has loſt a conſiderable quantity of its blood, the other parts ſeem to be ſooner made up than the red globules; the animal looks long pale; but this is only conjecture, for we have no method of knowing the quantity of the other parts.

From the above account it appears, that whatever may be their utility in the machine, the red globules certainly are not of ſuch univerſal uſe as the coagulating lymph, ſince they are not to be found in all animals, nor ſo early in thoſe that have them, nor are they puſhed into the extreme arteries, where we muſt ſuppoſe the coagulating lymph reaches; neither do they appear to be ſo readily formed. This being the caſe, we muſt conclude them not to be the important part of the blood, in contributing to growth, repair, etc. Their uſe would ſeem to be connected with ſtrength; for the ſtronger the animal the more it has of the red globules; and the ſtrength acquired by exerciſe increaſes their proportion; not only in the whole body, but, as we ſhall find, occaſions them to be carried into parts where in either a quiet or debilitated ſtate of the animal they were not allowed to go; the uſe, therefore, of a part, and the quantity of red globules paſſing through it, are probably pretty well proportioned to each other. This effect is ſo well known to feeders of young animals, for the table of the epicure, that bleeding, to leſſen the quantity, is immediately practiſed; as alſo debarring the creature from

* Thus, on ſome of the firſt appearances of the chick we find a zone ſurrounding it, compoſed of dots, which contain red globules, but not in veſſels, and which zone becomes vaſcular afterwards. Vide plate 1.

exercise, in order to prevent their increasing, and being carried so far from the heart, as they otherwise would be.

These three substances are of different specific gravities; the serum or fluid part is the lightest; the solid part or lymph is the next in order; and the red globules are the heaviest. This is seen in such blood as separates readily into its constituent parts. The serum swims upon the top, and the red globules fall to the bottom, while the lymph would be suspended between the two, if the red part were not retained in the lymph, from its coagulation; but this constant effect is no absolute proof of the difference in the specific gravities of the serum, and coagulating lymph; for we still do not know but that the red globules, which are evidently the heaviest, make the coagulating lymph to sink in the serum. To ascertain this circumstance, I made the following experiment: I took some blood, which separated easily into its constituent parts; I then suspended in a portion of serum a piece of coagulating lymph, which was free from red globules, and it sunk to the bottom, but not very quicly; this proves that the lymph, when coagulated, is somewhat heavier than the serum.

I then took as much of the bottom of the coagulum, containing the red globules, and put it into the serum along with the lymph, to see which of them sunk the fastest, and found that the piece with the red globules sunk much more quickly than the other; I should think three times as fast. The serum itself is much heavier than common water, for when the parts beforementioned were put into common water, in the same manner as into the serum, they both sunk much faster, and there was not that disproportion between the times of their falling, as in the serum. But if the blood has a strong disposition to coagulate, and is not in large quantity, it will coagulate soon, and involve the red globules; yet there will then be fewest at top, and they will be more and more crowded towards the bottom; though there would appear in such blood to be no coagulating lymph at top free from the red globules, yet in most of it a thin pellicle may be found, which can be pulled off.

I have already observed that the whole mass of blood, taken together in a greater variety of classes of animals, appears of a red colour; and I shall now further remark, that it is of a much deeper colour in some classes of animals than in others, which I believe arises from a greater number of red globules being contained in a given quantity of

lymph and ſerum. This, I think, evidently appears to be the caſe when we examine a portion of the blood itſelf, belonging to different claſſes of animals. In the claſs called quadruped, I believe it has the deepeſt body of colour; I am not, however, certain that it is not nearly as deep in ſome birds; and even in the ſame claſs of animals it appears to have a much greater body of colour in ſome ſpecies than in others. Thus it appears to be deeper in the hare than the rabbit.

It is the red part itſelf which makes the difference in depth of colour in different parts of the ſame animal; and the common mode of judging is by the colour of the parts in different claſſes of animals that have red blood; on theſe we generally form our opinion, for though in ſome animals which have white muſcles, the liver, kidney, and heart, may be nearly as red as in others whoſe muſcles are univerſally as red; yet, as the muſcles are white, there muſt be a deficiency in the red globules on the whole; for if theſe parts which are red in animals, having white muſcles, as the heart, liver, etc. have no more than their due proportion with other animals that are univerſally red, there muſt be in ſuch animals a deficiency of red globules on the whole. This idea may be gradually carried on, from the animal which has feweſt red muſcles, to thoſe whoſe muſcles are univerſally red, and of a high colour; even in the ſame ſpecies the colour of all the muſcles is not equally high. What are called different temperaments have their muſcles redder, or paler; the darker the colour of the ſkin, hair, etc. of any one ſpecies, I believe the blood is in proportion redder. When a part, of whatever kind, is red, it takes place in conſequence of its veſſels being large enough to carry red blood; and therefore, when we find a muſcle red, ſhe know it ariſes from the ſame cauſe. When a part, on the contrary, is white, as a tendon, it is becauſe its veſſels are ſmall, and have little or none of the red blood paſſing along them; although it may probably be as vaſcular as the muſcle to which it belongs *; and thoſe animals

* Conceiving that the amnion of a calf might have but few veſſels, I injected a piece of it with quick ſilver, firſt drying its edges all round, on the edge of a diſh, while the middle of it lay in the diſh in water; but the whole became one maſs of veſſels. The intention of this experiment was to ſee, if poſſible,

that have no red blood, have white flesh universally*, and this, probably, no less vascular than the flesh which receives red blood.

The blood in the same animals is not equally deep coloured in every part; that is, every part of the body has not its blood equally loaded with red globules, or, at least, it is not equally red, even in parts of the same construction and use, such as muscles: this arises from the red globules not being carried into those parts in equal proportion; these are the white parts of animals; such muscles, in animals used for food, are called white meat. In animals, which have these muscles, there is commonly not so much red blood, as in others where these parts are more universally red; and perhaps the red part of the blood is not pushed so far in them as in those which have it in a larger proportion: there are some animals, however, which have a larger quantity of red globules in the blood, yet have some of their muscles of a lighter colour than others: even in the human subject, all the muscles are not equally red; the muscular part of the intestines, for instance, is not equal in redness to the heart, and many other muscles. To what is this owing? Does arise from mechanical causes? Do the vessels become suddenly so small beyond a certain limit as not to allow the red blood to pass? or are the other parts of the blood less tenacious? Is the red part in such not allowed to go so far? or is it a separating principle in the vessels themselves? Many circumstances of life either increase the quantity of red globules, or make them more universal in the muscles of the same animal: thus exercise increases the quantity of the red globules, and the red colour of muscles, while there is the same quantity on the whole, or perhaps we should rather say, that indolence decreases the quantity; this is particularly remarkable in women; and probably the whiteness of the muscles of young animals may arise from the same cause; I suspect, however, something more; I conceive it arises from the principle of life, influenced by accidental or mechanical

the communication between the arteries and the veins; but the mass of vessels prevented every view of this kind.

* The redness of the blood is of great use towards the knowledge of diseases: many inflammations are known by it, when on the skin, and even the kind of inflammation is distinguished by the kind of redness: also putrid diseases are distinguished when the blood is extravasated. The quantity in the face is a sign of health or disease.

cauſes; for the muſcles of young animals are increaſing in colour till they arrive at the age of maturity, and not afterwards, although they continue to uſe exerciſe. Diſeaſes leſſen the quantity of red globules, and often render their diſtribution unequal.

From the above account we may reaſon upon the whole, that the animals which are reddeſt, or have the greateſt number of red parts, have their blood furniſhed with the greateſt proportion of red globules.

One would naturally ſuppoſe that the red globules were of the ſame colour every where in the ſame animal; this laſt is perhaps the caſe, but now we find that theſe globules are of different hues in the different ſyſtems of veſſels in the ſame animal. In the more perfect animals, where there are two ſyſtems of veſſels carrying the blood, viz. arteries and veins, the blood is not of the ſame ſpecies of red in both of them in the ſame animal; one red is the ſcarlet, which takes place in the arteries of the body, the other is the modena which takes place in the veins; and as every part of the body poſſeſſes ſuch ſyſtems of veſſels, the parts which are viſited by red blood muſt have a mixture of both. As there are two circulations in every animal above the inſect, one in the lungs in thoſe that breathe air, or in the gills in fiſh who breathe water, and the other the general circulation to the body in both, we find the two colours of the globules not correſponding to the ſame ſyſtem of veſſels in each. The ſcarlet is the venal blood in the lungs, and afterwards becomes the arterial in the body, where it is commonly ſeen; and hence it is called the arterial blood; the modena is the venal blood of the body, and is the blood alſo of the pulmonary artery; but, as it is commonly ſeen in the veins only of the body, it is called the venal blood; the ſcarlet colour, therefore, is acquired in the lungs, and the modena in the body. There are ſo many proofs of this, that it hardly requires any illuſtration; yet, many circumſtances and experiments may be brought in direct proof of it. I bled a man in the temporal artery, and in the vein of the arm at the ſame time, each into a phial. The blood of the artery was of a florid red, and the venal was dark. The arterial kept its colour, and did not ſeparate its ſerum; but this was ſingular, for in others it does ſeparate its ſerum and coagulum; the venal ſeparated into its conſtituent parts as uſual.

Although this, however, is a general rule, yet there are many exceptions; for we find in many cafes the ſcarlet colour of the blood in the arteries not changed in the veins, and under ſome circumſtances the modena taking place in the arteries, as well as where blood is extravaſated in the body.

It becomes a queſtions how the change is produced in each?

More attention has been paid to the mode in which it gets the ſcarlet colour, than the modena, (though both probably are of equal importance,) becauſe it was believed that life, in ſome degree, depended on this colour. Many ſubſtances change the colour of the blood from the modena to the ſcarlet: reſpirable air has this effect, and many of the neutral ſalts, more eſpecially nitre, which occaſions the florid colour in meat that has been ſalted, alſo with ſea-ſalt. But, as the air produces this effect in the living body, and as we find that without air the animal dies, great ſtreſs has been laid on this change of colour, whereas, it ſhould only be conſidered as a ſign that the blood has been in contact with the air: but not that it muſt be fit for the purpoſe of circulation. This effect takes place readily under many circumſtanees; it takes place out of the circulation as readily as when in it; as readily when blood is coagulated as before: it takes place in blood whoſe coagulating principle has been deſtroyed, as by lightning, ſudden death, etc. it does not, therefore, depend upon life. It is the cauſe only of this change in the colour by reſpirable air, which becomes an object of conſideration; for if we ſuppoſe the change of colour in the red globules to be all that reſpiration is to perform, we ſhall make the red globules the moſt eſſential part of the blood, whereas they are the leaſt ſo. Moſt probably, the effect of air upon the blood is greateſt on the coagulating lymph; and this conjecture is rendered more likely, when we conſider, that in animals which have no red globules of any kind, reſpiration is as eſſential to their exiſtence as in any other; and we find, that the blood may loſe this effect, and yet retain its ſalutary effects in the conſtitution. Thus in the tying up a large artery, when the parts beyond muſt be ſupplied with blood that ſhall have loſt its florid colour; and in the chick in the egg, the blood in the arterial ſyſtem is dark, while in the veins of the temporary lungs it is florid. We are led, by daily experience, to obſerve, that the dark blood taken from a vein becomes red

on that surface which is exposed to the common atmosphere; and, that if it be shaken in a phial with air, the whole becomes red*. If blood also be allowed to stand exposed to the air, and coagulate, its upper surface will become of the scarlet red, while the bottom remains dark, or even of a darker colour than common venal blood, because it contains a greater quantity of red globules. If the coagulated blood be inverted, and the bottom exposed to the air, this part will also assume the scarlet red, and become even redder than that exposed before, because it contains a greater number of red globules, which undergo this change. The red colour will even penetrate to some depth, which shews that the effect can be produced through a thick substance. We often find the vessels of the lungs full of blood, and the whole substance of the lungs of a dark colour; but, if we inflate the lungs, the cells will become of a florid red, the small vessels on those cells, both arteries and veins, having the colour of their blood changed by the air in the cells affecting it through their coats: we find the same thing on the surface of flesh, or muscles, liver, etc. We may observe in the gills of fish, that they retain their florid colour as long as the fish is fresh, from being exposed to the air, for they naturally have the air applied externally in the act of breathing. It is from these facts we reason, respecting the scarlet colour which the blood acquires in the lungs, but loses in the body, and therefore is found of the modena colour in the veins, and of course in the right side of the heart, and larger trunks of the pulmonary artery. As the blood is florid in the pulmonary veins, as far as we can trace them, we reasonably suppose that it acquires this appearance in the small vessels of the lungs, and as the lungs constantly take in fresh air, we conceive that by exposure to the air (perhaps both in arteries and veins) it acquired the scarlet colour; for we shall see that the air, or the influence of air, is capable of passing through animal substance.

In the living body when the breathing is imperfect, we can plainly see the change taking place in the colour of the blood, in proportion as the breathing becomes more perfect, of which the following experiments are proofs:

* This does not arise from motion, for fill the phial with blood without air, and put into it glass beads, and shake them, so as to give them motion, the colour will not be altered.

They were made with a view to obſerve the motion of the heart, by producing an artificial breathing, and exhibited a vaſt variety of phenomena, of which the change in the colour of the blood in the lungs was one.

I invented a pair of double bellows, each of which had two openings, but their actions were reverſed; two of the openings were incloſed in one pipe or nozzle, and the other two were on the ſides. The lower chamber had its valve placed exactly ſimilar to that of the common bellows; but it had alſo a valve at the nozzle, which did not allow any air to enter there. The upper half had a valve placed at the nozzle, which allowed the air to enter, but not to eſcape, and the opening on the upper ſide, allowed the air to eſcape, but not to enter; ſo that on dilating the bellows, the upper ſide, or chamber, drew in the air, by the nozzle only, and at the ſame time, the under chamber drew in its air by the ſide only: on cloſing the bellows, or expelling this air, the air drawn in by the nozzle paſſed out at the opening of the upper ſide, and the air that was drawn in by the under ſide, paſſed out by the nozzle. By this means I could, by fixing the nozzle into the trachea, draw the air out of the lungs into the upper chamber of the bellows, and at the ſame time draw freſh air into the lower chamber; on emptying theſe cavities of their air, the pure air in the lower chamber paſſed into the lungs, and that which had been juſt taken from the lungs into the upper chamber paſſed into the open air alternately. The action of theſe bellows, though double, is exactly as ſimple as breathing itſelf; and they appear to me to be ſuperior to any invention made ſince for the ſame purpoſe. I fixed the nozzle of theſe bellows into the trachea of a dog, and immediately began the artificial breathing; I then removed the ſternum and cartilages, and opened the pericardium. While I continued the artificial breathing, I obſerved that the blood in the pulmonary veins, coming from the lungs, the left auricle, the aorta, etc. was florid or dark, juſt as I threw in air or not, into the lungs.

I cut off a piece of the lungs, and found that the colour of the blood which came from the wound correſponded with the above effects: when I threw air into the lungs, ſo as to render the blood florid in the pulmonary veins, two kinds of blood iſſued from the wound; and when I left off blowing, the whole blood which paſſed out by the wound was of the dark colour. If the air is confined in the lungs

of a quadruped, it ſoon loſes its power over the blood, which remains dark, or has the appearance of becoming dark, becauſe dark coloured blood is thrown in, and it undergoes no change; but if the ſame experiment is made on an amphibious animal, it is a conſiderable time before the whole blood becomes dark, becauſe in ſuch animals, the lungs are a reſervoir of air, which of courſe continues its influence over the blood the longer.

This experiment I have repeated upon ſeveral animals, and commonly for half an hour at a time, which was ſufficient to allow me to make my obſervations with coolneſs and accuracy: in this part of the experiment it was curious to ſee the coronary arteries turn darker and darker, becoming like the veins which run on each ſide of them; and on blowing again, reſume gradually a brighter colour, till they become of a florid red. As reſpiration was generally prevented in the firſt part of the experiment, the blood was found at firſt wholly of a dark colour, and the heart large, and hardly acting; but on throwing into the lungs freſh air, the heart began to act, upon which both auricles and ventricles became gradually ſmaller; then by ſtopping the reſpiration, they again became larger and larger.

The diminution of the heart's motion upon ſtopping reſpiration, does not depend upon the immediate impreſſion of improper blood on the left auricle and ventricle, as a ſedative, but upon the ſympathetic connection between the heart and lungs; one action ceaſing, the other alſo ceaſes; which ſympathy is eſtabliſhed, becauſe, if the heart were to continue acting, it would ſend improper blood into the body, by which it can be ſupported only a little while. The right auricle and ventricle alſo ceaſe acting, although not ſo early, and for the ſame reaſon; becauſe, on the ceſſation in the lungs the blood cannot receive any benefit in paſſing through them.

Theſe actions and ceſſations of actions are all dependent on life, and the connection of one action with another. It is upon the ſame principle that the firſt effect of recovery is the act of breathing.

The following caſes illuſtrate this ſtill further:

I bled a gentleman in the temporal artery, while in a fit of apoplexy; he breathed ſeemingly with great difficulty; the blood flowed very freely, and he continued to bleed longer than we commonly find, from the ſame wound,

which made me ſuſpect that the artery had loſt ſome of its contracting power. The blood was as dark as venal blood; he became ſomewhat relieved, and his breathing more free; about two hours afterwards we opened the ſame orifice, which ſtill bled freely, but now the blood was become florid as uſual.

Mrs.———, in Norris-ſtreet, Haymarket, fell into an apoplectic fit, in which ſhe was inſenſible, reſpecting ideas: her breathing was very imperfect, attended with a rattling in her throat, and a ſnort; the pulſe was very ſteady, but rather ſlow. I opened the temporal artery, which bled very freely; but I obſerved that when ſhe breathed freely, the blood from the artery became red; and when her breathing was difficult, or when ſhe hardly breathed at all, the blood became dark, and this alternately ſeveral times in the courſe of bleeding; yet all this made but little alteration in the pulſe.

In many diſeaſes of the heart, as well as of the lungs, we may often obſerve the ſame appearance. In many diſeaſes of the heart, producing what is called angina pectoris, (the ſymptoms of which ariſe from a vaſt variety of cauſes, palpitations being commonly one) we ſhall ſee that upon any exertion, the heart acts with great violence, and the breathing is very laborious, or rather imperfect, not correſponding with the violence of the motion of the blood; the face will become of a dark purple colour, the patients will be nearly expiring, and nothing but reſt relieves them; of this the following caſe is a ſtrong inſtance.

A. B. when a boy, could never uſe the ſame exerciſe that other boys did; he could not run up ſtairs, nor aſcend a hill without being out of breath, and had almoſt through his whole life, an irregular pulſe; more eſpecially when he uſed more exerciſe than he could well bear. Upon the leaſt increaſe of motion, he had a palpitation at the heart, which was often ſo ſtrong, as to be heard by thoſe that were near to him; and his becoming ſoon fatigued, was by his acquaintance ſuppoſed to be owing to a want of ſpirit or courage.

With all this he grew to be a well formed and common ſized man, but ſtill he retained thoſe defects, which, indeed, rather increaſed as he extended his views, and with them extended his actions. About the age of thirty, he took to violent exerciſe, ſuch as hunting, and often in the chaſe would be ſeized ſo ill with palpitations, and almoſt a

total ſuffocation, that he was obliged to ſtop his horſe, and be held upon the ſaddle. At ſuch times he became black in the face, and continued ſo as long as the fit laſted. It was often ſeveral days before he perfectly recovered his uſual health; and frequently he could not lie down in his bed, but was obliged to ſit up for breath: all theſe ſymptoms gradually increaſed upon him, and at times, without any violence of exerciſe or action, he would feel as if dying, and uſed ſo to expreſs himſelf: but as the cauſe of theſe feelings did not appear to his friends, they rather treated him ſlightly.

At laſt mere anxiety of mind would bring on theſe feelings, palpitations, and ſuffocations in ſome degree.

In the winter 1780, and 1781, he hunted very violently and alſo caught cold, which together brought on the above-mentioned complaints with greater violence than ever.

He conſulted two gentlemen of the profeſſion: the palpitation, the difficulty of breathing, the great oppreſſion, with the blackneſs in the face (I ſuppoſe) they thought either aroſe from ſpaſms, or was nervous, for they ordered cordials, ſuch as ſpirit of lavender, wine, etc.

I was ſent for, to give a name to the diſeaſe. Upon enquiring into all the ſymptoms, my opinion was, that there was ſomething very wrong about the conſtruction of the heart, viz. about the ſource of the circulation; that the blood did not flow at any time freely through the lungs, ſo as to have the proper influence of the air, but much leſs ſo when he was hurried; that a ſtagnation of the blood in any one part about the heart would produce in ſome degree ſuffocation; and want of due influence of the air upon the blood, being the ſame thing, which was the cauſe of the darkneſs of the face at thoſe times: that the means to be practiſed were in ſome degree contrary to what had been adviſed, namely, reſt, gentle bleeding, care to eat moderately, keep the body open, and the mind eaſy; and as he had got the better of former attacks (although thoſe were not ſo violent) I ſaw no abſolute reaſon why he ſhould not get the better of the preſent. Eight ounces of blood were taken from him that day, which relieved him. The ſymptoms ſtill continuing, though not ſo violently, I ſaw him once more; he loſt about four or five ounces more blood, which alſo relieved him, but ſtill he did not get materially better: at laſt, as an addition to the above ſymptoms, he became yellow, his legs began to ſwell

with water, and all his other complaints gradually increaſed, which made me ſuſpect that a depoſit of water was begun in the cheſt. He was now attended by a phyſician; was bliſtered on his legs, which threatened a mortification, and a cauſtic was applied to the pit of his ſtomach, (I ſuppoſe for a pain there): nature was at laſt worn out, and he died. I ſolicited to open him, and was allowed.

On opening the belly there was found in the abdomen a very ſmall quantity of bloody yellowiſh ſerum. Every viſcus appeared to be ſound; the gall-bladder was pretty full of bile, which was thick, but not ropy, as if the thinner parts had been ſtrained off; the ducts were clear both to and from the gall-bladder.

Upon opening the cheſt the lungs did not collapſe, being a good deal œdematous, but otherwiſe appearing ſound.

There was alſo a little bloody ſerum in both ſides of the cheſt. Theſe I conceive were the conſequences of the laſt attack.

The heart was very large, and very full of blood.

Upon opening the right ſide of the heart, I found nothing uncommon, either in the heart or the pulmonary artery.

Upon opening the left ſide, I found the valves of the aorta thicker, and harder than uſual, having at the ſame time the appearance of being very much ſhrivelled. This diſeaſed ſtructure of the valves accounts for every one of what may be called his original ſymptoms, and was ſuch as to render them of very little uſe; the blood, therefore, muſt have fallen back into the cavity of the ventricle again at every ſyſtole of the artery.

Whether this ſhrivelled ſtate of the valves of the aorta was a natural formation, or a diſeaſe, is not eaſily aſcertained; but if it was a diſeaſe, it muſt have begun much earlier in life than ſuch diſeaſes commonly do, as the ſymptoms appeared when he was young*. From this conſtruction of valve, we muſt ſee that it required the greateſt quiet to allow the motions of the blood from the left ſide of the heart to go on ſufficiently, and that whatever interrupted this, produced a ſtagnation, or an accumulation of the blood almoſt in every part of the body; firſt in the left ventricle, then the left auricle; pulmonary veins, pulmonary arteries; right ventricle, right auricle, and all the veins in

* I have ſeen it at a very early period.

the body; however a ſmaller quantity than uſual could get to the veins of the body through the arteries, ſo that a kind of circulation went on.

If we conſider the effect ariſing from this conſtruction of valves, ſimply on mechanical principles, we cannot account for the darkneſs of the arterial blood, which muſt have paſſed through the lungs, when there was no mechanical obſtruction to reſpiration; but ſince it happens that when the heart either ceaſes to act, or cannot get rid of its blood, (which muſt have been the caſe in the preſent inſtance) reſpiration ceaſes, or is performed ſo imperfectly as to have nearly the ſame effect *; the perſon is in reality in a ſtate of ſuffocation. Suffocation is no more than imperfect reſpiration, which is the cauſe of imperfect blood paſſing to and from the left ſide of the heart; and it is therefore immaterial as to conſequences, whether a ſtoppage to reſpiration is the firſt cauſe, or is an effect, for in either way it is the cauſe of imperfect blood being introduced into the arterial ſyſtem.

It may be difficult to account for the increaſed ſize of the heart, whether it was a mechanical effect, as the blood would be thrown back into it at every ſyſtole of the aorta and diaſtole of the heart, or whether it aroſe from a particular affection of that viſcus. The firſt idea is the more natural; but it is not neceſſary that the cauſe ſhould be of this kind; for we ſee every day enlarged hearts, where the ſymptoms have been ſomewhat ſimilar, and yet no viſible mechanical cauſe exiſted; and indeed it is a common effect where there is an impeded circulation.

It is eaſy to be conceived, firſt, that the circulation could not, in the caſe of this patient, be carried on regularly and perfectly: ſecondly, that a ſtoppage to the blood's motion in either arteries or veins, but much more a retrograde motion in the blood in any part muſt produce a ſtagnation, which will be more or leſs extenſive, according to the quantity of blood paſſing that way: thirdly, that if it was only in a branch of an artery, or vein, the ſtagnation would probably be only partial; but when in an artery, or the veins of the whole body, as the aorta, or vena cava, it muſt then be pretty univerſal; and as the retrograde mo-

* In ſuch inſpirations I conceive that ſo little air is taken in as hardly to reach the cells of the lungs, ſo as to be able to influence the blood circulating on thoſe cells.

tion in the blood began in the aorta, we can eaſily trace its effects. We alſo find in imperfect conſtructions of the heart, &c. where there is a communication between the right and left ſide kept up after birth, that the ſame circumſtances and appearances take place; caſes of this kind frequently occur, of which the following is a ſtrong inſtance:

I was ſeveral times conſulted about the ſtate of a young gentleman's health, and though it could not be ſaid anatomically, with preciſion, what the real confirmation of the heart was, yet it was imagined that the ſymptoms aroſe from ſome imperfection in that organ. From his infancy, every conſiderable exertion produced a ſeeming tendency to ſuffocation; and as ſuffocation always ariſes from a want of the due effect of air on the blood, while the circulation is going on, the whole body muſt change from the ſcarlet tinge to the modena or purple; and in thoſe parts where the blood gives its colour moſt, there will this effect be greateſt, which is commonly in the face, and particular parts of the face, at the finger-ends, &c. While very young, nothing but crying brought on thoſe fits, but when he was grown ſo as to take bodily exerciſe, as running, &c. then they became more frequent and more violent; and it is to be obſerved, that the older he grew, the worſe he was likely to be; for with years approaching to maturity, his actions were likely to increaſe: great care, however, was taken to ſuppreſs ſuch actions as were found, from experience, to bring on the fits. No medical advice could be of the leaſt ſervice, further than to inform him what experience had already taught, unleſs to recommend occaſionally, when his friends found that the fits of ſuffocation were more eaſily excited than uſual, that he ſhould loſe a little blood, ſo as to leſſen the neceſſary action of breathing; putting, in this way, the quantity and motion of the blood more upon a par, and at the ſame time, not to indulge too much his appetite; but all theſe precautions hardly kept him tolerably well. The heart, in proportion to the difficulty, acted with more violence, and one could rather have wiſhed the contrary to have taken place. As he could hardly uſe any exerciſe of his own, motion was given him, ſuch as riding ſlowly on horſeback, in carriages, &c. He lived to the age of between thirteen and fourteen, and though the diſorder did not deſtroy him, yet it is moſt probable that he could not have lived long, as he was every

day arriving more and more at an age of action, but not in the same proportion acquiring prudence. When he died he was opened by Dr. Poultney, who transmitted an account of the appearance of the parts to the College of Physicians of London, which is published in the third volume of their Medical Transactions: such parts as are immediately connected with my subject, I shall transcribe.

"Both lobes of the lungs were remarkably small, and some parts of them flacid to such a degree, as to suggest an idea of their having been incapable of performing their functions *. The liquor pericardii was in due quantity, and the heart was firm in texture, and of the natural size†. On examining the ventricles, and the beginning of the aorta, a canal, or passage was found communicating with both ventricles, situated in an oblique direction near the basis of the heart, so large as to admit the end of the finger from the aorta with equal facility into either ventricle; the septum of the ventricle appearing to terminate with this canal. On examining the entrance of the pulmonary artery within the ventricle, it was judged that this entrance was much smaller and more firm than common." It is difficult here to say what would be the exact effect of this communication on the motion of the two bloods; that is, whether the blood of the right side was received into the left, or vice versâ; if the oblique direction of this passage had been further described, it might have explained this doubt, for if the passage was direct, the blood would most probably pass from the left to the right, as the left ventricle acquires the greatest strength; the word oblique, however, and the expression, that the finger, from the aorta, passed with equal facility into either ventricle, would make us suppose that the obliquity led out of the right ventricle into the aorta; but even with this obliquity, I should not think it probable that the blood would pass from the right to the left, because the left acts with so much more force: the description leaves us to account for the defect in respiration another way. If the blood passed from the right to the left, then it would have had the same effect as the canalis arteriosus, and probably was

* Although I have transcribed this, yet I do not lay much stress upon it.

† This shews there was no disease.

the only one in the fœtus. In this caſe too little blood would paſs through the lungs; but I do not conceive that this circumſtance would affect reſpiration, becauſe no ſtagnation would take place in the lungs; but if the blood got from the left to the right, then too much blood would be ſent to the lungs, as it would be found to take its courſe twice. On the other hand, if the lungs be not capable of allowing a full diſtention equal to the actions of the heart, though naturally framed, the ſame thing takes place. In natural deaths the pulſation of the heart commonly ſtops before breathing ceaſes; but in deaths ariſing from a ſtoppage of breath, ſuch as hanging or drowning, the reverſe muſt take place; and in ſuch we ſhall always find dark blood in the left ſide, which plainly took place in the experiment above-mentioned.

It may be ſuppoſed that in the lungs the blood cannot come in contact with the air, but the circumſtances above related, that the florid colour will extend ſome depth into the blood, ſhews that the effect of air can and does pervade animal matter. Not attending to this fact at firſt, I covered the mouths of veſſels filled with venal blood with gold-beater's ſkin, touching the ſurface of the blood, and the blood conſtantly became of a florid red on the ſurface, and even for ſome depth.

I put ſome dark venal blood into a phial, till it was about half full, and ſhook the blood which mixed with the air in this motion, and became immediately of a florid red*.

As the globules are the coarſeſt part of the blood, and they appear to be fully affected by the air in the lungs, we may ſuppoſe that the veſſels of that viſcus do not run into extreme minuteneſs, by which, apparently, no other purpoſe would be anſwered.

The blood of the menſes, when it comes down to the mouth of the vagina, is as dark as venal blood, and as it does not coagulate, it has exactly the appearance of the blood in thoſe, where the blood continues fluid. Whether this ariſes from its being venal blood, or from its acquiring that colour after extravaſation, by its ſlow motion, it is not eaſily determined; but upon being expoſed it becomes florid: it is naturally of a dark colour, but rather muddy,

* Theſe experiments I made in the ſummer 1755, when I was houſe ſurgeon at St. George's Hoſpital, and Dr. Hunter taught them ever after at his lectures.

not having that tranſparency which pure blood has. Whether this ariſes from its mixing with the mucus of the vagina, or from the ceſſation of life in it, I will not pretend to ſay. The red globules, however, are not diſſolved, they retain their figure.

Does air in the cellular membrane of an emphyſematous perſon produce, or continue the floridneſs of the blood or not?*

The ſurface of the blood becoming of a ſcarlet red, whether expoſed immediately to the air, or when only covered by membranes, through which we may ſuppoſe its influence to paſs, is a circumſtance which leads us to ſuppoſe, that it is the pure air which has this effect, and not ſimply an expoſed ſurface †. To aſcertain this I made the following experiment:

I took a phial, and fixed a ſtop cock in its mouth, and then applying an air-pump to the cock, exhauſted the whole air: in this ſtate keeping it ſtopped, I immerſed its mouth in freſh blood flowing from a vein, and then turning the cock allowed the blood to be preſſed up into the phial. When it was about half full I turned the cock back, and now ſhook the phial with the blood, but its colour did not alter as in the former experiments; and when I allowed the blood to ſtand in this vacuum, its expoſed ſurface was not in the leaſt changed.

The vaſt number of cells into which the lungs are divided, the whole arterial and venal ſyſtem ramifying on the ſurface of thoſe cells and of courſe the whole of the blood paſſing through them in every circulation, together with the loſs of life upon the miſſing three or four breathings in the moſt perfect animals, ſhew the great nicety that is required in preſerving the due properties of the blood for the purpoſes of animal life: the time that we can live without air or breathing, is ſhorter than that in which we die from a defect in any other natural operation; breathing, therefore, ſeems to render life to the blood, and the blood continues it in every part of the body. This nicety is not nearly ſo great in many of the more imperfect animals.

The amphibia have not this diviſion of lungs, nor does

* Vide Cheſter on Caſes. Caſe firſt, the venal florid. St. George's, a man emphyſematous; blood very dark.

† I may here obſerve, that fixed air, as alſo inflammable airs, have contrary effects.

the whole of the blood pafs through the lungs in them, and they can live a conſiderable time without breathing. This, at preſent I only mention as a fact, not meaning to give my opinion of the mode of preſerving life, either in the blood or body, by the application of air to it; though, I will ſay, that mere life in both is ſupported by the air, and probably few of the other properties connected with the blood depend ſo much upon air as its life. But we may obſerve, that it was not neceſſary for the blood to undergo this change, to render it fit for every purpoſe in the animal œconomy; for we find that venal blood anſwers ſome purpoſes: thus the blood from the inteſtines, ſpleen, &c. going to the liver, as we ſuppoſe, for the ſecretion of the bile, ſhews that venal blood will do for ſome ſecretions, though probably not abſolutely neceſſary. This application of venal blood is a ſaving of blood, and it is not neceſſary for the formation of bile, that the venous blood ſhould proceed from the parts abovementioned; for in birds, amphibia, &c. other veins, beſides thoſe, enter the liver.

I have ſhewn that ſeveral ſubſtances mixed with dark coloured blood, have the property of rendering it of a florid red; and it muſt have appeared, that by circulating through the body its dark colour is reſtored. As it is capable of being rendered florid, by ſeveral ſubſtances, ſo it may be rendered dark by ſeveral when florid: vital air has the power of rendering it florid; but the other vapours, or gaſſes, which have the name of airs, ſuch as fixed air, inflammable air, &c. render it dark. This change is peculiar to the living body; for if arterial blood is taken away, it retains its florid colour, although not in the leaſt expoſed to the air. As it is found dark in the veins, and as it performs ſome offices in the courſe of the circulation, which perhaps render it unfit for the purpoſes of life, we may conceive, that the loſs of colour, and this unfitneſs are effects of the ſame cauſe: but, upon further obſervations on this fluid it will be found, that it may be rendered unfit for the purpoſes of life without loſing its colour, and may loſe its colour without being rendered unfit for life: ſlowneſs of motion in the blood of the veins, is one circumſtance that cauſes the alteration, but this alone will not produce the effect, for I have obſerved above, that arterial blood put into a phial and allowed to ſtand quiet, does not become dark; but reſt or ſlowneſs of motion in living

parts, would appear, from many obſervations, to be a cauſe of this change in its colour: we know that the blood begins to move more and more ſlowly in the arteries: we know its motion in the veins is ſlow, in compariſon to what it is in the arteries; we ſhould, therefore, naturally ſuppoſe, (conſidering this alone) that it was the ſlowneſs of the motion that was the immediate cauſe. Reſt, or ſlowneſs of motion, in living, and probably healthy parts, certainly allows the blood to change its colour: thus we never ſee extravaſations of blood, but it is continually dark. I never ſaw a perſon die of an apoplexy, from extravaſation in the brain, but the extravaſated blood was dark; even in anueriſm it becomes dark in the anueriſmal ſac, alſo when the blood eſcapes out of the artery and coagulates in the cellular membrane, we find the ſame appearance.

Theſe obſervations reſpecting apoplexy, ſtruck me much. I conceived at firſt, that the extravaſations there muſt conſiſt of venal blood; but, from reaſoning, I could hardly allow myſelf to think ſo; for whatever might be the beginning of the diſeaſe, it was impoſſible it could continue afterwards wholly venal; eſpecially when the blood was found in a conſiderable quantity; becauſe, in many caſes, great miſchief was done to both ſyſtems of veſſels, and the arteries once ruptured would give the greateſt quantity of blood; but to aſcertain this with more certainty, I made the following experiment:

I wounded the femoral artery of a puppy obliquely; the opening in the ſkin was made at ſome diſtance from the artery, by a couching needle; the blood that came from the ſmall orifice in the ſkin was florid. The cellular membrane ſwelled up very much; about five minutes afterwards, I punctured the tumour, and the blood was fluid. In ten minutes I punctured it again; the blood was thinner, and more ſerous, but ſtill florid. In fifteen minutes I punctured it again: at firſt only ſerum iſſued; upon ſqueezing a little blood came, but ſtill florid: the maſs now ſeemed to be principally coagulated, which prevented further trials. Some days after, when I cut into the ſwelled part, I found the blood as dark as common venal blood; ſo that here the change had taken place after coagulation.

When I had plaſter of Paris applied to my face to make a mould, in the taking it off, it produced a kind of ſuction on the fore part of the noſe, which I felt; and when the plaſter was removed, on obſerving the part, it was red,

as if the cells of the ſkin were loaded with extravaſated blood; this was then of a florid red, but it ſoon became of a dark purple, which ſhewed that it was arterial blood, and that by ſtagnating in the cells of the body it became of the colour of venal blood.

Blood may even be rendered dark in the larger arteries, by a ſhort ſtagnation. I laid bare the caroted artery of a dog, for about two inches in length, I then tied a thread round it at each end, leaving a ſpace of two inches in length between each ligature, filled with blood; the external wound was ſtiched looſly up: ſeveral hours after, I opened the ſtiches, and obſerved in this veſſel that the blood was coagulated, and of a dark colour, the ſame as in the vein. Thus I have alſo ſeen when a tourniquet has been applied round the thigh, and the artery divided, that when it was ſlackened the firſt blood came out of a dark colour, but what followed was florid.

This I have ſeen in amputations, when a tourniquet had been applied for a conſiderable time; and, it is commonly obſerved in performing the operation for the anueriſm.

July, 1779, Mr. Bromfield had a patient in St. George's Hoſpital, with an anueriſm in the crural artery, about the middle of the thigh: the artery had been dilated about three inches in length. The operation was performed, in which the artery was tied up above the dilatation, three or more inches, for ſecurity. When this was done, the tourniquet was ſlackened, and a pretty conſiderable bleeding was obſerved, ſeemingly at the lower orifice, leading from the dilated part, which, at firſt, was ſuppoſed, from its colour, to be the venous blood that had ſtagnated in the veins, by means of the tourniquet; but this it could not be; and it was found to flow from the lower orifice of the artery, which was immediately tied: we muſt ſuppoſe, that the motion of the blood, in making this retrograde courſe, was very ſlow, for it had firſt to paſs off into ſmall collateral branches, above where it was tied, then to anaſtomoſe with ſimilar ſmall ones, from the trunk below, and then to enter that trunk; all of which muſt very much retard its motion; and indeed, the manner of its oozing out of the veſſels ſhewed ſuch a retardation. This motion of the blood, though in the arterial ſyſtem, was in ſome reſpects ſimilar to the motion of the blood in both ſyſtems of veſſels.

This laſt circumſtance plainly indicates a communication of the arteries above the anueriſm with thoſe below, by means of the anaſtomozing branches.

The blood from the lower orifice flowed without any pulſation; which muſt have been owing to its coming into the large artery below by a vaſt number of ſmaller ones at different diſtances, and of courſe, at different times; but probably, the chief cauſe of this want of pulſation in the great artery was, that the power of the heart was loſt in the two ſyſtems of ſmaller arteries above, and below; for the ſecond ſyſtem, or thoſe from below, became in a conſiderable degree ſimilar to veins; and the great artery in the leg, below the anueriſm was like a conſiderable vein.

A young man, ſervant to Henry Drummond, Eſq. having had a knife run into his thigh, which wounded the crural artery, a conſiderable tumour came on the part, conſiſting chiefly of blood extravaſated, and lodged in the cellular membrane. This in ſome degree ſtopped the flowing of the blood from the cut artery, and on dilating the wound ſo as to get to the artery, I obſerved that the extravaſated blood in the cellular membrane was of the venal colour. On expoſing the artery, which was firſt ſecured from bleeding by a tourniquet above, and then ſlightly ſlackening that inſtrument, the firſt blood which flowed from above, was dark; and even was taken for venous blood by the operator; but he was ſoon convinced that it was arterial, by the florid colour of that which almoſt immediately enſued. I obſerved that the colour of the blood was as dark as that of any venous blood I ever ſaw.

From theſe experiments, and obſervation, we muſt conclude that the colour of the blood is altered, either by reſt, or ſlow motion, in living parts, and even in the arteries; this circumſtance takes place in the veſſels as the motion of the blood decreaſes.

Another obſervation occurs, viz. that the whole of the limbs below the ligature, where the crural artery has been taken up, muſt entirely be ſupplied with ſuch altered blood; and as this leg kept its life, its warmth, and the action of the muſcles, it is evident that the colour of the blood is of little ſervice to any of thoſe properties. It is probably from this cauſe, that granulations on the lower part of the lower extremity look dark when the perſon ſtands erect; as well as in very indolent ſores, however ſituated.

Another obſervation ſtrongly in favour of the ſuppoſition, that reſt is a cauſe of the change of blood from the ſcarlet colour to the dark, or modena, is taken from the common operation of bleeding; for we generally find the blood of a dark colour at its firſt coming out, but it becomes lighter and lighter towards the laſt. Some reaſons may be given for this, firſt, it has ſtagnated in the veins, while the vein was filling, and the orifice making, which occupies ſome time, and may render it darker than it otherwiſe might have been in the ſame vein: ſecondly, when there is a free orifice, the blood may paſs more readily into the veins from the arteries, and therefore may be ſomewhat in the ſtate of arterial blood, which may occaſion the laſt blood to be rather lighter. What amounts almoſt to a proof of this, is, that although a ligature is tied ſo as to ſtop the paſſage of the blood to the heart, and therefore it might be ſuppoſed not to have ſo free a paſſage from the arteries as in common, yet from the following obſervations, it appears that it certainly has a much freer; for if the orifice be large in a full ſized vein, the arm beyond the orifice will be much paler than the natural colour, and the blood will become more florid; but if on the contrary the vein be ſmall and little blood paſſes, it will retain its dark colour; this, however, would appear not always to be the caſe.

I bled a lady whoſe blood, at firſt was of a dark colour; but ſhe fainted, and while ſhe continued in the fit, the colour of the blood that came from the vein, was a fine ſcarlet.

The circulation was then very languid.

We may obſerve that venal blood in the moſt healthy, is commonly, if not always, the darkeſt; and when the body is the leaſt out of order, it is then not ſo much changed from the florid to the very dark purple. This I have often obſerved, and particularly recollect a ſtriking inſtance of it in a gentleman who had a ſlight fever; his venal blood was quite florid, like arterial blood. This could not ariſe from the increaſe of the blood's motion, or from being kept up in the veins by the fever, for it was light*.

* I believe the blood does not become dark by ſtanding in an inflamed part. I have ſeen caſes of apoplexy, where the perſon died ſome days after the attack. I have found the piamater inflamed in ſeveral places, even to the length of inflammatory transfuſion; forming dots, all of which were of a florid red colour, while the other parts of the ſame membrane, the blood in

The blood will change its colour from the ſcarlet to the modena in different ſituations, according to the mode of circulation. In animals who have lungs, and a complete double circulation, the darkeſt blood will be where it *comes* (if I may be allowed the expreſſion) to get anew its bright colour; for inſtance, in the arteries of the lungs, and of courſe the brighteſt in the veins of the ſame part, which will be continued more or leſs into the arteries of the other circulation, where again it will begin to change, except in one ſtage of life of ſome animals who do not uſe their lungs, ſuch as fœtuſes; but in ſuch fœtuſes as convert animal-matter into nouriſhment, therefore, moſt probably, muſt have it influenced by the air, ſuch as the chick in the egg, although not by means of the lungs of the chick, we find the blood in the veins of their temporary lungs of a florid colour while it is dark in the arteries; therefore has become of a dark colour, in its paſſage to and from the heart; but in the more perfect animals the blood, I believe, becomes darker and darker, as it proceeds from the heart, till it returns to the heart again; but this change is very little in the arterial ſyſtem, more eſpecially in veſſels near the heart, as the coronary arteries. The change of colour is more rapid in the veins, but it is not equally made through the whole venous ſyſtem; for it will be produced more quickly in the lower parts of the lower extremities, than in the veins near the heart: it begins, moſt probably, where the motion firſt has a tendency to become languid; and this uſually takes place in the very ſmall arteries; for in bleeding in the foot, or on the back of the hand, I have obſerved, in general, that the blood is of a more florid red than in the bend of the arm.

V. OF THE QUANTITY OF BLOOD, AND COURSE OF ITS CIRCULATION.

It appears to me impoſſible to aſcertain the quantity of blood in the body; and the knowledge of it would probably give very little aſſiſtance towards better underſtanding the œconomy of the animal. The quantity of blood is

the larger veſſels, and alſo the extravaſated blood, were of the uſual dark colour.

probably as permanent a circumſtance as any, and not depending on immediate action: we have not one hour leſs and another hour more; nothing but accident or diſeaſe can leſſen the quantity; the firſt, probably, immediately, the other ſlowly: but even then, although under par, it is ſo ſlowly made up as not to conſtitute ſudden variations; yet when we come to conſider the varieties in the pulſe, we ſhould imagine there would be great varieties in the quantity of blood. The quantity I think muſt be conſiderable, when we reflect on the uſe of this fluid; the quantity of ſupply, or food, neceſſary to keep it up; that it ſupports the body and life, every where; and, that it forms the pabulum of many ſecretions. All theſe cannot depend on a very ſmall quantity of this fluid, without conceiving at the ſame time an extremely quick change. There ſeems to be two modes of judging, both of which are evidently liable to objections in point of accuracy, and they differ ſo much, as to ſhew that neither can be right. One is to calculate how much may be in an animal from the quantity it will loſe in a ſhort time. I have ſeen ſeveral quarts thrown up from the ſtomach in a few hours, even by a very thin, puny perſon: and, on the other hand, if we had not this proof, we ſhould ſuppoſe there could be but very little, when a few ounces will make a perſon faint: I have an idea, however, that people can bear to loſe more by the ſtomach, than in any other way. Beſides, it becomes a matter almoſt of ſurpriſe, how little is commonly found in the dead body: but I believe in diſeaſe it in ſome degree diminiſhes with the body; for more is to be found in thoſe who die ſuddenly, or of acute diſeaſes; and even in ſome who die of lingering diſeaſes, as a dropſy, we have a conſiderable quantity of blood. The only way of accounting for this is, that in a common lingering illneſs there is leſs blood; and in a dropſy, it coagulates leſs; for the ſtrong coagulation ſqueezes out the ſerum, which, I imagine, tranſudes after death, and is not obſervable.

It would appear upon the whole, that the quantity of blood in an animal is proportioned to the uſes of that blood in the machine, which, probably, may be reckoned three in number: the firſt is ſimply the ſupport of the whole, which includes the growth, or increaſe of parts, the keeping the parts already formed to their neceſſary ſtandard, and alſo the ſupply of waſte in the parts. The ſecond is the ſupport of action, ſuch as the action of the brain, and

muſcles, in which is produced uncommon waſte; and thirdly, ſecretion; all of which will fluctuate except the ſimple ſupport; but more particularly the ſupport of action. I have already obſerved that the anaſtomoſing of veſſels gives greater ſpace for blood. Probably a paralytic limb would give the neceſſary quantity for ſimple ſupport.

There is nothing in the veins particular, ſo as to give an idea that they were intended to increaſe the quantity of blood; they hold, however, more than the arteries, which certainly adds to the quantity: but the increaſe of ſize leſſens the veloſity. They form plexuſes, and what are called certain bodies, as the plexus retiformis in the female; the carpora carvernoſa, and ſpongioſa in the male. We ſee how little blood ſupports a part in an aneuriſm; and, probably, ſlowneſs of motion is ſuitable to little blood.

It muſt have appeared in the account of the different colours, of the different parts of the body, ariſing from the proportion of red blood, that ſome parts muſt have much more blood than others, and we have now to mention, that ſome parts have much larger veſſels going to them, than others. This idea is confirmed, by the blood being the moving material of life, and taking a part in every action of it: its quantity is to be found in proportion to thoſe actions; and ſince the body is a compound of parts, or rather of actions, whoſe uſes are known to vary conſiderably, we find blood directed to thoſe parts in proportion to their actions; and this we judge of by the ſize of the veſſel, and redneſs of the part, in thoſe animals which have red blood, and we may ſuppoſe the ſame in thoſe which have not this part of the blood. The brain has conſiderable veſſels, etc. going to it, yet its ſubſtance is white, which is in ſome degree owing to its opacity. The tongue is vaſcular. The thyroid gland is vaſcular. The lungs allow of the paſſage of the whole blood in moſt animals, and therefore have always a current of blood through them equal to the whole.

The liver is extremely vaſcular, which is known from its proportion of veſſels, as well as its colour; and as there is in this viſcus a peculiar circulation, the very great quantity of blood paſſing through it, adds to the quantity in the whole body.

The ſpleen is extremely vaſcular, as are likewiſe the kidnies. The ſtomach, and inteſtines, have conſiderable

veſſels going to them, and the muſcles in general, more eſpecially thoſe of labouring people; for labour increaſes the quantity of blood in the whole, beyond ſimple nouriſhment in the full grown, or beyond the mere growth in the young.

In tracing the courſe of this nouriſhment in animals, which conſiſts ultimately in the blood; from the moſt ſimple to the moſt complicated, there is a pretty regular ſeries; but this regularity is interrupted whenever there is a variety in the circumſtances which are to be taken into the account; but the whole of this forms too extenſive a ſubject for our preſent conſideration.

If I were to begin at the formation of the blood, I ſhould firſt treat of digeſtion in thoſe animals which have ſtomachs; but this is a diſtinct ſubject: we may, however, begin with its immediate conſequences, as it produces the firſt and moſt eſſential change, viz. the converſion of the blood into a fluid called chyle. The chyle is the immediate effect or product of digeſtion, and is the ſeed, which, as it were, grows into blood, or may be ſaid to be the blood not yet made perfect. The chyle, to appearance, varies in different animals. In the quadruped, and in the crocodile, it is white; but in moſt other animals it is tranſparent: where it is white its parts are more conſpicuous than where it is tranſparent. In this reſpect it is ſimilar to the red blood, and is found to conſiſt of a coagulating matter, a ſerum, and white globules, which render it of a white colour, and in ſome degree reſembles milk. Theſe globules are ſmaller than the red globules of the blood, and about the ſize of thoſe in the pancreatic juice; they retain their figure in water, and therefore are not ſimilar to the red globules: they retain, alſo, their round form in the ſerum.

They are ſpecifically heavier than their own lymph, and ſerum.

One would naturally ſuppoſe from obſerving the chyle to have globular particles in certain animals, that they formed the red globules in the blood; but when we conſider that the chyle in fowls has no globules, and yet that they have red blood, we muſt conclude that they do not anſwer this purpoſe.

The firſt motion of the nouriſhment in moſt animals is by the abſorption of this fluid from the appendages of the ſtomach; and in many, this alone appears to be the whole,

as they have no ſuch organ or viſcus, as a heart, to which it may be carried; and in ſuch it may be ſuppoſed to be in its mode of diſtinction ſomewhat ſimilar to the meſenteric veins and vena-portarum: the parts, therefore, aſſimilate, and diſpoſe of it themſelves; but this ſtructure belongs only to the moſt ſimple, or the firſt claſs of animals. In thoſe which are more perfect, where parts are formed for each particular purpoſe, the chyle is brought to one organ, called the heart, having firſt joined the venous blood, which now requires a ſimilar proceſs, and both are ſent to the lungs, where, moſt probably, the chyle receives its finiſhing proceſs, and from thence it comes back to the heart again, to be ſent to every part of the body *.

In thoſe animals that have hearts, we are to take into the account a number of particulars: firſt, the blood's motion in conſequence of that organ: ſecondly, the firſt intention of that motion, viz. to be prepared in the lungs, which introduces breathing: thirdly, the variety in the kinds of lungs: fourthly, the different kinds of ſubſtance animals are obliged to breathe for the purpoſe of matter, employed in the preparation of this fluid.

In this inveſtigation we ſhall find there is not an exact or regular correſpondence in all the parts ſo employed.

This irregularity ariſes from animals breathing different ſubſtances; ſuch as ſome breathing the common atmoſphere, in which is included the reſpirable air; others water, in which air is included, as fiſh.

Some breathe both air and water, while there are others which breathe air in their perfect ſtate, but water in their firſt periods, or imperfect ſtate of life †.

If we were to take a view of all theſe ſyſtems, each ſhould be conſidered apart, with all its peculiarities or connections; together with the different ſyſtems, as they gradually creep into one another, ſome being perfectly diſtinct, while others partake more or leſs of both.

The complete ſyſtem is always to be conſidered as the moſt perfect, although it may belong, in other reſpects, to a more imperfect order of animals.

It has been ſuppoſed by phyſiologiſts, that as the blood is found to conſiſt of different parts, or rather properties, that certain parts or properties were determined to certain

* The circulation in fiſh is an exception to this.

† In this account I do not include animals in embryo, and ſome others, which do not breathe at all.

parts of the body, for particular purpoſes; but from the frequent anaſtomoſis of arteries, the great variety in their number, origin, and the different courſes which they take in different bodies, it is very evident, that there can be no particular blood ſent to any part of the body where the whole blood can circulate. Many unnatural ſituations of parts ſhew this. For inſtance, the kidneys ſometimes have one artery only on one ſide, and two, three, or four on the other. On one ſide they ariſe from the aorta as high as near the ſuperior meſenteric, on the other as low almoſt as the diviſion into the two iliacs: and in ſome caſes a kidney has been formed in the pelvis, and the artery has ariſen from the iliac; the ſpermatic arteries too, ſometimes, ariſe on one ſide from the aorta, and on the other from the emulgents or the arteria capſulæ renalis. If there was a particular blood ſent to every gland, we ſhould expect to find urine ſecreted in the teſticle, when its artery aroſe from the emulgent: but as the blood viſibly conſiſts of different parts in thoſe animals we are moſt acquainted with, and whoſe phyſiology is probably beſt known to us, and as one part of the blood can be traced in the veſſels, we can determine with ſufficient accuracy the proportions of blood ſent, as well as the different kinds. Thus, the red part of the blood informs us, how far it is carried; and we find that our coloured injections nearly correſpond with this information. I may here firſt remind the reader, that the red globules are the groſſer part of the blood, and therefore, whenever they are moſt in quantity, we have the blood with all its parts in due proportion and unſeparated; but the conſtruction in many parts of an animal is ſuch, that the red blood is excluded, and this alſo excludes every coloured powder we can inject; the vaſcularity, therefore, of ſuch parts is not known, as has been mentioned.

Through them the coagulating lymph only can paſs, and probably the ſerum, for the ſimple nouriſhment of the parts. Of this nature are tendons, or tendinous parts, ligaments, elaſtic ligaments, cartilages, eſpecially thoſe of joints, the cornia, &c. Even the brain and nerves, have not the red blood puſhed ſo far into their ſubſtance as many other parts have; we ſee, therefore, that the whole blood is not conveyed to all parts alike, and this we may ſuppoſe to anſwer ſome good purpoſe; yet, upon a more particular view of this ſubject, we may find it difficult to aſ-

ſign cauſes for this ſelection of the blood; for in many animals we find parts ſimilar in conſtruction and uſe, ſuch as muſcles, which are furniſhed, ſome with the whole blood, others with the coagulating lymph only, with all the gradations; ſome animals having both red and white muſcles; others having them wholly red, and others wholly white, as will be more fully explained. Even venous blood can be rendered uſeful, when it is not to anſwer the purpoſe of nouriſhment; for we find the blood of the inteſtine and ſpleen going to the liver, we may preſume for the ſecretion of the bile, as has been already obſerved.

The idea of particular kinds of blood being ſent to parts having particular uſes, more eſpecially where the part is employed ſolely in diſpoſing of this fluid, ſuch as glands, is now, I believe, pretty well exploded; and, it is ſuppoſed, therefore, that the whole maſs of blood is ſuch as to be fitted for all the purpoſes of the machine. This idea gives to the parts themſelves, full power over the blood ſo compoſed, and makes us conſider the circulation or motion of the blood ſimply.

As the blood is compoſed of different parts, it might be ſuppoſed, that if any particular part had been expended in any proceſs, the remainder, as returned by the veins, would ſhew this by its different appearance or qualities. The only viſible difference that I could conceive to take place, was in the appearance, or the quantity of coagulating lymph. To aſcertain this, however, I made the following experiments:

I opened the right ſide of the thorax in a living dog, and tied a ligature round the vena-cava inferior, above the diaphragm. I then applied my hand upon the opening, which allowed him to breathe, that the circulation might go on and fill the larger veins. When the inferior vena-cava became turgid, I killed him. On the day following I examined the blood in the different veins, and found a coagulum in the emulgent, meſenteric, vena-cava inferior, ſplenic, and in the venæ-cavæ hepaticæ, of ſizes proportional to the ſizes of the veſſels; nor was there any difference in any other way.

Experiment the ſecond. Some blood was taken from the meſenteric vein of a living dog, and ſimilar quantities from the ſplenic vein, the emulgent vein, and the vena-cava inferior, below the openings of the emulgents.

Theſe four quantities were taken in four ſeparate cups. They all ſoon coagulated: if there was any one later of coagulating than another, it was that from the meſenteric veins. On ſtanding twenty-four hours the coagula were all of the ſame firmneſs.

VI. OF THE LIVING PRINCIPLE OF THE BLOOD.

SO far I have conſidered the blood, and in the common way; but all this will explain nothing in the animal œconomy, unleſs we can refer it to ſome principle which may ſhew the nature of its connection with the living ſolids in which it moves, and which it both forms and ſupports. If we ſhould find this principle to be ſimilar to life in the ſolids, then we ſhall ſee the harmony that is ſupported between the two, and we ſhall call it, the living principle of the blood. Without ſome ſuch principle, all we have been examining is like diſſecting a dead body without having any reference to the living, or even knowing it had ever been alive. But, from the account I have given of the blood, it muſt have appeared, that I have ſtill in reſerve a property not hitherto explained; for in treating of the coagulation of the coagulating lymph, I have not been ſo full in my account as I might have been. As many phœnomena, reſpecting the coagulating or not coagulating of the blood, develope this principle, I have choſen in part to reſerve it for this place; nor ſhall I be ſo full upon the preſent occaſion as I ſhould otherwiſe be, were I writing on this ſubject expreſsly. My intention being rather to explain many appearances in the animal œconomy, and particularly the diſeaſes I am to treat of, than to diſcuſs this ſingle principle. I reſerve the illuſtration of my doctrine for ſuch parts of the treatiſe as ſhall be employed on theſe ſubjects; the explanations and illuſtrations, therefore, will be interſperſed through the work, by which means they will come more forcibly on the mind: from many circumſtances attending this fluid, it would ſeem to be the moſt ſimple body we know of, endowed with the principle of life. That the blood has life, is an opinion I have ſtarted for above thirty years, and have taught it, for

near twenty of that time in my lectures; it does not, therefore, come out at preſent as a new doctrine; but has had time to meet with conſiderable oppoſition, and alſo acquire its advocates. To conceive that blood is endowed with life while circulating, is perhaps carrying the imagination as far as it well can go; but the difficulty ariſes merely from its being fluid, the mind not being accuſtomed to the idea of a living fluid*. It may therefore be obſcure at firſt, and it will be the more neceſſary that I ſhould be pretty full in my account of it; yet the illuſtration of it in my account of inflammation, will, perhaps, do more to produce conviction than any other attempt, although ſtrongly ſupported by facts. It is to me ſomewhat aſtoniſhing, that this idea did not early ſtrike the medical enquirers, conſidering the ſtreſs which they have laid on the appearances of this fluid in diſeaſes; ſince it is probably more expreſſive of diſeaſe than any other part of the animal œconomy: and yet all this, according to them, muſt have ariſen from, what ſhall I call it? a dead animal fluid, on which a diſeaſe in the ſolids muſt have had ſuch an effect. This, I think, is giving too much to the ſolids, and too little to the fluids. When all the circumſtances attending this fluid are fully conſidered, the idea, that it has life within itſelf, may not appear ſo difficult to comprehend; and indeed, when once conceived, I do not ſee how it is poſſible we ſhould think it to be otherwiſe; when we conſider that every part is formed from the blood, that we grow out of it, and if it has not life previous to this operation, it

* It is juſt as difficult for a man born in the Weſt Indies, to conceive water becoming a ſolid. I recollect a gentleman from Barbadoes, walking out with me one froſty morning, when there was ice on the gutters, and I, without having any thing elſe in my mind than juſt common obſervation, ſaid, "it "has been a froſt in the night." He immediately caught at the word froſt, and aſked me, "How I knew that?" Without thinking particularly of the cauſe of his queſtion, I ſaid, "becauſe I ſee the ice on the gutters." He immediately ſaid, "where?" and I anſwered, "there." Having been told that ice was a ſolid, he put his fingers down upon it, but with ſuch caution as beſpoke a mind that did not know what it was to meet; and upon feeling the reſiſtance it gave, he gently pulled his hand back, and looked at the ice, and then became more bold, broke it, and examined it.

muſt then acquire it in the act of forming; for we all give our aſſent to the exiſtence of life in the parts when once formed. Our ideas of life have been ſo much connected with organic bodies, and principally thoſe endowed with viſible action, that it requires a new bend to the mind, to make it conceive that theſe circumſtances are not inſeparable. It is within theſe fifty years only, that the callus of bones has been allowed to be alive*; but, I ſhall endeavour to ſhow, that organization and life, do not depend in the leaſt on each other; that organization may ariſe out of living parts and produce action, but that life can never riſe out of, or depend on organization. An organ is a peculiar conformation of matter, (let that matter be what it may) to anſwer ſome purpoſe, the operation of which is mechanical; but, mere organization can do nothing, even in mechanics, it muſt ſtill have ſomething correſponding to a living principle; namely, ſome power. I had long ſuſpected that the principle of life was not wholly confined to animals, or animal ſubſtances endowed with viſible organization and ſpontaneous motion: I conceived that the ſame principle exiſted in animal ſubſtances devoid of apparent organization and motion, where there exiſted ſimply the power of preſervation.

I was led to this notion about the years 55, or 56, when I was making drawings of the growth of the chick, in the proceſs of incubation. I then obſerved, that whenever an egg was hatched, the yolk, (which is not diminiſhed in the time of incubation) was always perfectly ſweet to the very laſt; and that part of the albumen, which is not expended on the growth of the animal, ſome days before hatching, was alſo ſweet, although both were kept in a heat of 103° in the hen's egg for three weeks, and in the ducks for four. I obſerved, however, that if an egg did not hatch, it became putrid in nearly the ſame time with any other dead animal matter; an egg, therefore, muſt have the power of ſelf-preſervation, or in other words, the ſimple principle of life. To determine how far eggs would ſtand other teſts, to prove a living principle, I made the following experiments†:

* Dr. Hunter was the firſt who ſhowed callus to be endowed with the principle of life, as much as bone.

† Philos. Tranſact. vol. 48, part 1. page 28, 9; as alſo Obſervations on certain Parts of the Animal Oeconomy, page 106, firſt edition.

Having put a new laid egg into a cold about o, which froze it, I then allowed it to thaw; from this proceſs I imagined that the preſerving powers of the egg might be deſtroyed.*

I next put this egg into the cold mixture, and with it one newly laid; the difference in freezing was ſeven minutes and a half; the freſh egg taking ſo much longer time in freezing.

A new laid egg was put into a cold atmoſphere, fluctuating between 17° and 15°; it took about half an hour to freeze; but when thawed, and put into an atmoſphere at 25°, viz. nine degrees warmer, it froze in half the time: this experiment was repeated ſeveral times with nearly the ſame reſult.

To determine the comparative heat between a living and a dead egg, and alſo to determine whether a living egg be ſubject to the ſame laws with the more imperfect animals, I made the following experiments: A freſh egg, and one which had been frozen and thawed, were put into the cold mixture 15°; the thawed one ſoon came down to 32° and began to ſwell and congeal; the freſh one ſunk firſt to 29° and a half, and in twenty-five minutes after the dead one, it roſe to 32°, and began to ſwell and freeze. The reſult of this experiment upon the freſh egg was ſimilar to what was obſerved in the like experiments upon frogs, eels, ſnails, &c. where life allowed the heat to be diminiſhed two or three degrees below the freezing point, and reſiſted all further decreaſe; but in both the powers of life were expended by this exertion, and then the parts froze like any other dead animal matter.

This is not a principle peculiar to life, but is common in many other caſes: it has been obſerved that water could be ſo circumſtanced as to be brought below the freezing point, without freezing; but juſt as it began to freeze it roſe to 32°. In my experiments on the heat of vegetables, I obſerved that the ſap of a tree would freeze at 32°, when taken out of the veſſels of the tree; but I found the trees often ſo low as 15°, and the ſap not frozen.

* However, this was at firſt not ſo certain, but the reſult of the experiment proved it was ſo. To be more certain of killing a part by freezing it, I believe it ſhould be froze very ſlowly, for ſimple freezing does not kill.

From theſe experiments, it appears that a freſh egg has the power of reſiſting heat, cold, and putrefaction, in a degree equal to many of the more imperfect animals, which exhibit exactly the ſame phœnomena under the ſame experiments; and it is more than probable that this power ariſes from the ſame principle in both. Similar experiments have been made on the blood: after a portion of blood had been frozen and then thawed, it has again been frozen with a ſimilar quantity of freſh blood, drawn from the ſame perſon, and that which had undergone this proceſs froze again much faſter than the freſh blood*.

As all the experiments I had made upon the freezing of animals, with a view to ſee whether it was poſſible to reſtore the actions of life, when they were again thawed, were made upon whole animals; and as I never ſaw life return by thawing, I wiſhed to aſcertain how far parts were in this reſpect, ſimilar to the whole, eſpecially ſince it was aſſerted, and with ſome authority, that parts of a man may be frozen, and may afterwards recover; for this purpoſe I made the following experiments upon an animal of the ſame order with ourſelves.

In January 1777, I mixed ſalt and ice till the cold was about 0; and on the ſide of the veſſel containing them was a hole, through which I introduced the ear of a rabbit. To carry off the heat as faſt as poſſible, the ear was held between two flat pieces of iron, that ſunk further into the mixture than the ear; the ear remained in the mixture nearly an hour, in which time the part projecting into the veſſel became ſtiff, when taken out and cut into, did not bleed, and a part being cut off by a pair of ſciſſars, flew from between the blades like a hard chip. It ſoon after thawed and began to bleed, and became very flaccid, ſo as to double upon itſelf, having loſt its natural elaſticity. When it had been out of the mixture nearly an hour, it became warm, and this warmth increaſed to a conſiderable degree; it alſo began to thicken in conſequence of inflammation; while the other ear continued of its uſual temperature. On the day following, the frozen ear was ſtill warm, and it retained its heat and thickneſs for many days after. About a week after this, the mixture in the veſſel, being the ſame as in the former experiment, I introduced both ears of the ſame rabbit through the hole and froze

* Vide Corrie on the Vitality of the Blood, page 45.

them both; the found one however froze firſt, probably from its being conſiderably colder at the beginning, and probably too from its powers not being ſo eaſily excited as thoſe of the other: when withdrawn they both ſoon thawed and became warm, and the freſh ear thickened as the other had done before. Theſe changes in the parts do not always ſo quickly take place, for on repeating theſe experiments on the ear of another rabbit, till it became as hard as a board, it was longer in thawing than in the former experiment; and much longer before it became warm; in about two hours, however, it became a little warm, and the following day it was very warm and thickened. In the ſpring, 1776, I obſerved that the cocks I had in the country had their combs ſmooth with an even edge, and not ſo broad as formerly, appearing as if nearly one half of them had been cut off. Having enquired into the cauſe of this, my ſervant told me, that it had been common in that winter, during the hard froſt. He obſerved, that the combs had become in part dead, and, at laſt, had dropt off; and, that the comb of one cock had dropped off entirely; this I did not ſee, as the cock by accident had burnt himſelf to death. I naturally imputed this effect to the combs having been frozen in the time of the ſevere froſt, and having, conſequently, loſt their life by this operation. I endeavoured to try the ſolidity of this reaſoning by experiment. I attempted to freeze the comb of a very large young cock, (being of a conſiderable breadth) but could only freeze the ſerrated edges, (which proceſſes were fully half an inch long); for the comb itſelf being very thick and warm reſiſted the cold. The frozen parts became white and hard; and when I cut off a little bit it did not bleed, neither did the animal ſhow any ſigns of pain. I next introduced into the cold mixture one of the cock's wattles, which was very broad and thin; it froze very readily, and, upon thawing both the frozen parts of the comb and wattle they became warm, but were of a purple colour, having loſt the tranſparency which remained in the other parts of the comb and in the other wattle: the wound in the comb now bled freely: both comb and wattle recovered perfectly in about a month: the natural colour returned firſt next to the ſound parts, and increaſed gradually till the whole had acquired a healthy appearance. Finding that freezing both the ſolids, and the blood, did not deſtroy the life in either, nor the future actions depending on or-

ganization; and, that it alſo did not prevent the blood from recovering its fluidity, I conceived the life of every part of the body to be ſimilar: what will affect, therefore, the life of any one part, will affect alſo that of another, though probably not in an equal degree; for in theſe experiments, the blood was under the ſame circumſtances with the ſolids, and it retained its life; that is to ſay, when the ſolids and blood were frozen and afterwards thawed, they were both capable of carrying on their functions.

The following experiments were made in the ſame manner on living muſcles, to ſee how far the contractions of living muſcles after having been frozen, correſpond with the coagulation of the blood.

A muſcle was removed from a frog's leg, with a portion of its tendon, was immediately placed between two pieces of lead, and expoſed to a cold about ten degrees below o. In five minutes it was taken out, when it was quite hard and white; on being gradually thawed it became ſhorter and thicker than while frozen; but on being irritated did not contract; yet if at all elongated by force, it contracted again, and the tendinous expanſion covering the muſcle was thrown into wrinkles: when the ſtimulus of death took place, it became ſtill ſhorter.

From a ſtraight muſcle in a bullock's neck, a portion, three inches in length, was taken out immediately after the animal had been knocked down, and was expoſed between two pieces of lead, to a cold below o, for fourteen minutes; at the end of this time it was found to be frozen exceedingly hard, was become white, and was now only two inches long: it was thawed gradually, and in about ſix hours after thawing, it contracted ſo as only to meaſure one inch in length, but irritation did not produce any ſenſible motion in the fibres. Here then were the juices of muſcles frozen ſo as to prevent all power of contraction in their fibres, without deſtroying their life; for when thawed they ſhowed the ſame life which they had before: this is exactly ſimilar to the freezing of blood too faſt for its coagulation; which, when thawed, does afterwards coagulate, as it depends in each on the life of the part not being deſtroyed. I took notice in the hiſtory of the coagulation of the lymph, that heat of 120° excited this action in that fluid: to ſee how far muſcular contraction was

ſimilar in this reſpect, I made the following experiment *.

As ſoon as the ſkin could be removed from a ſheep that was newly killed, a ſquare piece of muſcle was cut off, which was afterwards divided into three pieces, in the direction of the fibres: each piece was put into a baſon of water; the water in each baſon being of different temperatures, viz. one 125°, about 27 degrees warmer than the animal; another 98°, the heat of the animal; and the third 55°, about 43 degrees colder than the animal. The muſcle in the water heated to 125°, contracted directly, ſo as to be half an inch ſhorter than the other two, and was hard and ſtiff. The muſcle in the water heated to 98°; after ſix minutes began to contract and grow ſtiff: at the end of twenty minutes it was nearly, though not quite, as ſhort and hard as the above. The muſcle in the water heated to 55°; after 15 minutes, began to ſhorten and grow hard: after 20 minutes it was nearly as ſhort and as hard as that in the water heated to 98°. At the end of 24 hours they were all found to be of the ſame length and ſtiffneſs.

Here is alſo a ſimilarity in the excitements of coagulation in the blood, and of contraction in muſcles, both apparently depending on the ſame principle, namely, life †.

If it ſhould ſtill be difficult to conceive how a body in a fluid ſtate, whoſe parts are in conſtant motion upon one another, always ſhifting their ſituation with reſpect to themſelves and the body, and which may loſe a portion without affecting itſelf or the body, can poſſibly be alive, let us ſee if it is alſo difficult to conceive that a body may be ſo compounded as to make a perfect whole of itſelf, having no parts diſſimilar, and having the ſame properties in a ſmall quantity as in a great. Under thoſe circumſtances, the removing a portion is not taking away a conſtituent part, upon which the whole depends, or by which it is made a whole, but is only taking away a portion of the whole; the remaining portion being equal in quality to the whole, and in this reſpect is ſimilar to the reducing a whole of any thing. This might be perfectly illuſtrated without ſtraining the imagination, by conſidering the opera-

* Vide Philoſ. Tranſ. vol 66, page 412. Paper on Drowning; alſo, Obſervations on certain Parts of the Animal Economy.

† The application of this principle in diſeaſe, I ſhall not at preſent take notice of.

tion of union by the firſt intention. Union, by the firſt intention, is an immediate ſympathetic harmony between divided parts, when brought ſimply into contact, which I call, contiguous ſympathy. In this caſe it is not neceſſary that the very ſame parts ſhould oppoſe each other, elſe harmony, and conſequently union, could never take place; it is ſimply neceſſary that the two parts be alive, and they might be ſhifted from one ſort of a living creature to another for ever, without any injury to either, or without exciting irritation; and the whole would ſtill be as perfect as ever. Neither can the motion of one living part upon another affect the body, becauſe all its parts are ſimilar and in harmony with each other. It is exactly the ſame with the blood, for neither its motion on itſelf, nor its motion on the body, can either affect it, or the body, ſince all the parts are ſimilar among themſelves. This is the caſe with all matter, where the property does not depend upon ſtructure, or configuration, but upon the compound; for water, is ſtill water, whether its parts are moving on each other, or at reſt: and a ſmall portion has the ſame property with the whole, and is in fact, a ſmaller whole. One of the great proofs that the blood poſſeſſes life, depends on the circumſtances affecting its coagulation; and, at preſent, we are only to explain the principles upon which theſe are founded, which it will be in ſome degree neceſſary to recapitulate; but, perhaps, the ſtrongeſt conviction on the mind will ariſe from the application of this principle to diſeaſes, eſpecially inflammation. While the blood is circulating, it is ſubject to certain laws to which it is not ſubject when not circulating. It has the power of preſerving its fluidity, which was taken notice of when treating of its coagulation; or, in other words, the living principle in the body has the power of preſerving it in this ſtate. This is not produced by motion alone, for in the colder animals, when almoſt in a ſtate of death during the winter, when their blood is moving with extreme ſlowneſs, and would appear to preſerve ſimply animal life through the whole body, and keep up that dependence which exiſts between the blood, and the body already formed, the blood does not coagulate to accompliſh theſe purpoſes. If the blood had not the living principle, it would be, in reſpect of the body, as an extraneous ſubſtance. Blood is not only alive itſelf, but is the ſupport of life in every part of the body; for mortification immediately follows, when the

circulation is cut off from any part, which is no more than death taking place in the part, from the want of the ſucceſſive changes of freſh blood. This ſhows, that no part of the body is to be conſidered as a complete living ſubſtance, producing and continuing mere life, without the blood: ſo that blood makes one part of the compound; without which life would neither begin nor be continued. This circumſtance, on its firſt appearance, would ſeem a little extraordinary, when we conſider that a part, or the whole, are completely formed in themſelves, and have their nerves going to them, which are ſuppoſed to give animal life; yet that perfect living part, or whole, ſhall die in a little time, by ſimply preventing the blood from moving through the veſſels: under this idea, it is not clear to me, whether the blood dies ſooner without the body, or the body without the blood. Life, then is preſerved by the compound of the two, and an animal is not perfect without the blood: but this alone is not ſufficient, for the blood itſelf muſt be kept alive; becauſe, while it is ſupporting life in the ſolids, it is either loſing its own, or is rendered incapable of ſupporting that of the body. To accompliſh all this it muſt have motion, and that in a circle, as it is a continuance of the ſame blood which circulates, in which circle it is in one vieu ſuperſaturated, as it were, with living powers, and in another is deficient, having parted with them while it viſited the different parts of the body. Life is in ſome degree, in proportion to this motion, either ſtronger, or weaker; ſo that the motion of the blood may be reckoned, in ſome degree, a firſt moving power; and not only is the blood alive in itſelf, but ſeems to carry life every where; however, it is not ſimply the motion, but it is that which ariſes out of, or in conſequence of the motion. Here then would appear to be three parts, viz. body, blood, and motion; which latter preſerves the living union between the other too, or the life in both. Theſe three make up a complete body, out of which ariſes a principle of ſelf-motion; a motion totally ſpent upon the machine, or which may be ſaid to move in a circle, for the ſupport of the whole: for the body dies without the motion of the blood upon it; and the blood dies without the motion of the body upon it; perhaps, pretty nearly in equal times.

So far, I have conſidered the blood when compounded with the body and motion, in which we find it preſerves its fluidity, and continues life in the body; but fluidity is

only neceſſary for its motion to convey life, and the continuance of life is, probably, owing to its being coagulated, and becoming a ſolid; or at leaſt, the ſupport of the body is owing to this cauſe. For this, however, it requires reſt, either by extravaſation, or by being retained in the veſſels till the utility of circulating is loſt; or till it can anſwer ſome good purpoſe by its coagulation, as in mortification. Under any of theſe circumſtances it becomes a ſolid body; for the moment it is at reſt, it begins to form itſelf into a ſolid, and changes into this or that particular kind of ſubſtance, according to the ſtimulus of the ſurrounding parts which excites this coagulum into action, and makes it form within itſelf, blood, veſſels, nerves, etc.

The coagulation is the firſt ſtep towards its utility in the conſtitution, and this ariſes from its living principle; for if that principle be deſtroyed it does not coagulate at all, that is naturally; for I do not here ſpeak of any chemical coagulation.

I ſhall now endeavour to prove that the coagulation of the coagulating lymph bears ſome analogy to the actions of muſcles, which we know to depend upon life; and which affords one of the ſtrongeſt proofs of the exiſtence of this principle: and though the action of coagulation itſelf be not ſimilar to the actions of muſcles; yet, if we can ſhow that they are governed by the ſame laws, we may reaſonably conclude, that the firſt principle is the ſame in both. When I was treating of the coagulation of the lymph, I took notice that cold did not cauſe it, and ſupported the opinion by ſeveral experiments; at the ſame time I mentioned an experiment of Mr. Hewſon, to prove the ſame thing, and which he conceived to be concluſive, but which does not appear to me in any way to affect his hypotheſis. This experiment I had often made, but with another view, viz. to illuſtrate the living principle of the blood, which to me, it in ſome meaſure does, more eſpecially when compared with ſimilar experiments on living muſcles.

As the coagulation of the blood is a natural proceſs, and as all natural proceſſes have their time of action, unleſs influenced by ſome exciting cauſes, and ſince cold is not a cauſe of the blood's coagulation, even when removed out of the circulation, the blood may be frozen much more quickly than it can coagulate, by which change its coagulating power is ſuſpended. To prove this by experiment, I took a thin leaden veſſel, with a flat bottom, of ſome

width, and put it into a cold mixture below o, and allowed as much blood to run from a vein into it, as covered its bottom. The blood froze immediately, and when thawed, became fluid, and coagulated, I believe, as ſoon as it would have done had it never been frozen.

As the coagulation of the blood appears to be that proceſs which may be compared with the action of life in the ſolids, we ſhall examine this property a little further, and ſee if this power of coagulation can be deſtroyed; if it can, we ſhall next enquire, if by the ſame means life is deſtroyed in the ſolids; and if the phænomena are nearly the ſame in both. The prevention of coagulation may be effected by electricity, and often is by lightening: it takes place in ſome deaths, and is produced in ſome of the natural operations of the body; all of which I ſhall now conſider.

Animals killed by lightening, and alſo by electricity, have not their muſcles contracted: this ariſes from death being inſtantaneouſly produced in the muſcles, which therefore cannot be affected by any ſtimulus, nor conſequently by the ſtimulus of death. In ſuch caſes the blood does not coagulate. Animals who are run very hard, and killed in ſuch a ſtate, or what produces ſtill a greater effect, are run to death, have neither their muſcles contracted, nor their blood coagulated; and in both reſpects the effect is in proportion to the cauſe*.

I had two deer run, till they dropped down and died; in neither did I find the muſcles contracted, nor the blood coagulated.

In many kinds of death, we find that the muſcles neither contract, nor the blood coagulate. In ſome caſes the muſcles will contract while the blood continues fluid, in ſome the contrary happens; and in others the blood will only coagulate to the conſiſtence of cream.

Blows on the ſtomach kill immediately, and the muſcles do not contract, nor does the blood coagulate. Such deaths as prevent the contraction of the muſcles, or the coagulation of the blood, are, I believe, always ſudden. Death from ſudden guſts of paſſion, is of this kind; and in all theſe caſes the body ſoon putrifies after death. In many diſeaſes, if accurately attended to, we find this correſpondence between muſcles and blood; for where there is

* This is the reaſon why hunted animals are commonly more tender than thoſe that are ſhot.

ſtrong action going on, the muſcles contract ſtrongly after death, and the blood coagulates ſtrongly.

It is unneceſſary, I imagine, to relate particular inſtances of the effects of each of thoſe cauſes: I need only mention that I have ſeen them all. In a natural evacuation of blood, viz. menſtruation, it is neither ſimilar to blood taken from a vein of the ſame perſon, nor to that which is extravaſated by an accident in any other part of the body; but is a ſpecies of blood, changed, ſeparated, or thrown off from the common maſs, by an action of the veſſels of the uterus, ſimilar to that of ſecretion; by which action the blood loſes the principle of coagulation, and I ſuppoſe life.

The natural deduction from all theſe facts, and obſervations, I think is perfectly eaſy; it is impoſſible to miſs it.

This living principle in the blood, which I have endeavoured to ſhow to be ſimilar in its effects to the living principle in the ſolids, owes its exiſtence to the ſame matter which belongs to the other, and is the materia vitæ diffuſa, of which every part of an animal has its portion*: it is, as it were, diffuſed through the whole ſolids and fluids, making a neceſſary conſtituent part of them, and forming with them a perfect whole; giving to both the power of preſervation, the ſuſceptibility of impreſſion; and, from their conſtruction, giving them conſequent reciprocal action. This is the matter which principally compoſes the brain; and where there is a brain, there muſt neceſſarily be parts to connect it with the reſt of the body, which are the nerves; and as the uſe of the nerves is to continue, and therefore convey the impreſſion or action of the one to the other, theſe parts of communication muſt neceſſarily be of the ſame matter; for any other matter could not continue the ſame action.

From this it may be underſtood, that nothing material is conveyed from the brain, by the nerves; nor vice verſa, from the body to the brain: for if that was exactly the caſe, it would not be neceſſary for the nerves to be of the

* I conſider that ſomething ſimilar to the materials of the brain is diffuſed through the body, and even contained in the blood; between this and the brain a communication is kept up by the nerves; I have, therefore, adopted terms explanatory of this theory; calling the brain, the materia vitæ coacervata; the nerves, the chordæ internunciæ; and that diffuſed through the body, the materia vitæ diffuſa.

ſame materials with the brain; but as we find the nerves of the ſame materials, it is a preſumptive proof, that they only continue the ſame action which they receive at either end.

The blood has as much the materia vitæ as the ſolids, which keeps up that harmony between them; and as every part endued with this principle has a ſympathetic affection upon ſimple contact, ſo as to affect each other, (which I have called contiguous ſympathy) ſo the blood, and the body, are capable of affecting, and being affected, by each other; which accounts for that reciprocal influence which each has on the other. The blood being evidently compoſed of the ſame materials with the body, being endued with the ſame living powers, but from its unſettled ſtate, having no communication with the brain, is one of the ſtrongeſt proofs of the materia vitæ making part of the compoſition of the body, independent of the nerves; and is ſimilar, in this reſpect, to thoſe inferior order of animals that have no nerves, where every other principle of the animal is diffuſed through the whole. This opinion cannot be proved by experiment; but I think daily experience ſhows us, that the living principle in the body acts exactly upon the ſame principle with the brain. Every part of the body is ſuſceptible of impreſſion; and the materia vitæ, of every part, is thrown into action; which, if continued to the brain, produces ſenſation; but it may only be ſuch as to throw the part of impreſſion into ſuch actions as it is capable of, according to the kind of impreſſion; ſo does the brain or mind. The body loſes impreſſion by habit; ſo does the brain; it continues action from habit; ſo does the brain. The body, or parts of the body, have a recollection of former impreſſions, when impreſſed anew; ſo has the brain; but they have not ſpontaneous memory as the brain has, becauſe the brain is a complete whole of itſelf, and therefore its actions are complete in themſelves. The materia vitæ of the body being diffuſed, makes part of the body in which it exiſts and acts for this part, probably for this part alone. The whole, taken together, hardly makes a whole, ſo as to conſtitute what might be called an organ; the action of which is always for ſome other purpoſe than itſelf: but this is not the caſe with the brain. The brain is a maſs of this matter, not diffuſed through any thing, for the purpoſe of that thing, but conſtituting an organ in itſelf, the actions of which are for other purpoſes, viz. receiving, by

means of the nerves, the vaſt variety of actions in the diffuſed materia vitæ, which ariſe from impreſſion, and habit, combining theſe and diſtinguiſhing from what part they come. The whole of theſe actions form the mind; and, according to the reſult, impreſs more or leſs of the materia vitæ of the body in return, producing in ſuch parts conſequent actions. The brain then depends upon the body for its impreſſion, which is ſenſation; and the conſequent action is that of the mind: and the body depends upon the conſequence of this intelligence, or effect of this mind, called the will, to impreſs it to action; but ſuch are not ſpent upon itſelf, but are for other purpoſes, and are called voluntary.

But mere compoſition of matter does not give life; for the dead body has all the compoſition it ever had: life is a property we do not underſtand: we can only ſee the neceſſary leading ſteps towards it.

If nerves, either of themſelves, or from their connection with the brain, gave vitality to our ſolids, how ſhould a ſolid continue life, after a nerve is deſtroyed? or ſtill more, when paralytic? for the part continues to be nouriſhed, although not to the full health of voluntary action; and this nouriſhment is the blood; for deprive it of the blood, and it mortifies.

The uterus, in the time of pregnancy, increaſes in ſubſtance and ſize, probably fifty times beyond what it naturally is, and this increaſe is made up of living animal matter, which is capable of action within itſelf. I think we may ſuppoſe its action more than double; for the action of every individual part of this viſcus, as this period, is much increaſed, even beyond its increaſe of ſize; and yet we find that the nerves of this part, are not in the ſmalleſt degree increaſed. This ſhews that the nerves, and brain, have nothing to do with the actions of a part: while the veſſels, whoſe uſes are evident, increaſe in proportion to the increaſed ſize: if the ſame had taken place with the nerves, we ſhould have reaſoned from analogy. It is probably impoſſible to ſay where the living principle firſt begins in the blood: whether in the chyle itſelf, or not till that fluid mixes with the other blood, and receives its influence from the lungs. I am, however, rather inclined to think, that the chyle is itſelf alive; for we find it coagulates when extravaſated; it has the ſame powers of ſeparation with the blood; and it acquires its power of action in the

lungs as the venal blood does. I conceive this to be similar to the influence of the male and female on an egg, which requires air, and a due warmth, to produce the principle of action in it; and is somewhat similar to the venal blood coming to the lungs to receive new powers, which it communicates to the body. To endeavour to prove whether the chyle had the power of action in it, similar to the blood, I made the following experiment:

I opened the abdomen of a dog, and punctured one of the largest lacteals at the root of the mesentery, out of which flowed a good deal of chyle: I then allowed this part to come in contact with another part of the mesentery, to see if they would unite, as extravasated blood does; but they did not; however, this experiment, though performed twice, is not conclusive; for similar experiments with blood might not have succeeded.

From what has been said with regard to the blood, that it becomes a solid, when extravasated in the body, we must suppose that some material purpose is answered by it; for if the blood could only have been of use in a fluid state, its solidity would not have been so much an object with nature. It appears to me to be evident that its fluidity is only intended for its motion; and its motion is only to convey life, and living materials, to every part of the body. These materials when carried, become solid; so that solidity is the ultimate end of the blood, as blood.

The blood when it naturally increases the body, or repairs a part, may be said to be extravasated, although not commonly so considered; what is usually understood to be extravasation, is when it arises from accident of some kind, or disease in the vessel, and of course is obvious to the sight; but even this extravasation is of use by the blood coagulating, although too often it is in too large a quantity. Accident does not calculate the size of the vessel ruptured, to be just equal to the effect wanted by the rupture: but nature has made a wise provision for this overplus.

As extravasation arises from a rupture of the vessel, it is of service in the reunion of that vessel: if there are more solids ruptured than a vessel, as in a fracture of a bone, it becomes a bond of union to those parts; and this may be called, union by the first intention: but the union is not that of the two parts to each other, but the union of the broken parts to the intermediate extravasated blood; so that

it is the blood and parts uniting, which conſtitutes the union by the firſt intention.

This blood, ſo extravaſated, forms either veſſels in itſelf, or veſſels ſhoot out from the original ſurface of contact into it, forming an elongation of themſelves, as we have reaſon to ſuppoſe they do in granulations. I have reaſon, however, to believe that the coagulum has the power, under neceſſary circumſtances, to form veſſels in, and of itſelf; for I have already obſerved, that coagulation, although not organic, is ſtill of a peculiar form, ſtructure, or arrangement, ſo as to take on neceſſary action, which I ſhould ſuppoſe is ſomewhat ſimilar to muſcular action. I think I have been able to inject what I ſuſpected to be the beginning of a vaſcular formation in a coagulum, when it could not derive any veſſels from the ſurrounding parts. By injecting the crural artery of a ſtump, above the knee, where there was a ſmall piramidal coagulum, I have filled this coagulum with my injection, as if it had been cellular; but there was no regular ſtructure of veſſels. When I compare this appearance, with that of many violent inflammations on ſurfaces where the red blood is extravaſated, forming as it were ſpecks of extravaſation like ſtars; and which, when injected, produce the ſame appearance with what I have deſcribed in the injection of the coagulum: when I compare theſe again with the progreſs of vaſcularity in the membranes of the chick, one can perceive where a zone of ſpecks beyond the ſurface of regular veſſels cloſe to the chick, ſimilar to the above extravaſation, and which in a few hours become vaſcular, I conceive that theſe parts have a power of forming veſſels within themſelves, all of them acting upon the ſame principle. But where this coagulum can form an immediate union with the ſurrounding parts, it either receives veſſels at this ſurface, or forms veſſels firſt at this union, which communicate with thoſe of the ſurrounding ſurface; and they either ſhoot deeper, and deeper, or form veſſels deeper, and deeper, in the coagulum, till the whole meets in its centre: if it is by the firſt mode, viz. the ſhooting of veſſels from the ſurrounding ſurfaces into the coagulum, then it may be the ruptured veſſels in caſes of accident, which ſhoot into the coagulum, and where a coagulum, or extravaſation of coagulable lymph is thrown in between two ſurfaces only contiguous, there it may be the exhaling veſſels of thoſe ſurfaces which now become the veſſels of the part. In whatever way they meet

in the centre, they inſtantly embrace, unite, or inoſculate: now this is all perfectly, and eaſily conceived, among living parts, but not otherwiſe.

As the coagulum, whether wholly blood, or coagulating lymph alone, has the materia vitæ in its compoſition, which is the cauſe of all the above actions, it ſoon opens a communication with the mind, forming within itſelf, nerves. Nerves have not the power of forming themſelves into longer chords, as we conceive veſſels to have; for we know, that in the union of a cut nerve, where a piece has been taken out, it is by means of the blood forming a union of coagulum; and, that the coagulum gradually becomes more and more of the texture, and has, of courſe, more and more the uſe of a nerve, ſomewhat ſimilar to the gradual change of blood into a bone, in fractures.

It would appear then, that the blood is ſubſervient to two purpoſes in an animal: the one is the ſupport of the matter of the body when formed; the other is the ſupport of the different actions of the body.

VII. SOME UNCONNECTED EXPERIMENTS RESPECTING THE BLOOD.

THE following experiments have rather been imagined than fully executed, and the ſubject is rather broached and touched upon than proſecuted; but as I have not time, at preſent, to go through with the experiments, ſo as to arrive at ſome general reſult, I thought it better to bring forward, what, in my opinion, ſhould be done, than to omit the ſubject altogether*.

I wiſhed to ſee if blood that coagulated with an inflammatory cruſt putrified later than that which coagulated without it; for I conceived that the ſtrength of coagulation was ſomething ſimilar to the ſtrength of contraction in a muſ-

* Many of theſe experiments were repeated, by my deſire, by Dr. Phyſic, now of Philadelphia, when he acted as houſe-ſurgeon at St. George's Hoſpital, whoſe accuracy I could depend upon.

cle reſiſting putrifaction. For this purpoſe I ordered the following experiments to be made:

Experiment I. Four ounces of blood were taken from the arm, which, after coagulation, had the inflammatory cruſt upon its ſurface, and was alſo cupped.

Experiment II. On the ſame day, four ounces of blood were taken from another perſon's arm, which, on coagulating, ſhewed no inflammatory cruſt on its ſurface. Both theſe quantities of blood were kept, in order to ſee which would reſiſt putrifaction longeſt.

By the fourth day, that without buff was putrified; but the blood with the inflammatory cruſt did not putrify till the ſeventh day.

In theſe two experiments it would appear that the inflammatory blood preſerved its ſweetneſs longeſt; but, from a repetition of theſe experiments, it did not appear upon the whole that there was much difference.

To ſee whether the blood in a young perſon or an old one become ſooneſt putrid, I deſired that the following trials ſhould be made:

June 24t. Some blood was taken from a woman of twenty years of age, and its ſurface, after coagulation, was covered with an inflammatory cruſt.

On the ſame day, ſome blood was taken from a woman, aged ſixty, when the craſſamentum was alſo covered with an inflammatory cruſt.

Theſe quantities of blood were ſet by.

The blood from the old woman putrified in two days. That from the young woman kept quite ſweet till the fifth day, when it began to ſmell diſagreeably; in this ſtate it continued two days more, and then emitted the common odour of putrid blood.

Several experiments were made in the courſe of the ſummer, of a ſimilar nature with the laſt, in all which it appeared that the blood from young people, kept longer ſweet than that which was taken from the old.

Experiment III. In October, 1790, when the weather was cold, ſome blood was taken from two men, one of whom was ſeventy-five years of age, and the other eighty-three, about ſix ounces from each. The blood in each kept ſweet till the fifth day; but, on the ſixth, both quantities ſmelt equally putrid, which uniformly accords with the above experiment.

To see if recent blood or coagulated blood lost their heat soonest.

Experiment IV. Four ounces of blood, after coagulation, was heated till it raised the mercury of a thermometer, placed in the middle of the coagulum to the 98th degree. The thermometer was put into a similar quantity of blood, immediately after it was taken from the vein, and the mercury stood at 90°. These were placed by each other, and the thermometer put alternately into each, to observe how they parted with their heat.

Coagulated blood.....98°	Recent blood..... 90°
Do. after two minutes....97°	Do. after two minutes..89°
Do. after four do. more...93°	Do. after four do. more88°
Do. after two do. more...92°	Do. after two do. more coagulated.....87°
Do. after two do. more...91°	Do. after two do. more86°

This experiment was not accurately made, for the two bloods should have been of the same temperature, because the warmer any body is, the faster it will lose its heat to any neighbouring colder body; yet I believe that the coagulated blood lost its heat faster than the fluid blood.

To see whether a stimulus can be applied to the blood, so as to make it coagulate faster than it does naturally, I desired the following experiment to be made:

Three ounces of blood were taken from a boy about ten years of age, and immediately after, the cup was put into water heated to 150°. A similar quantity was taken in another cup from the same boy, at the same time, which was put into water heated only to 48°. The first coagulated completely in five minutes, but the latter remained quite fluid for twenty minutes, and then began to coagulate, but was not completely coagulated for five minutes more. When looking at each portion of blood an hour afterwards, it appeared that the blood which coagulated in the warmest water, had the greatest proportion of serum, and the least of crassamentum; but by next morning, the serum in each was equal in quantity, and the crassamentum of equal size.

This experiment shews that heat above the natural standard, acts as a stimulus upon the blood, and makes it coa-

gulate conſiderably ſooner than cold does, though not more firmly. This heat did not act as heat upon the blood, but only as the ſtimulus; for heat acting as heat would alſo have coagulated the ſerum, which was not the caſe.

This experiment, or a ſimilar one, is brought forward as one of the proofs of the living principles of the blood, where it is contraſted with a ſimilar experiment on living muſcles.

To ſee whether blood, when mixed with different ſubſtances in ſtrong ſolution, and which appeared to prevent coagulation, would, when diluted with water, admit of coagulation.

In December, half an ounce of blood, immediately after it was taken from the arm, was mixed with one pound of water. This was intended as a ſtandard to judge of the others.

More blood was taken from the ſame perſon at the ſame time, to which a ſtrong ſolution of Glauber's ſalts was added; this altered its colour to a florid red, and was found to prevent it from coagulating. A ſtrong ſolution of Glauber's ſalts, therefore, has the power of preventing the coagulation of the blood. Ten minutes after this mixture, half an ounce of it was mixed with one pound of water; half an hour after, another half ounce was mixed with one pound of water; at the end of an hour, the ſame was done, and alſo after two hours; all theſe were allowed to ſtand twenty-four hours, when the pure blood and water had depoſited a conſiderable dark coloured ſediment, and a light coloured blood was ſuſpended, which had begun to ſubſide, leaving the fluid above perfectly tranſparent, and of a beautiful red colour. The different portions of blood which had been firſt mixed with the ſalt, and afterwards with water, had the cloud exactly like that of the pure blood, but there was no ſediment whatever at the bottom of the veſſel: this cloud gradually ſubſided, and left the fluid above of a beautiful red colour, and alſo quite tranſparent. At this time, (viz. twenty-four hours after the mixture of the ſalt with the blood) another half ounce was mixed with one pound of water, and next day the appearances were exactly ſimilar to what have been already deſcribed.

The ſediment in the pure blood was moſt probably the coagulating lymph; and as there was none in the others,

it is moſt likely that the lymph in them did not now coagulate.

As medicines, when taken into the circulation, whether by the ſtomach or by the ſkin, produce conſiderable effects on the conſtitution, I wiſhed to know what effect ſuch ſubſtances would have upon the blood, with regard to the act and power of its coagulation.

Two ounces of blood were received from the arm into a veſſel, as a ſtandard of natural coagulation.

Two ounces more were taken in another veſſel, to which one ounce of water was added. The intention of this addition was to put this blood in the ſame circumſtances with blood in other comparative trials, reſpecting water, ſo that the difference, if there was any, muſt belong to the ſubſtance mixed with the blood, independent of the water.

Two ounces more blood were received in another veſſel, to which was added one ounce of the decoction of bark.

Theſe different quantities were taken from one perſon, one after the other in the ſame order in which they are here ſet down. After ſix minutes, the blood mixed with water was quite coagulated: after nine minutes, that mixed with the decoction of Peruvian-bark formed a looſe coagulum: after twelve minutes, the blood firſt drawn coagulated: the coagula of the firſt and ſecond drawn blood were equally firm; the water in the ſecond having been ſqueezed out along with the ſerum; but that mixed with the decoction of bark was much leſs ſo. It appears from theſe experiments, that water rather haſtened coagulation, but made it neither firmer or looſer in the texture.

In the following experiments, the blood was firſt all received into one veſſel, and ſtirred before it was mixed with the different ſubſtances.

The intention of this was, that the three portions of blood might all be exactly under the ſame circumſtances.

Two ounces were poured into a veſſel as a ſtandard of natural coagulation.

Two ounces more of blood were poured into another veſſel, to which was added two ounces of water, as in the former experiment. Two ounces more were mixed with two ounces of the decoction of bark: after twelve minutes the two firſt were coagulated, and the coagula were equally firm: after fourteen minutes, that with the decoction of bark coagulated, but the coagulum was very looſe. Upon

comparing the three coagula next day, that which had the decoction of bark mixed with it, was by much the leaſt firm.

This experiment was repeated, and the reſult was nearly the ſame; and it ſhews, that even putting equal parts of water and blood together, did not alter the time, or the firmneſs of coagulation; but that the decoction of bark evidently did.

Some blood was taken from the arm into a baſon, ſtirred, and then mixed with different infuſions, as follows:

Two ounces were mixed with the ſame quantity of the infuſion of columba-root.

Two ounces, with the ſame quantity of the infuſion of gentian; two more, with two ounces of the watery ſolution of opium; and two ounces were kept in a veſſel by themſelves.

The blood which had been mixed with the bitter infuſions, and the ſimple blood, all coagulated at the ſame time, viz. in ſix minutes; but that which had been mixed with the infuſion of gentian was firmer than with the infuſion of columba-root, but was not more firm than the coagulum of the ſimple blood. The blood which had been mixed with the ſolution of opium did not coagulate for twelve minutes, and then the coagulum was very looſe.

This experiment, with the opium, was repeated, and the reſult was exactly the ſame.

Of extraneous matter in the blood.

Whatever is diſſolved in the blood muſt be only diffuſed through it, not chemically combined with it, otherwiſe the nature of the blood itſelf would be altered, and the effect of medicine deſtroyed. The blood can receive and retain extraneous matter, capable of deſtroying the ſolids, by ſtimulating to action ſo as to deſtroy them.

Extraneous matter in the blood is capable of altering the chemical properties of the ſolids, in thoſe who work in lead, as is evident in the following caſe:

Morgan, a houſe-painter, who had been paralytic in his hands and legs for a conſiderable time, was thrown down, and had his thigh-bone broken juſt below the little trochanter. The upper end of the inferior portion had paſſed over the outſide of the other, and moved with the knee, ſo that the end of the lower bone was taken for the great trochanter; but I diſcovered the fracture, by extending the

leg, and got the portions of bone in their places, and bound up the limb with a wroller. It went on well for near a fortnight, only his hands ſwelling at times, which gave way to fomentations; in the third week he grew very ill, became low, had a kind of lethargy, a great deal of blood came out of his mouth, he ſunk ſtill lower, and died about three weeks after the accident.

On examining the body after death, the muſcles, particularly thoſe of the arms, had loſt their natural colour; but inſtead of being ligamentous and ſemitranſparent, as happens in common paralyſis, they were opaque, reſembling exactly, in appearance, parts ſteeped in a ſolution of Goulard's extract. From this caſe it appears the lead had been evidently carried along with the blood, even into the muſcles themſelves.

CHAPTER II.

OF THE VASCULAR SYSTEM.

I. GENERAL OBSERVATIONS ON MUSCULAR CONTRACTION AND ELASTICITY.

IT is not my preſent intention to explain all the circumſtances connected with muſcular contraction and relaxation, nor that other power of action introduced into an animal body, called elaſticity. I propoſe only to ſtate a few of the facts which throw ſome light upon the vaſcular ſyſtem, by ſhewing that there is in veſſels a power of muſcular action; and that the co-operation of elaſticity is alſo neceſſary to their function; theſe may likewiſe aſſiſt in explaining the manner in which the two powers are combined; I may, however, occaſionally be led to mention cauſes and effects, which cannot be immediately conſidered as applicable to the veſſels themſelves, though they will render many of the phenomena in the vaſcular ſyſtem more eaſy to be underſtood.

The common action of a muſcle, from which its immediate uſe is derived, is its contraction; and the effect produced by it, is that of bringing the origin and inſertion, or the parts which it is fitted, to move nearer each other*; which is univerſally the caſe whether the muſcle is ſtraight, hollow, or circular. It is likewiſe neceſſary that a muſcle ſhould relax, or be capable of relaxation; a condition which allows it to be ſtretched, by permitting the parts acted upon to recede from each other. Muſcles, in common, probably, with every other part of the body, have a power of

* I do not here conſider the circumflex tendons; for, by the origin and inſection, I mean the muſcular ends of the fibres.

adapting themſelves to the neceſſary diſtance between origin and inſertion, in caſe an alteration has taken place in the natural diſtance; and I have reaſon to believe, that under certain circumſtances, they have a power of becoming longer, almoſt immediately, than they are in the natural relaxed, or even the natural elongated ſtate of their fibres. This opinion will be beſt illuſtrated in inflammation.

Muſcular contraction has been generally ſuppoſed to ariſe from ſome impreſſion, which is commonly called, a ſtimulus; I doubt, however, of an impreſſion being always neceſſary; and I believe that in many caſes the ceſſation of an accuſtomed impulſe may become the cauſe of contraction in a muſcle. The ſphincter iridis of the eye contracts when there is too much light; but the radii contract when there is little or no light. I can even conceive that a ceſſation of action requires its ſtimulus to produce it, which may be called, the ſtimulus of ceſſation; for relaxation is not the ſtate into which a muſcle will naturally fall upon the removal of a continued ſtimulus; a muſcle remaining contracted after abſolute death, when the ſtimulus of relaxation cannot be applied; ſo that a muſcle can as little relax after death, as it can contract. If a ſtone is raiſed, and the raiſing power removed, it falls; but it would not fall if not acted upon. When it has fallen it lies at reſt, but ſo it would have done, when raiſed, if gravitation would have allowed it. The ſtone is paſſive and muſt be acted upon. Whatever becomes a ſtimulus to one ſet of muſcles, becomes a cauſe of relaxation to thoſe which act in a contrary direction*; and whatever becomes a ſtimulus to one part of a muſcular canal, where a ſucceſſion of actions is to take place, becomes alſo a cauſe of relaxation in the part beyond it, as in an inteſtine.

Muſcular contraction, in ſome of the involuntary muſcles, does not conſtantly ariſe from immediate ſtimuli, as in the ſphincters; for the ſphincter ani contracts whenever the ſtimulus of relaxation is removed, which may be ſaid to produce the ſtimulus for contraction.

Muſcular actions have been divided into the voluntary, involuntary, and mixed, which is only dividing them ac-

* This might be called a ſympathetic ſtimulus, and is that which regulates the actions of the whole machine; and which I have called, in another place the ſtimulus of neceſſity.

cording to the different natural modes of ſtimuli, or cauſes of their action: to theſe a fourth might be added, where the actions are in conſequence of accidental ſtimuli or impreſſions, to which both the voluntary and involuntary muſcles are ſubject, viz. ſuch as ariſe from affections of the mind*, or are the immediate effects of violence.

The involuntary contraction ſhould be firſt conſidered, as the more neceſſary operations of the machine are carried on by it; for the machine could even exiſt independent of any voluntary contraction; but it could not go on if left wholly to the voluntary contraction of the muſcles, unleſs we were endued with innate ideas capable of producing a will. This involuntary contraction is very extenſive in the ſyſtem, and is employed in carrying on a number of operations, of which the circulation is one; and which may ſaid to be, in a great meaſure, the œconomy of the animal within itſelf.

The mixed kind of contraction is moſt to our preſent purpoſe, and is of two kinds, though it has been in general ſuppoſed to be of one kind only, and that belonging ſolely to the muſcles of reſpiration, as being in them the moſt conſpicuous. But in fact, we find another mode of involuntary actions in other muſcles of the body where it anſwers very uſeful purpoſes. In theſe the involuntary contraction may be reckoned the natural ſtate; and it is a kind of permanent contraction, theſe muſcles only relaxing occaſionally; by which means parts are ſuſtained or ſupported; the voluntary contraction of ſuch muſcles is alſo only occaſional. All ſphincter muſcles in ſome degree partake of this power, and therefore ſhould be called, muſcles with power of occaſional relaxation. For although many circular muſcles may not have theſe mixed contractions, as the orbicularis palpebrarum; yet that muſcle has a diſpoſition to contract peculiar to itſelf. Its relaxation is to be reckoned of the active kind, which may be called, the relaxation of watchfulneſs, and it is when tired of this ſpecies of action that it contracts; which, on the contrary, may be called, the contraction of ſleep: or it may be conſidered as an elongator muſcle to the levator palpebræ, with a diſpoſition to remain relaxed while that muſcle is contracted; but contracting when the elevator is tired. The na-

* Mind and Will are often blended together, but Will has nothing to do here.

tural contraction of the orbicularis muſcle is involuntary; the relaxation, both natural and occaſional is involuntary; but it has likewiſe a voluntary contraction and relaxation, which can be made to exceed the involuntary, reſembling what is inherent in all the ſphincters.

Sphincter muſcles, as thoſe of the anus and urethra, and probably the expulſatores, ſeminis, and crura of the diaphragm, have both a voluntary and involuntary contraction. In the two ſphincters of the anus and urethra this is evident; and the involuntary contraction in theſe muſcles I have called, ſphinctoric. The ſphincter ani poſſeſſes it to a degree juſt ſufficient to reſiſt the preſſure of the air and fœces, while the parts above are inactive, preventing the eſcape of theſe, till they give the ſtimulus for expulſion, and then an involuntary relaxation naturally takes place, ſimilar to what happens in muſcular canals.

The ſphinctoric contraction reſembles, in its effects, that produced by elaſtic ligaments in other parts of the body, which action may be called, contractile elaſticity, as bringing back the parts to a certain neceſſary ſtate, and retaining them there. But elaſticity would not here have anſwered all the purpoſes, ſince, as it has no relaxing power, more force would have been required to overcome its reſiſtence in the expulſion of the fœces than the gut above could have been able to exert. But the ſuſtaining power being muſcular contraction, a relaxation or ceſſation of that contraction during the time of expulſion, leaves nothing for the fœces to do; but, by means of the action above, ſimply to dilate the relaxed parts. There is, likewiſe, in theſe muſcles, a ſtill further power of contraction, which is produced by the will, and for the purpoſe of giving on particular occaſions greater force than what is commonly neceſſary. The voluntary action of theſe muſcles is, therefore, we find more powerful than the involuntary; but upon the whole I think we have reaſon to ſuppoſe, that the involuntary muſcles are much ſtronger than the voluntary. Can we believe that ſo thin a muſcle as the colon of a horſe could ſqueeze out its contents, conſiſting of a column of dung about eight inches diameter, if thoſe involuntary muſcles had no more ſtrength than the muſcles of an extremity? When we ſee the bladder of urine throwing out its contents through a large tube, to a diſtance perhaps two yards beyond its extreme end, we muſt ſuppoſe a much greater

force exerted than could belong to any ſuch quantity of voluntary muſcle. For I believe that by graſping the bladder with both hands we could not make the water flow out to an equal diſtance. It may be here obſerved, that the power of involuntary contraction commonly remains longer than that of the voluntary, though I believe not in all inſtances; which difference produces a greater variety in the former, than in the latter. Thus the muſcular action of the arteries is longer retained than that of the heart.

Elaſticity is a property of matter (whether animal or not) which renders it capable of reſtoring itſelf to its natural poſition, after having been acted upon by ſome mechanical power, but having no power of action ariſing out of itſelf; this is exactly the reverſe of muſcular contraction. Muſcles, as has been already obſerved, have the power of contraction and of ceſſation, which laſt is called, relaxation; but not the power of elongation, which would be an act of reſtoration, ſuch as exiſts in elaſticity. A muſcle, therefore, has the power of action within itſelf, by which it produces its effects, but is obliged to other powers for its reſtoration, ſo as to be able to act again; whereas elaſticity is obliged to other powers to alter the poſition of the parts, ſo as to require recovery or reſtoration; but this it is capable of doing itſelf, and by this power it produces its effects, becoming a cauſe of motion in other bodies. A body poſſeſſed of this property, when brought from the ſtate of reſt, is always endeavouring to arrive at this ſtate, which it alſo endeavours to preſerve; and it is capable of ſupporting itſelf in this ſtate in proportion to the degree of elaſticity which may belong to it.

The action of elaſticity is continual, and its immediate effects are produced whenever the reſiſtance is removed; by which it may be diſtinguiſhed from other powers. Elaſtic matter can neither be extended beyond its ſtate of reſt, or brought within it. Thus a ſpring being bent, its concave ſide is brought within this ſtate, and the convex ſide is carried beyond it: when under theſe circumſtances it is left to itſelf, both ſides endeavour to reſtore themſelves. The power of an elaſtic body is permanent, always acting with a force proportioned to the power applied, and therefore reacts as the body is elongated, bent, or compreſſed; but this is very different from the action of a muſcle, as this laſt may act with its full force, or only part, or not at all,

according to circumſtances. Elaſticity*, which has the power of reſiſting the action of other parts, as well as of reſtoring the ſubſtance endowed with it, when forcibly removed from a ſtate of reſt, is introduced into an animal body, in order to co-operate in many reſpects with the muſcles, and ſo to act as to reſtore or fit them for a new action, becoming in many caſes antagoniſts to the muſcles, which will be deſcribed when we ſpeak of the combination of the two.

II. GENERAL OBSERVATIONS ON THE ELONGATION OF RELAXED MUSCLES.

Every thing in nature that has the power of action has two kinds of motion exerted alternately, and a ſtate of reſt. Of the former the one may be called, the active; the other, the ſtate of recovery. In a muſcle the active is the ſtate of contraction; the other, the ſtate of relaxation: the ſtate of reſt is merely the ſtate of inaction. The contractile ſtate of a muſcle, as well as the relaxed, ariſes from a power inherent in itſelf: but the recovery, or elongation, muſt depend on ſome other power.

Simple relaxation of a contracted muſcle is not ſufficient to enable it to produce another requiſite effect; it is, therefore, neceſſary that there ſhould be an elongator equal to the quantity of contraction intended to be produced: and as no muſcle has the power of extending itſelf into what I ſhall call, the ſtate of recovery, an elongater of ſome kind or other is required, to enable every muſcle to produce its effect, by a renewal of contraction. This, although in ſome reſpects ſimilar to the winding up of a clock, in others differs

* It is to be obſerved, that elaſticity in animals does not, like muſcular contraction, depend on life; an elaſtic body poſſeſſing that quality as perfectly after death as before. Elaſticity admits of two actions, a contraction, when the ſubſtance is extended beyond the natural ſtate, and an extenſion, when it is compreſſed within it; both theſe is poſſeſſed by the elaſtic parts which compoſe the vaſcular ſyſtem; whereas, muſcles have but one action, or, at leaſt, but one which can produce an immediate effect, and that is contraction.

materially from it. For the muſcle being capable of relaxing itſelf, there is no reſiſtence to overcome, except the vis inertiæ and friction of the matter to be removed: whereas in the clock, the power that winds it up muſt be greater than the ſpring or weight, to be capable of overcoming the gravity of the weight, or the elaſticity of the ſpring, together with the vis inertiæ.

The elongation of muſcles is not the immediate cauſe of their relaxation, but the effect of a contrary and neceſſary motion of the elongaters, by which they are recovered ſo as to be enabled to renew their action with effect.

The elongaters, or powers which enable muſcles to recover themſelves, are not always muſcular; for when ſimple elongation is required, is is effected by other means, as elaſticity, which is the caſe, in part, in the blood-veſſels; and ſometimes by motion in matter foreign to the body, yet propelled either by muſcles or elaſticity, as is alſo the caſe in blood-veſſels. The elongaters may be divided into three kinds, with their compounds.

The firſt kind is muſcular, and theſe may either act immediately, or they may act on ſome other ſubſtance, by which action that ſubſtance becomes the immediate cauſe of the elongation. Thoſe which act immediately, and become elongaters to other muſcles by their contraction are in turn elongated by the contraction of theſe very muſcles, to which they ſerved as elongaters; the two ſets thus becoming reciprocally elongaters to each other. This is the caſe with the greater part of the muſcles in the body, and in ſome muſcles, as the occipito, frontalis, two different portions are reciprocally elongaters; yet theſe may ſtrictly be conſidered as two muſcles; for although there is no interruption, in the tendon they move the ſame part in two oppoſite directions, like diſtinct antagoniſt muſcles.

Theſe reciprocal elongaters, by their mutual action on each other, bring out a middle ſtate between the extremes of contraction and elongation, which is the ſtate of eaſe, or tone, in both. This appears not to be ſo much required for the eaſe of the relaxed muſcle, as for that of the part moved; either extreme of motion leaving the muſcle in an uneaſy ſtate. We find, therefore, that as ſoon as any ſet of muſcles ceaſe to act, the elongaters which were ſtretched during their action, are ſtimulated either by this ceſſation, or by the uneaſy ſtate into which the parts moved have been put, they act to bring theſe parts into a ſtate the furtheſt re-

moved from the extremes which were uneaſy, and by which the ſtimulus ariſing from both is equally balanced.

This, however, can only happen in ſuch parts of the body as are furniſhed with muſcular elongaters; where theſe are wanting, the muſcles of the part having but one office, their ſtate of eaſe is that of ſimple relaxation, as they can have no middle ſtate from the action of antagoniſts, but ſuch are commonly muſcular parts, or ſo conſtructed as not to be thrown into an uneaſy poſition by the action of their muſcles. I ſuppoſe, however, that an elongated ſtate in a muſcle is an uneaſy ſtate; a muſcle, therefore, that is ſtretched, although in a relaxed ſtate, is uneaſy and will contract a certain length, to what is probably the middle ſtate.

It is ſtill neceſſary that ſuch parts as are ſimply muſcular, and having no antagoniſt muſcles appropriated immediately for ſuch purpoſes ſhould have their muſcles elongated; this is ſtill performed by muſcles, but in a ſecondary way; for inſtance, by a ſucceſſion of actions in different parts, each performing the ſame effect, the laſt action becoming an antagoniſt to the ſucceeding.

The ſecond mode of elongation takes place in all the muſcles which aſſiſt in forming canals. In them the muſcles, if once contracted, cannot be elongated, or the part dilated again; but by the contraction of ſome other part of the canal, propelling its contents into the relaxed part, and by that means ſerving as an elongater. This, in ſome inſtances, goes on in regular ſucceſſion, as we know the dilatation of the fauces to be occaſioned by the action of the mouth and tongue; that of the œſophagus, by the contraction of the fauces; of the ſtomach, by that of the œſophagus; the upper part of the inteſtines by the ſtomach, and ſo on; the ſucceſſive contractions of the laſt dilated parts puſhing on the contents, and in that manner becoming elongaters of the muſcles next in ſucceſſion of action. A firſt propelling power, ſuch as a heart, could in theſe inſtances have had but little effect, and would even have been unneceſſary; for as there muſt be a ſucceſſion of contractions and dilatations, its power would ſoon have been loſt. This mode of propelling ſubſtances through canals, as ſtated above, would probably have been too ſlow for the circulation in many animals; but I believe is very much the caſe in others.

The elongation of the muſcles of the bladder, from the diſtention of urine, becomes the means by which they are excited to recover themſelves ſo as to renew their action, and may be referred to the ſame general head.

The third kind is by means of elaſtic ſubſtances: which render the combined actions produced by muſcular contraction and elaſticity more complicated. Elaſticity we find to be introduced both as an aſſiſtant to the contraction of the muſcles, and as an antagoniſt or elongater; the natural poſition being that which is produced by the elaſticity. Thus we ſee elaſticity combined with muſcular action aſſiſting in the contraction of muſcles on one ſide, and likewiſe performing the office of elongaters or antagoniſts on the oppoſite, by bringing parts, which have been moved by muſcles, back into their natural poſition. Such parts too as have yielded to the action of ſome other power, as gravitation, are brought back into what may be called, a natural ſtate, and are retained there by elaſticity, till that power is again overcome by another, as in the necks of ſome animals. We may hence ſee that the application of thoſe powers is twofold; one, where the muſcles and elaſtic ſubſtances aſſiſt each other; the ſecond, where they are antagoniſts, the elaſtic being neither aſſiſted by the muſcular parts, nor the muſcular by the elaſtic: for many parts of the body are ſo conſtructed, as to admit of but one kind of muſcular action, the other action ariſing from elaſticity alone; it being neceſſary that ſuch parts ſhould have a determined or middle ſtate, though not intended as a ſtate of eaſe.

Of this kind are the blood-veſſels, trachea, bronchia, the ears of animals, etc. in which therefore elaſticity is introduced to procure that determined ſtate, and is chiefly employed where the middle ſtate is much limited. For it is to be obſerved, that the middle ſtate, when produced by muſcular action, has not commonly a determined point of reſt, but admits of conſiderable latitude between the two extremes; except in the ſphincters. Where it is produced by elaſticity, it is always more determined, provided the elaſticity has ſufficient power to overcome the natural or accidental reſiſtance; and where that is the caſe, we muſt ſuppoſe that a ſtate in ſome degree determined was neceſſary to ſuch parts. But where the elaſtic power is not ſufficient to overcome the natural, or accidental reſiſtance, then it is aſſiſted by the muſcular, which forms one of the compounds

of the three modes of elongation; inſtances of which we have in many joints.

The relaxed ſtate of a muſcle would appear in general to be the moſt natural; but to this there are exceptions; a degree of contraction appearing natural to ſome muſcles.

The face, for inſtance, is a part where the action of the muſcles on one ſide influences the poſition of the parts on the other ſide; a circumſtance, perhaps, peculiar to the face; here, therefore, the muſcles bring and keep the ſkin in one poſition, till altered by an increaſed action in ſome other muſcle; and when this increaſed action ceaſes, the conſtant and natural contraction of the whole (ſimilar to that of the ſphincter) immediately takes place *.

Sphincter muſcles are the moſt remarkable inſtances of this, being always above three parts contracted †.

The conſtant and regular degree of contraction in thoſe ſphincter muſcles, ſerves the purpoſes of elaſticity, and may have ſuperior advantages; as we know that they have a power of relaxing when their elongaters act, which no elaſtic ſubſtance can have. Hence, we ſee, that where a continued action only is wanted, there is elaſticity: where an alternate action and relaxation, there is the action of muſcles; where only an occaſional relaxing power is required, there are muſcles under under certain reſtrictions; and where a conſtant power of contraction is neceſſary, but which is occaſionally to be overcome by muſcles, there are introduced both elaſticity and muſcular powers co-operating with each other in their actions.

Where conſtant action is not neceſſary, muſcles alone are employed, as in the greater number of moving parts in moſt animals; and where any poſition is required to be conſtant, and the motion only occaſional, from being ſeldom wanted, their elaſticity alone is employed for the purpoſe

* As a proof that this is muſcular contraction, and not elaſticity, we find that the face in a dead body does not keep its natural form, nor reſume it when loſt.

† The parts ſupplied with ſphincters, do not contract after being dilated in the dead body, which they certainly would do if the contraction in the living body had ariſen from elaſticity.

of conſtant poſition, and muſcles for the occaſional action*.

When a poſition is to be pretty conſtant yet elaſtic ſubſtances are not employed, we have muſcles endowed with the power of conſtant contraction to a certain degree, but capable of either relaxation, or a greater contraction, as in the ſphincters.

We find, therefore, that in many parts of an animal body fitted for motion, a tolerably conſtant poſition is neceſſary, at the ſame time that an occaſional ſelf-moving power is alſo wanted, to ſerve as a ſort of auxiliary to the performance of the neceſſary action. For ſuch occaſional actions, muſcles, aſſiſted by elaſtic ſubſtances, are employed; the elaſtic power eaſing the muſcles in the fixed poſition, and the muſcular giving the increaſed occaſional action; and in other parts of the body, where a more conſtant action was wanted, and could not be completely obtained by elaſticity, there are to be found muſcles endowed with the property of both permanent and occaſional contraction.

The elaſtic power is very remarkable in ſuch parts of an animal body as require a conſtant effort to ſupport them elaſticity being introduced to act againſt the power of gravitation, as in the necks of animals whoſe heads are held horizontally, or beyond the centre of gravity. This is effected by an elaſtic ligament, and is ſtrikingly illuſtrated in the camel, whoſe neck is long. Between the vertebræ of the neck and backs of fowls, are placed elaſtic ligaments for the ſame purpoſe; the wings of birds and bats are alſo furniſhed with them, by which means they are retained cloſe to the body when not uſed in flying. On the abdomen of moſt quadrupeds are likewiſe to be found elaſtic ligaments, eſpecially on that of the elephant, which is a conſtant ſupport to the parts in their horizontal poſition, and even the cellular membrane of the elephant has a degree of elaſticity much above what is generally met with in cellular membranes. Hence there is leſs expence of muſcu-

* Some bibalves (as the oyſter) have a ſtrong muſcle paſſing between the ſhells for cloſing them occaſionally; but for opening them no muſcles are made uſe of, as this is performed by an elaſtic ligament in the joint of the two ſhells, which is ſqueezed, when ſhut, by the contraction of the muſcle; and when the muſcle ceaſes to contract, the elaſticity of the ligament expands it, ſo that the ſhell is opened.

lar conntraction in ſuch parts. The thrachea and its branches are inſtances of theſe two powers; being compoſed of cartilages, muſcles, and membranes, the proportion of muſcular ſubſtance, however, is ſmall, the muſcles which act principally upon this part being thoſe of reſpiration; but the tendency of the action of the proper muſcles of the trachea is to compreſs and alter the ſize of the trachea; this is counteracted by the elaſticity of the cartilages, and membranes, exerting a conſtant and regular endeavour to keep it of one certain ſize.

The external ears of many animals furniſh us with another inſtance of the joint application of theſe two powers; for being chiefly compoſed of elaſtic cartilage, they retain a general uniformity of ſhape, although that is capable of being altered occaſionally by the action of the muſcles.

It is however to be obſerved, that in all caſes where theſe two powers are joined, the muſcular, as it can always act in oppoſition to the elaſtic, muſt be the ſtrongeſt and capable of being carried further than the other; it therefore muſt always be proportionably ſtronger than it otherwiſe need to have been.

Parts in which theſe two powers are employed, are capable of being in either three ſtates, the natural, the ſtretched, and the contracted; but in ſome parts the natural ſtate may coincide either with the ſtretched, or contracted, and conſequently ſuch parts are only capable of being in two ſtates. The natural ſtate is produced by the elaſtic power ſimply, the contracted is the effect of the muſcular power alone, and the ſtretched is produced either by ſome foreign force or body protruded, which may be effected by a muſcular power.

III. OF THE STRUCTURE OF ARTERIES.

THE arteries in an animal, as far as we can examine them, are endowed with the property of elaſticity, the uſe of which we perceive in the action of thoſe parts; and this power is at all times demonſtrable, while the muſcular has been by ſome overlooked, by others denied, and has only been aſſerted by others as appearing neceſſary by reaſoning from analogy.

The quantity of elaſticity in any artery, on which an experiment can be made, is eaſily aſcertained, as it only requires the application of an oppoſing force, to prove both its power and extent. But it will appear from experiment, that the power varies according to the diſtance from the heart, being greateſt at the heart; while probably the extent may be the ſame in every artery.

To endeavour to aſcertain the elaſticity of arteries, I made comparative experiments on the aorta and pulmonary artery. Having cut off a portion of about an inch in length from the aſcending aorta, at half an inch above the valves, and having ſlit it up, it meaſured, tranſverſely, two inches and three quarters, but when ſtretched to its full length, three inches and three quarters, having gained rather more than one third, and having required a force equal to the weight of one pound ten ounces to produce this effect. A ſimilar ſection was made of the pulmonary artery in the ſame ſubject, which meaſured two inches one half, tranſverſely; and when ſubjected to trial in the ſame manner, was ſtretched to three inches and an half, being rather more in proportion than the aorta; ſo that the pulmonary artery appears to have rather more elaſticity than the aorta. It is not impoſſible that this difference might ariſe from the aorta having loſt ſome of its elaſticity by uſe; for although I choſe for my experiment the arteries of a young man, where I conceived them to be perfectly ſound, yet if there could have been any diminution of the elaſticity from uſe, it would be moſt conſiderable in the aorta.

Theſe experiments were made on different arteries with nearly the ſame reſult, and ſeemed to prove that there was almoſt the ſame extent of elaſticity, though not the ſame powers.

An artery being compoſed of an elaſtic and inelaſtic ſubſtance, its elaſticity is not altogether ſimilar to that of a

body which is wholly elaſtic. There is an effect produced from ſtretching it that is expreſſive of the nature of both theſe ſubſtances, till it gives way or breaks; for an artery has a check to its yielding to ſo great a degree, and is ſtopt at once, when ſtretched to a certain point*, which check is occaſioned probably by the muſcular, together with the internal inelaſtic coat.

To prove the muſcularity of an artery, it is only neceſſary to compare its action with that of elaſtic ſubſtances.

Action in an elaſtic body can only be produced by a mechanical power; but muſcles acting upon another principle, can act quickly or ſlowly, much or little, according to the ſtimulus applied; though all muſcles do not act alike in this reſpect.

If an artery is cut through or laid bare, it will be found that it contracts by degrees till the whole cavity is cloſed; but if it be allowed to remain in this contracted ſtate till after the death of the animal, and be then dilated beyond the ſtate of reſt of elaſtic ſubſtances, it will only contract to the degree of that ſtate; this it will do immediately, but the contraction will not be equal to that of which it was capable while alive.

The poſterior tibial artery of a dog being laid bare, and its ſize attended to, it was obſerved to be ſo much contracted in a ſhort time as almoſt to prevent the blood from paſſing through it, and when divided, the blood only oozed out from the orifice.

On laying bare the carotid and crural arteries, and obſerving what took place in them while the animal was allowed to bleed to death, theſe arteries very evidently became ſmaller and ſmaller.

When the various uſes of arteries is conſidered, ſuch as their forming different parts of the body out of the blood, their performing the different ſecretions, their allowing at one time the blood to paſs readily into the ſmaller branches, as in bluſhing, and at another preventing it altogether, as in paleneſs from fear; and if to theſe we add the power of producing a diſeaſed increaſe of any or every part of the body, we cannot but conclude that they are poſſeſſed of muſcular powers.

The influence of the heart in the body, like that of the ſun in the planetary ſyſtem, we know extends to every part;

* This gives a determined ſize to an artery.

all the parts of the vaſcular ſyſtem being ſupplied according to the neceſſity it has, though every part is not equally endowed with power, or diſpoſition to make uſe of that power.

The arteries, upon the whole, may be ſaid to poſſeſs conſiderable living powers, and to retain them for a long time. This is evident when we obſerve what muſt happen in tranſplanting a living part of one body with an intention that it ſhould unite with another body and become a part of it: the part tranſplanted muſt retain life till it can unite ſo as to receive its nouriſhment from that into which it has been inſerted. It is however to be ſuppoſed, that in ſuch ſituations, life can be retained longer than in others, although it is well known that it is preſerved in the vaſcular ſyſtem, even when there is no colateral aſſiſtance. I found in the uterus of a cow, which had been ſeparated from the animal above twenty-four hours, that after its having been injected and allowed to ſtand another day, the larger veſſels were become much more turgid than when I firſt injected them, and that the ſmaller arteries had contracted ſo as to force the injection back into the larger. This contraction was ſo obvious that it could not but be obſerved at the time, which was forty-eight hours after the ſeparation from the body of the animal.

This ſhews too the muſcular power of the ſmaller arteries to be ſuperior to that of the larger, and that it is probably continued longer after the ſeparation from the body; a property which the involuntary muſcles poſſeſs to a degree greater than the voluntary, in the former of which claſſes the muſcular ſtructure of the arteries is to be conſidered.

To aſcertain how long the living power exiſted in an artery after ſeparation from the body, or, perhaps, to ſpeak more properly, after that communication with the body was cut off, by which we have reaſon to ſuppoſe life to be continued in a part, I made the following experiments, for which I choſe the umbilical arteries, becauſe I could confine the blood in them, and keep them diſtended for any length of time. In a woman delivered on the Thurſday afternoon, the naval ſtring was ſeparated from the fœtus; it was firſt tied in two places and cut between, ſo that the blood contained in the chord and placenta was confined in them.

The placenta came away full of blood; and on Friday morning, the day after, I tied a ſtring round the chord about an inch below the other ligature, that the blood might ſtill be confined in the placenta and remaining chord. Having cut off this piece, the blood immediately guſhed out, and by examining the cut ends of the chord, I attentively obſerved to what degree the ends of the arteries were open; and the blood having now all eſcaped from this portion, the veſſels were left to contract with the whole of their elaſtic power, the effect of which is immediate.

Saturday morning, the day after this laſt part of the experiment, having examined the mouths of the arteries, I found them cloſed up, ſo that the muſcular coat had contracted in the twenty-four hours to ſuch a degree as to cloſe entirely the area of the artery. That ſame morning I repeated the experiment of Friday, and on Sunday morning obſerved the reſult of this ſecond experiment to be ſimilar to that of the former.

On this morning, Sunday, I repeated this experiment the third time, and on Monday obſerved that the reſult had not been the ſame as before, the mouths of the arteries remaining open; which ſhewed that the artery was become dead.

There was but little alteration perceived in the orifices of the veins in all the experiments.

Theſe experiments ſhew that the veſſels of the chord have the power of contraction above two days after ſeparation from the body.

Having given a general idea of muſcular action, including muſcular relaxation, together with the union of the muſcular and elaſtic power in an animal, I ſhall now apply them to the arteries.

There are three ſtates in which an artery is found, viz. the natural previous ſtate, the ſtretched, and the contracted ſtate which may or may not be previous.

The natural previous ſtate is that to which the elaſtic power naturally brings a veſſel which has been ſtretched beyond or contracted within the extent which it held in a ſtate of reſt.

The ſtretched is that ſtate produced by the impulſe of the blood in conſequence of the contraction of the heart; from which it is again brought back to the natural ſtate by the elaſtic power, perhaps aſſiſted by the muſcular.

The contracted ſtate of an artery ariſes from the action of the muſcular power, and is again reſtored to the natural ſtate by the elaſtic. It has been ſhewn that certain muſcles have both a voluntary and involuntary contraction, and that in ſome of theſe the involuntary action having brought the part to a neceſſary poſition, ſupports it in that ſtate till it be either neceſſary for the muſcle to relax, or for the voluntary action to take place; inſtances of which I have given in the ſphincter muſcles.

I ſhall now endeavour to ſhew that the arteries have a middle ſtate; but that in them the power of bringing the coats into a certain poſition and ſuſtaining them in it, is not the effect of a muſcular but of an elaſtic power; and that the muſcular action, both in contraction and relaxation, is involuntary.

In parts endowed with conſiderable elaſtic powers, although not apparently muſcular, as many arteries, but which we yet know from other modes of information to be poſſeſſed of muſcular power, elaſticity is ſo combined as to produce a middle or natural ſtate, by acting to a certain degree only as an elongater of the muſcular part in ſome of its actions*.

These two powers, muſcular and elaſtic, are probably introduced into the vaſcular ſyſtem of all animals, the parts themſelves being compoſed of ſubſtances of this deſcription, together with a fine inner membrane, which I believe to be but little elaſtic, and this membrane is more apparent in the larger than in the ſmaller ramifications; although when we conſider the conſtruction and uſe of the arteries, we muſt at once ſee the neceſſity of their having theſe two powers; yet in the greateſt number it is impoſſible to give clear occular demonſtration of the exiſtence of diſtinct muſcular fibres. But ſtill, as arteries are evidently compoſed of two diſtinct ſubſtances, one of which is demonſtrably elaſtic, and we know them likewiſe to be certainly endowed with the power of contraction peculiar to a muſcle, it is reaſonable to ſuppoſe the other ſubſtance to be muſcular; I ſhall endeavour alſo to prove its exiſtence in ſuch veſſels, from their having a power of contraction in the action of death.

* We can hardly ſuppoſe that the muſcular coat of the artery aſſiſts the elaſtic in bringing it to the middle ſtate when already contracted within it.

As the human body is always alluded to in this account, I ſhall found my experiments and obſervations on ſuch animals only as have a ſimilar ſtructure, as in other animals, as the turtle, alligator, &c. we can plainly diſcern muſcular fibres, the inſides of the arteries and veins being evidently faſciculated with them.

Every part of the vaſcular ſyſtem is not equally furniſhed with muſcular fibres; ſome parts being almoſt wholly compoſed of the elaſtic ſubſtance, ſuch as the larger veſſels, eſpecially the arteries, in which, were they equally muſcular with the ſmaller veſſels, the exiſtence of muſcular fibres might be more eaſily proved. Neither does the elaſtic ſubſtance equally prevail in every part, for many, eſpecially the ſmaller arteries, or what have been called, the capillary veſſels, appear to be almoſt entirely muſcular; at leaſt I am led to think ſo by my obſervations and experiments on that ſubject. From theſe I have diſcovered that the larger arteries poſſeſs little muſcular powers, but that as they recede from the heart towards the extremities, the muſcular power is gradually increaſed, and the elaſtic diminiſhed. Hence I imagine there may exiſt a ſize of veſſels totally void of elaſticity; but this I ſhould conceive to be in the very extremities only. For it is to be obſerved, that every portion of an artery, of a conſiderable length, is capable of aſſuming the middle ſtate, which ſtate muſt be referred to the elaſtic power.

The greateſt part of the arterial ſyſtem evidently appears to be compoſed of two ſubſtances, which ſtructure is moſt remarkable in the middle ſized arteries, where the two ſubſtances are more equally divided, and where the ſize admits of a viſible diſtinction of parts. The beſt method to ſee this is to cut the veſſels either acroſs or longitudinally, and to look upon the edges that have been cut.

If the aorta be treated in this way, we ſhall find that though it appears to be compoſed of one ſubſtance, yet towards the inner ſurface it is darker in colour, and of a ſtructure which differs, although but in a ſmall degree, from that of the outer ſurface.

If we proceed by this mode of inveſtigation, following the courſe of the circulation, we ſhall find that the internal and external parts become evidently more diſtinguiſhable from each other: the internal part which is darker, but with a degree of tranſparency, begins almoſt inſenſibly

in the larger veſſels, and increaſes proportionably in thickneſs, as the arteries divide, and of courſe become ſmaller, while the external, being of a white colour, is gradually diminiſhing, but in a greater degree, according to the diminution of ſize in the artery, and of the increaſed thickneſs of the other coat, ſo that the two do not bear the ſame proportion to each other in the ſmall arteries, as in the larger.

The diſproportion, however, between them appears greater than it really is, ſome deception ariſing from the greater muſcular power, poſſeſſed by the ſmaller arteries, in conſequence of which the inner coat will be more contracted, and therefore ſeem thicker. This circumſtance alone makes the difference of thickneſs between the whole coats of a large artery, and thoſe of a ſmall one, appear leſs than it really is; accordingly we find the coats of the humeral artery in the horſe apparently thicker than the coats of the auxillary, the coats of the radial as thick as thoſe of the humeral, and the artery near the hoof as thick in its coats as any of the others. There is yet another circumſtance which alſo deſerves attention in comparing the two coats, namely, that in many places, but eſpecially at the ſurfaces of contact in the elaſtic and muſcular ſubſtances of the middle ſized arteries, the fibres of the muſcular and elaſtic are very much blended or intermixed. I mention this, becauſe otherwiſe we might be led to draw falſe concluſions, with regard to the comparative quantity of each ſubſtance; and, becauſe it explains by what means both theſe coats are made elaſtic.

The external coat, however, is more ſo than the internal, being compoſed almoſt entirely of elaſtic ſubſtance, while the internal has a mixture of muſcular with its elaſtic fibres. As there is, therefore, a difference in the elaſtic power of the two coats, there muſt be a difference in their powers of contraction after death; for inſtance, the external coat contracting more than the internal, and alſo, as there is a difference between the muſcular and elaſtic powers of contraction, the muſcular having the greateſt, there muſt have been a difference between the contracting powers of theſe two coats during life, but contrary to that which takes place after death.

In thoſe arteries, which are evidently compoſed of two diſtinct ſubſtances, eſpecially in the ſmaller, we may obſerve two very oppoſite appearances, according as the

elaſtic or muſcular coats have contracted moſt. In the one, when we make a tranſverſe ſection, and look upon the cut end, we may obſerve that the inner ſurface has been thrown into rugæ, ſo as to fill up the whole cavity; and if ſuch an artery be ſlit up longitudinally, ſo as to expoſe its inner ſurface, we ſhall find that inner ſurface forming wrinkles, which are principally longitudinal. If the finger is paſſed over that ſurface, it feels hard, while the external is ſoft; but if the artery be ſtretched, and allowed to recover itſelf by its elaſticity, which is the only power it now has, it will be felt equally ſoft on both ſurfaces, and its coats will be found to have become thinner than before. On the contrary, I have obſerved in many of the ſmaller arteries, when the muſcular contraction has been conſiderable, the external or elaſtic coat to be thrown into longitudinal inequalities, from not having an equal power of contraction with the muſcular, an artery under ſuch circumſtances being to the touch as hard as a cord. But if the muſcular contraction be deſtroyed by ſtretching, or paſſing ſomething through the artery, then it becomes very ſoft and pliant, and the muſcular coat having once been ſtretched, without having the power of contracting again, is thrown into irregularities by the action of the elaſtic.

The elaſtic coat of an artery is fibrous, and the direction of its fibres is principally tranſverſe or circular; but where a branch is going off, or at the diviſion of an artery into two, the direction of the fibres is very irregular. I cannot ſay that I have found any fibres which are to a great degree oblique or longitudinal, a circumſtance that ſhews their ſimple elaſticity to be equal to the intention or uſe, a tranſverſe or circular direction of fibres not being the moſt advantageous for producing the greateſt effect*. They are alſo elaſtic laterally, from the direction of their fibres, which property ſhortens the artery when elongated by the blood; and I believe the muſcles have little ſhare in this action; the whole of which tends to ſhew that the elaſtic power is equal to the taſk of producing, and really does produce the natural ſtate of the artery. What the direction of the muſcular fibres may be, I never could diſcover,

* This is a principle in mechanics ſo well known, that it need not here be explained; we find it happily introduced in the diſpoſition of muſcles in various parts of the body.

but ſhould ſuppoſe them oblique, becauſe the degree of contraction appears greater than a ſtraight muſcle could produce, in which light a circular muſcle is to be conſidered, as its effects are in the direction of its fibres; for either the diameter or the circumference of the artery will decreaſe in the ſame proportion, but not the area, which will decreaſe in proportion to the ſquare of the diameter.

We ſhould naturally ſuppoſe that where the action of the heart is ſtrong, elaſticity is the beſt property to ſuſtain its force; and that where the force and elaſticity are well proportioned, no miſchief can enſue. Where the force, therefore, of the heart is greateſt there is a degree of elaſticity, which yields with reluctance, and conſtantly endeavours to oppoſe and counteract that force.

From theſe active powers of an artery, together with a foreign power, viz. the blood acting upon them in a manner ſomewhat ſimilar to the common action of fluids in canals, protruding their contents, we may perceive that there are three actions which take place, all of them, operating in concert with each other, and producing one ultimate effect.

As the filling of the cavity of an artery produces an extenſion of its coats in every direction, the arteries are endowed with the elaſtic power, which, by contracting in all directions, may bring the veſſels back again to their natural ſtate.

The action of the muſcular power being principally in a tranſverſe direction, tends, when the artery is extended, to leſſen its diameter, and aſſiſt the elaſtic power; but as its quantity of contraction is ſuperior to that of the elaſtic power, it does or may contract the artery within what the latter could effect. When the muſcular action ceaſes, elaſticity will be exerted to dilate the veſſel and reſtore it to a middle ſtate again, becoming the elongater or antagoniſt of the muſcular coat, and by that means fitting it for a new action as deſcribed in other parts of the body. This will be moſt evident in the middle ſized veſſels; for in the ſmaller, the proportion of elaſtic ſubſtance is not ſo conſiderable, and therefore it will contribute leſs to the dilatation of the veſſel, when the muſcular coat relaxes. Yet we muſt ſuppoſe that no veſſel, even to its very extremity, is ever entirely collapſed; but that it poſſeſſes an elaſtic power ſufficient to give it a middle ſtate. Although theſe differences do not in all caſes bear the ſame proportion to the ſize of the artery, yet we muſt conclude there is in the

arteries themselves a certain regular proportion preserved; and I am inclined to believe, that this is in some degree in an inverse proportion to the decrease of size, presuming at the same time that the muscular power increases in the same proportion. A vessel is stretched beyond its natural state, first by the force of the heart, and in succession by the first order of vessels; then it is that the elastic power is exerted to contract the vessel, and restore it to the natural size; and in the performance of this it will be more or less assisted by the muscular power, according to the size of the vessels; least in the larger, and most in the smaller vessels, as was observed above.

There appears to be no muscular power capable of contracting an artery in its length, the whole of that contraction being produced by the elasticity. For in a transverse section of an artery, made when the muscles of the vessel are in a contracted state, it may always be observed, that the external or elastic coat, immediately contracts longitudinally, and leaves the internal or muscular projecting; which would not be the case if there was a longitudinal muscular contraction, equal to the elastic; and were not the quantity of muscular contraction greater than the elastic there would be no occasion for muscles.

Another proof of this is, that if a piece of contracted artery be stretched transversly, or have its area increased and be allowed to recover itself, it loses a part of its length. To understand this it will be necessary to know that muscular fibres, by contraction, become thicker, and in proportion corresponding with the degree of contraction in the muscle.

The thickening in the muscle of a horse was found to be an increase of one fourth part of thickness to one third of a contraction*; from which it follows, that the more the muscular fibres of any vessel contract, the more the vessel is lengthened; but destroy the muscular contraction by dilating the artery, and the elastic power, which acts in all directions, will immediately take place and restore the vessel to its proper size; which is a proof that the effect of the lateral swell, produced by the muscular contraction, is greater than that of the longitudinal elasticity of the artery.

* This calculation is not accurate; for in the experiments made to discover if the muscle lost of its size in the whole when contracted, I found it hardly did; therefore what it lost in length, it must have acquired in thickness.

If we examine how much the veſſel has loſt of its length in this trial, we ſhall find it will amount to about one twelfth of the whole; a proof that the internal coat does not contract ſo much longitudinally by its muſcular power, as the external does by its elaſticity. By multiplying ſuch experiments we have further proofs that the power of muſcular contraction acts chiefly in a circular direction; for in a longitudinal ſection of an artery in its contracted ſtate, the internal coat does not project as in a tranſverſe ſection, both coats remaining equal, or rather indeed the elaſtic coat projects beyond the other, from the internal muſcular coat having contracted moſt. But if this ſection be ſtretched tranſverſely, the external coat then contracts and leaves the internal moſt projecting; becauſe the internal or muſcular has now no power of contraction. If the tranſverſe extention be repeated, and to a greater degree, the artery, when allowed to recover itſelf, will have its inſide turned outwards, as well as bent longitudinally, having the inſide of the artery on the outſide of the curve, and often bringing the two ends together; but this is eaſily accounted for, as by the tranſverſe extention of the artery its muſcular contraction is deſtroyed, it becomes pliant, and the only reſiſtance to the elaſtic power on this ſide being removed, it is allowed to exert itſelf to its utmoſt extent. In doing this it bends the ſection in a longitudinal direction, which alſo inclines us to believe, that the external part of the elaſtic coat, is the moſt elaſtic.

Theſe experiments not only prove that the muſcular power of an artery, acts chiefly in a tranſverſe direction; but alſo, that the elaſtic power exiſts almoſt entirely in the external coat, and therefore that the internal coat muſt be the ſeat of the muſcular power.

EXPERIMENTS on the arteries of a horſe bled to death.

To aſcertain the muſcular power of contraction in the arteries, and determine the proportions which it bears to their elaſticity, I made the following experiments upon the aorta, iliac, axillary, carotid, crural, humeral, and radial arteries of a horſe.

In this animal the muſcles were all allowed equally to contract, and therefore we might reaſonably preſume that the veſſels (at leaſt ſuch of them as were furniſhed with muſcles) would alſo be contracted, the ſtimulus of death acting equally upon muſcles in every form, and every ſitua-

tion. The animal had alſo been bled to death, ſo that the veſſels had an additional ſtimulus to produce contraction in them; as we know that all veſſels in animals endeavour as much as poſſible to adapt themſelves to the quantity of fluid circulating through them.

As I ſuppoſed the larger arteries had leſs of this power than the ſmaller, and that perhaps in an inverſe proportion to their ſize, in order to aſcertain that fact, and alſo to contraſt the two powers, I made my firſt experiments upon the aorta and its neareſt branches; continuing them on the other branches as theſe became ſmaller and ſmaller.

The arteries were taken out of the body with great care, ſo as not in the leaſt to alter their texture, or ſtate of contraction.

The experiments were made in the following manner: I took ſhort ſections of the different arteries, ſlit them up in a longitudinal direction, and in that ſtate meaſured the breadth of each, by which means as I conceived, I could aſcertain their muſcular contraction; then taking the ſame ſections and ſtretching them tranſverſly, I meaſured them in that ſtate, which gave me the greateſt elongation their muſcular, and elaſtic powers were capable of. As by this extention I had entirely deſtroyed their muſcular contraction; whatever degree of contraction they exerted afterwards muſt, I believe, have been owing to elaſticity. Having allowed them to contract, I again meaſured them a third time in that ſtate, and thus aſcertained three different ſtates of veſſels, between which I could compare the difference either in the ſame or different ſections, ſo as from the reſult to deduce with ſome degree of certainty the extent of theſe powers in every ſize of veſſel. I ſay only with ſome degree of certainty; for I do not pretend to affirm that theſe experiments will always be exact; circumſtances often happening in the body which prevent the ſtimulus of death from taking place with equal effect in every part. I have accordingly ſeen in the ſame artery ſome parts wider than others, even when the more contracted parts were neareſt the heart, and this merely from a difference of action in the muſcular power; for when that was deſtroyed by ſtretching, the parts contracted equally in both.

Experiment I. A circular ſection of the aorta aſcendens when ſlit up and opened into a plane, meaſured five inches and a half; on being ſtretched, it lengthened to ten inches and a half; the ſtretching power being removed, it contract-

ed again to six inches, which we must suppose to be the middle state of the vessel. Hence the vessel appeared to have gained by stretching half an inch in width or rather circumference, which may be attributed to the relaxation of its muscular fibres, whose contraction must have been equal to one-eleventh part; six inches being the natural size, or most contracted state of the elastic power.

Experiment II. A circular section of the aorta at the origin of the first intercostal artery, measuring four inches one-fourth, extended by stretching to seven inches and one-half; it contracted again to four inches and one half, and therefore gained one-seventeenth part.

Experiment III. A circular section of the aorta at the lower part of the thorax, on being stretched, and being allowed to contract again gained one-tenth part.

Experiment IV. A circular section of the iliac artery, measuring two inches, when stretched and allowed to contract again, measured two inches and four-twelfths, and therefore gained one-sixth.

Experiment V. A circular section of the axillery artery, measuring one inch, when stretched and contracted again, measured an inch and one-eight, therefore gained one-eighth.

Experiment VI. A circular section of the carotid artery, measuring six-twelfths of an inch, when stretched, measured sixteen-twelfths and one-half; and when contracted again, ten-twelfths; therefore had gained two-thirds.

Experiment VII. A circular section of the crural artery, measuring ten-twelfths, when contracted after being stretched, measured one inch and two-twelfths, therefore gained one-third.

Experiment VIII. The humeral artery, near the joint of the elbow, in a contracted state, was thicker in its coats than the axillary; the circumference of the artery in that state being seven twelfths and one-half; after being stretched and contracted again, it measured nine-twelfths, therefore gained one-seventh and one-half.

Experiment IX. A circular section of the radial artery being taken, was found so contracted as hardly to be at all pervious; and the coats, especially the inner, much thicker than even the humeral: when slit up it scarcely measured three-twelfths of an inch; when stretched, and allowed to contract again, six-twelfths; therefore gained three-

twelfths of an inch, which was about the whole contraction of the artery.

To ſee how far this power of recovery in the ſame artery took place at different diſtances from the ſource of the circulation, I made the following experiments on the ſpermatic artery of a bull; and likewiſe, on the artery of the fore-leg and penis. The ſpermatic artery, near the aorta, when ſtretched longitudinally, recovered perfectly the former length; when ſtretched tranſverſly, it likewiſe recovered perfectly. About the middle, when ſtretched tranſverſly, it gained one-twelfth. Upon the teſticle a portion ſeparated; when ſtretched tranſverſly gained one-fourth, which was its muſcular power.

The humeral portion of the artery of the fore-leg, when ſtretched tranſverſly, and alſo longitudinally, recovered entirely.

The artery of one hoof, or rather finger, when ſtretched tranſverſly, gained one-twentieth, when ſtretched longitudinally it recovered perfectly; which one-twentieth was the muſcular power.

The artery of the penis, when ſtretched longitudinally, or tranſverſly, recovered itſelf perfectly. This artery is conſiderably more elaſtic longitudinally than the others, but not more tranſverſly. This increaſed elaſticity in the longitudinal direction maybe intended to allow of the difference in the length of the penis at different times.

From theſe experiments we ſee that the power of recovery in a veſſel is greater in proportion as it is nearer to the heart; but as it becomes more diſtant it leſſens; which ſhews the decreaſe of the elaſtic, and the increaſe of the muſcular power.

	Stretched to	Recovered to	Had contracted by death
Aorta aſcendens	5 $\frac{6}{12}$ inch.	10 $\frac{6}{12}$ inch.	6 inch. $\frac{1}{11}$ part.
Aorta deſcendens at firſt intercoſtal,	4 $\frac{1}{4}$	7 $\frac{6}{12}$	4 $\frac{6}{12}$ $\frac{1}{11}$
Aorta deſcendens at the loweſt part,			$\frac{1}{10}$
Illiac artery	2	2 $\frac{4}{12}$	$\frac{1}{6}$
Axillery	1	1 $\frac{1}{8}$	$\frac{3}{8}$

Carotid - - - - - $\frac{6}{12}$ - - - - - $1\frac{4}{12}\frac{1}{2}$ - - $\frac{10}{12}$ - - - $\frac{7}{8}$
Crural . . . $\frac{10}{12}$ . . . . . $1\frac{2}{12}$ . . $\frac{1}{8}$
Humeral . . . $\frac{7}{12}\frac{1}{2}$ . . . . . $\frac{9}{12}$ . . $\frac{1}{7}\frac{1}{2}$
Radial . . . $\frac{3}{12}$ . . . . . $\frac{6}{12}$ equal to the whole.

Experiments on the power of arteries to contract longitudinally.

To prove that arteries do not produce the ſame power of muſcular contraction in a longitudinal, which they do in a tranſverſe direction, the following experiments were made:

Experiment I. A longitudinal ſection of the aorta aſcendens, meaſuring two inches, when ſtretched and allowed again to contract, meaſured the ſame length.

Experiment II. A longitudinal ſection of the aorta deſcendens at the lower part of the thorax, of a given length, after having been ſtretched, contracted exactly the ſame length.

Experiment III. Two inches of the ſame carotid artery uſed in the ſixth experiment, when ſtretched longitudinally, recovered itſelf, ſo as not to be longer than before the experiment.

Experiment IV. A portion of that humeral artery uſed in the eighth of the former experiments was not altered in its original length, when it recovered itſelf after being ſtretched.

Theſe experiments appear to be deciſive, and prove that the muſcular power acts chiefly in a tranſverſe direction; yet it is to be obſerved that the elaſtic power of arteries is greater in a longitudinal than in a tranſverſe direction. This appears to be intended to counteract the lengthening effect of the heart, as well as that ariſing from the action of the muſcular coat; for the tranſverſe contraction of that coat lengthens the artery, therefore ſtretches the elaſtic, which again contracts upon the diaſtole of the artery.

From the account we have given of thoſe ſubſtances which compoſe an artery, we may perceive it has two powers, the one elaſtic and the other muſcular. We ſee alſo that the larger arteries are principally endowed with the elaſtic power, and the ſmaller with the muſcular, that the elaſtic is always gradually diminiſhing in the ſmaller, and the muſcular increaſing, till, at laſt, probably, the action of an artery is almoſt wholly muſcular; yet I think it is not

to be ſuppoſed but that ſome degree of elaſticity is continued to the extremity of an artery; for the middle ſtate cannot be procured without it; and I conceive the middle ſtate to be eſſential to every part of an artery. Let us now apply thoſe two powers of action; or, to ſpeak more properly of re-action, with their different proportions in the different parts of the arterial ſyſtem. From theſe we muſt ſuppoſe the elaſtic to be beſt fitted for ſuſtaining a force applied to it, ſuch as the motion of the blood given by the heart, and propelling it along the veſſel: the muſcular power, moſt probably, is required to aſſiſt in continuing that motion, the force of the heart being partly ſpent; but certainly was intended to diſpoſe of the blood when arrived at its place of deſtination; for elaſticity can neither aſſiſt in the one nor the other; it is ſtill, however, of uſe through the whole to preſerve the middle ſtate. Elaſticity it better adapted to ſuſtain a force than muſcular power; for an elaſtic body recovers itſelf again, whenever the ſtretching cauſe ſuſpends its action; while muſcles endeavour to adapt themſelves to circumſtances as they ariſe. This is verified by different ſorts of engines whoſe pipes are made of different metals. A pipe made of lead will, for inſtance in time dilate and become uſeleſs*; whereas a pipe of iron will react on the fluid, if the force of the fluid be in proportion to the elaſtic power of the iron; but the lead having little or no elaſticity whenever it is ſtretched, it will remain ſo, and every new force will ſtretch it more and more. We are therefore to ſuppoſe that the force of the heart is not capable of ſtretching the artery ſo much as to deſtroy its elaſticity; or in other words, the force of the heart is not able to dilate the artery beyond the contracting power. As the motion of the blood is mechanical, elaſticity is beſt adapted to take off the immediate force of the heart; and, as we go from the heart, this property become leſs neceſſary; becauſe in this courſe, the influence of the heart is gradually leſſened, by which means a more equal motion of the blood is immediately produced, and even in the firſt artery a continued ſtream is at all times obtained; although it is conſiderably increaſed by each contraction of the heart. Without this power the motion of the blood in the aorta

* This accounts for the ſize of aneuriſms whoſe coats muſt have loſt their elaſticity before they could be dilated.

would have been ſimilar to what it is in its paſſage out of the heart, and would have been nearly the ſame in every part of the arterial ſyſtem.

For though the motion of the blood out of the heart be by interrupted jerks, yet the whole arterial tube being more or leſs elaſtic, the motion of the blood becomes gradually more uniform from this cauſe. Elaſticity in arteries acts like a pair of double bellows; although their motion be alternate, the ſtream of air is continued; and if it were to paſs through a long elaſtic pipe, reſembling an artery, the current of air would be ſtill more uniform. The advantage ariſing from elaſticity in the arterial ſyſtem, will be more complete in the young ſubject than in the old; for in the latter, the elaſticity of the arteries being very conſiderably diminiſhed, more eſpecially in the larger trunks, where the force of the heart ought to be broken, the blood will be thrown into the ſecond and third order of veſſels with increaſed velocity. In the young, the current is ſlower, from the re-action of the elaſtic power during the relaxed ſtate of the heart, whereas at the heart, the motion is equal to the contraction of the heart; and as the heart is probably twice the time relaxing that it is in contracting, from this cauſe alone we may ſuppoſe the whole is two thirds leſs in the ſmaller veſſels. As elaſtic bodies, I have already obſerved, have a middle ſtate, or ſtate of reſt, to which they return after having been dilated or contracted by any other power, and as they muſt always be acted upon before they can re-act, the uſe of elaſticity in the arterial ſyſtem will be very evident. It is by this means that the veſſels are adapted to the different motions of the body, flexion and extention; ſo that one ſide of an artery contracts while the other is elongated; and the canal is always open for the reception of blood in the curved, ſtretched, or relaxed ſtate.

The muſcular power of an artery renders a ſmaller force of the heart ſufficient for the purpoſes of circulation; for the heart need only act with ſuch force as to carry the blood through the larger arteries, and then the muſcular power of the arteries takes it up, and, as it were, removes the load of blood while the heart is dilating. In confirmation of this remark, it is obſervable in animals whoſe arteries are very muſcular, that the heart is proportionably weaker, ſo that the muſcular portion of the veſſels becomes a ſecond part to the heart, acting where the power of the heart begins

to fail, and increaſing in ſtrength as that decreaſes in power. Beſides this, it diſpoſes of ſuch part of the blood as is neceſſary for the animal œconomy, principally in growth, repair, and ſecretions. At the extreme ends of the arteries, therefore, we muſt ſuppoſe that their actions are varied from that of ſimply conveying blood, except thoſe arteries which are continued into veins.

IV. OF THE VASA ARTERIARUM.

THE arteries are furniſhed with both arteries and veins, although it cannot be ſaid that they are to appearance very vaſcular. Their arteries come from neighbouring veſſels, and not from the artery itſelf which they ſupply.

This we ſee in diſſection; and I found by filling an artery, ſuch as the carotid, with fine injection, that ſtill the arteries of the artery were not injected. On laying the coats of arteries bare in the living body we can diſcern their veſſels more evidently ſome little time after the expoſure, for then they become veſſels conveying red blood, as in a beginning inflammation, growing turgid, when the arteries may be eaſily diſcerned from the veins by the difference of colour of the blood in each: theſe obſervations will alſo generally apply to the correſponding veins.

Perhaps arteries afford the moſt ſtriking inſtance of animal ſubſtance furniſhed with two powers exiſting in the ſame part, one to reſiſt mechanical impulſe, the other to produce action. The firſt of theſe powers is greateſt where there is the moſt impulſe to reſiſt; therefore we find it particularly in the arteries, neareſt to the heart, the better to ſupport the force of that organ; but in thoſe parts where gravitation is gradually increaſing, the diminution of power in the artery is not in proportion to the diminution of the force of the heart.

In the veins, the allotment of ſtrength is commonly the reverſe; for as they have nothing mechanical to reſiſt, but the effect of gravitation, their principal ſtrength is at the extremities.

We are to ſuppoſe that the power of the heart, and the mechanical ſtrength of the arteries, bear a juſt proportion to each other; and therefore by aſcertaining the laſt we may give a tolerable good gueſs with reſpect to the other.

In this view, to determine the ſtrength of the ventricles, ſo far as I was able, I made comparative trials of the ſtrength of the aorta and pulmonary arteries in a healthy young man. I ſeparated a circular ſection of each, and on being ſlit, they meaſured three inches and three-eights, their breadths being alſo equal. On trial I found the aorta being ſtretched to near five inches, broke with a weight of eight pounds. The pulmonary artery ſtretched to near five inches and a half, and then broke with four pounds, twelve ounces.

This experiment I have repeated, but with very different reſults, for in one experiment, although the aorta took one pound ten ounces to ſtretch it, while the pulmonary artery took only ſix ounces; yet to break this pulmonary artery required eleven pounds, three ounces, while the aorta broke with ten pounds, four ounces; but this difference I impute to the aorta having loſt its elaſticity, which is very apt to happen in that veſſel.

There is nearly the ſame proportion of elaſticity in both arteries; but the ſtrength of the aorta in the firſt experiment appeared to be nearly double that of the pulmonary artery; while in the ſecond it was leſs: yet we muſt ſuppoſe the reſult of the firſt experiment nearer the truth; for we ſeldom find the pulmonary artery diſeaſed, while the aorta is ſeldom otherwiſe.

The mechanical ſtrength of arteries is much greater in the trunk than in the branches; which is evident from accidents and from injections in dead bodies. For when we inject arteries with too much force, the firſt extravaſation takes place in in the ſmaller veſſels. This can only be proved by ſubtile injections, which do not become ſolid by cold; ſuch injections keeping up an equal preſſure throughout the arterial ſyſtem; and the ſmaller arteries being found to give way firſt, viz. thoſe of the muſcles, pia-mater, and the cellular membrane; which contradicts Haller's theory of the relative ſtrength of the coats of the veſſels.

I am however inclined to ſuppoſe that they are even weaker in proportion to their ſize, viz. in proportion to the diminiſhed force of the heart, or motion of the blood; but how far this is the caſe I will not venture to determine

as mechanical ſtrength is not ſo much wanted in the ſmaller arteries, as muſcular; for the mechanical ſtrength of muſcles appear to be leſs than the power of their own contraction; experiments, therefore, made in the dead body upon parts whoſe uſes ariſe from an action within themſelves when active are not concluſive. The flexor policis longus, being one of the moſt detached muſcles in the body reſpecting ſtructure and uſe, has been ſelected for experiments on this ſubject, and is found to raiſe by its action a greater weight than it can ſuſtain after death. This however is liable to fallacy, as the two experiments are made on different muſcles, one certainly healthy, the other moſt probably weakened by the diſeaſe preceeding death.

The coats of arteries are not equally ſtrong on all ſides of the ſame artery; at the bending of a joint they are ſtrongeſt on the convex ſide through the whole length of the curve; this is moſt evident in the permanent curves, ſuch as in the great curvature of the aorta. Arteries are likewiſe ſtrongeſt at the ſharp angles made by a trunk and its branch, and at an angle formed by a trunk divided into two.

Theſe parts have the blood as it were daſhing againſt them. Thoſe likewiſe are the parts which firſt loſe their elaſticity and ſooneſt oſſify, being generally more ſtretched than the other parts of an artery, and making a kind of bag. Theſe circumſtances are chiefly obſervable in the curvature of the aorta, that of the internal carotids, and the diviſion of the aorta into the two iliacs.

V. OF THE HEART.

The heart is an organ which is the great agent in the motion of the blood, but is not eſſential to animals of every claſs, nor for the motion of the blood in every part where it is perfect; it is leſs ſo than the nerves, and many even poſſeſs the organs of generation, that have no heart. Its actions in health are regular and characteriſtic of that ſtate; and in diſeaſe its actions are in ſome degree characteriſtic of the diſeaſe; but although there is that connection be-

tween the body and the heart, yet there seems not to be such a connection between the heart and the body; for the heart may be in some degree disordered in its action, yet the body but little affected; it is therefore only to be considered as a local agent very little affecting the constitution sympathetically, except by means of the failure in its duty. The heart in the more perfect animals is double, answerable to the two circulations, the one through the lungs, the other over the body; but many that have only single hearts have what is analagous to a double circulation; and this is performed in very different ways in different animals, so that one of the circulations in these is performed without a heart.

A large class of animals, well known and pretty perfect in their construction, namely, all the class of fish, have no heart for the motion of the blood in the great circulation, or that over the whole body, having only a heart for the lungs or branchea, while the snail has only a heart for the great circulation, and none for the lungs; as also in the liver of the most perfect animals, the motion of the blood, in the vana portarum, and vena cava hypatica, is carried on without a heart. The absorbing system in every animal has no immediate propelling power; therefore this propelling power is not universally necessary. The heart varies in its structure in different orders of animals, principally with respect to the number of cavities and their communications with each other, yet in all nearly the same purpose is answered. I shall here observe, that in the bird and quadruped there is a double circulation, which requires a double heart, namely, a heart for each circulation, each heart consisting of an auricle and ventricle, called the right and the left; and from their forming but one body among them, they are all included in one heart; the right side, or heart, may be called the pulmonary, and the left may be called the corporeal. In many classes of animals there is to be found only one of those hearts; and according to the class, it is either the pulmonary or corporeal. In the fish, as was observed, the heart is the pulmonary; and in the snail, the heart is the corporeal; so that the corporeal motion of the blood in the fish, is carried on without a heart; and in the snail the pulmonary motion is carried on without a heart; and in the winged insects which have but one heart, as also but one circulation, there is this heart, answering both pur-

poſes; and in all theſe varieties, breathing is the principal object.

The heart in moſt animals is compoſed principally of a ſtrong muſcle thrown into the form of a cavity or cavities; but it is not wholly muſcular, being in part tendinous or ligamentous, which laſt parts have neither action nor reaction within themſelves, but are only acted upon; they are therefore made inelaſtic and rigid to ſupport the force of the acting parts in this action, without varying in themſelves.

The heart is in all animals which have red blood, the reddeſt muſcle in the body. Thus in the bird whoſe muſcles are moſtly white, the heart is red; we find it the ſame in the white fiſh.

As it differs in the different orders of animals reſpecting the number of cavities, it may admit of diſpute what are to be reckoned truly hearts, and what only appendages; for ſome of its cavities may only be conſidered as reſervoirs peculiar to ſome hearts.

The moſt ſimple form of heart is compoſed of one cavity only, and the moſt complicated has no more than two; it would ſeem indeed to increaſe progreſſively in the number of cavities from one to four, which includes the mixed; yet two of theſe belonging to the heart with four cavities, ought not to be called parts of the heart although they belong to it. The ſingle cavity of the heart in the moſt ſimple claſs, or the two in the moſt complicated, are called ventricles. The other cavities belonging to it are called auricles, many of thoſe which have one ventricle only have no auricle, ſuch as inſects; but there are others which have both a ventricle and auricle, ſuch as fiſh, the ſnail, many ſhell fiſh; ſome of the laſt claſs have indeed two auricles with only one ventricle; which ſhows that the number of auricles is not fixed under the ſame mode of circulation; thoſe animals which have two diſtinct ventricles, conſtituting four cavities, are what are called quadrupedes, or mammalia, and birds. If the auricles are conſidered as parts of the heart, we might claſs animals which have hearts according to the number of their cavities, viz. monocoilia, dicoilia, tricoilia, tetracoilia; the tricoilia is a mixture of the dicoilia and tetracoilia. This is the caſe in diſtinct claſſes of animals; but it takes place in other claſſes at different ſtages of life; for the fœtus of the claſs poſſeſ-

sing four cavities may be classed with the mixed, having but one auricle, by the communication between the two and also one ventricle, by means of the union between the two arteries which produces an union of blood although not in the same way. Those passages however are shut up almost immediately after birth, or at least the canalis arteriosus*, which immediately prevents the foramen ovale from producing its former effects; therefore it is not so necessary it should be shut up in the adult. I have seen it, to common appearance, as much open as in a fœtus.

The heart may be considered as a truly mechanical engine; for although muscles are the powers in an animal, yet these powers are themselves often converted into a machine, of which the heart is a strong instance; for from the disposition of its muscular fibres, tendons, ligaments and valves, it is adapted to mechanical purposes; which make it a complete organ or machine in itself. It is most probable that by means of this viscus a quicker supply of blood is furnished than otherwise could be effected.

In birds and quadrupedes the heart by its action first throws out the blood, both that which is fit for the purposes of life, and that which requires to be prepaired; the last having lost those salutary powers in the growth, repairs, secretion, etc. in the machine.

It may be said to give the first impulse to the blood, producing a greater velocity where the blood is simply conveyed to the parts for whose use it is destined. This velocity is alternately greater and less, and from the construction of the arteries alone is gradually diminished, becoming more uniform where slowness and evenes in motion is necessary. This velocity of the blood in those parts where it is to be considered as passing only, allows a much larger quantity to flow through the part to which it is destined than otherwise could be transmitted.

The heart is placed in the vascular system, to be ready to receive the blood from the body, and to propel it back on the body again, although not in the centre of the whole; but it is reasonable to suppose that its situation is such as to be best suited to the various parts of the body; some parts

* There have been instances of the canalis arteriosus being open in the adult.

requiring a briſk, others a more languid circulation. Some alſo require a greater ſupply of blood than others.

We may ſuppoſe that the parts near the heart will receive more blood than thoſe at a greater diſtance, becauſe the reſiſtance will be leſs if the veſſels are of equal ſize in proportion to the ſize of the part. The ſituation of the heart in the body varies in different animals. One would imagine when the animal was divided into its ſeveral portions appropriated for the different purpoſes, that the ſituation of the heart would be nearly the ſame in all; but we find this not to be the caſe; its ſituation depends upon the organs of reſpiration, more than any other part. It is placed in what is called the cheſt in the quadruped, bird, amphibia, in fiſh, and in the aquatic and terreſtrial inſect; but not in what may be called the cheſt in the flying inſect. The cheſt in the above named animals ſeems beſt ſuited to contain the lungs and branchia, and therefore the heart is placed there; but as the lungs of the flying inſect are placed through the whole body, the heart is more diffuſed, extending through the whole length of the animal. The ſituation, therefore, of the heart is chiefly connected with that of the lungs; and when it is united with the body at large, it is becauſe the lungs are alſo ſo diſpoſed. We muſt ſuppoſe that theſe two have a relation to each other.

A heart is compoſed of an auricle and ventricle; and it is the ventricle which ſends the blood through its courſe in the circulation; and from what has been ſaid, it muſt appear that the ventricle is the true heart, the other parts having only ſecondary uſes; and as the ventricle is the part which propels the blood to the different parts of the body, its muſcular power muſt be adequate to that purpoſe, and therefore it has a very ſtrong muſcular coat. Much more pains than were neceſſary have been taken to diſſect and deſcribe the courſe and arrangement of the muſcular fibres of the heart, as if the knowledge of the courſe of its fibres could in the leaſt account for its action. But as the heart can, in its contracted ſtate, almoſt throw out its whole contents, to produce this effect, its fibres muſt paſs obliquely.

Its red colour ariſes probably from its being at the fountain head of the circulation: for thoſe animals that have but little red blood have it only in thoſe parts near the heart;

and the heart being neareſt to its own powers, receives the blood before the veſſels can ſo act as to diſpoſe of the red blood, or allow of a kind of ſeparation by diſtance; its conſtant action too renders it more red, as happens in other muſcles.

The ventricles in the quadruped, bird, and amphibia, are called right and left, and this accords very well with the ſituation in ſuch animals; but where there is only one ventricle, and that in ſome acting the part of right, as in fiſh, and in others acting the part of the left, as in the ſnail, we ought to have ſome term expreſſive of their immediate uſe, and ſuch as would apply to all animals that have ſuch a viſcus.

The auricles of the heart are to be conſidered only as reſervoirs for the blood to be ready to ſupply the ventricles; for an auricle is not to be found in all the animals which have a ventricle; nor does the number of auricles always correſpond to that of the ventricles. Where the veins entering into the heart are ſmall, in compariſon to the quantity of blood which is wanted in the ventricles, there we have an auricle; but where the veins near to the heart are large, there is no auricle; as in the lobſter, and generally in inſects. In the ſnail, where the veins in common are large, yet as they are ſmall where they enter the heart, there is an auricle; and as its office is ſomewhat ſimilar to a large vein, it has ſome of its properties, viz. being in ſome degree both elaſtic and muſcular.

The name ſinus venoſus is a very proper one; and as a proof that it is only ſuch in the circulation, there are no valves placed between it and the veins.

As the heart is an engine formed to keep up the motion of the blood, and as it is neceſſary that this motion ſhould be determined in a particular direction, it is adapted, as are alſo the other parts of the vaſcular ſyſtem, to this purpoſe.

The heart is formed into a cavity through which the blood muſt paſs, receiving at once a conſiderable quantity of this fluid, upon which it immediately acts with equal force, although not progreſſively, as an inteſtine; and that this motion of the blood may be regulated, and a retrograde motion prevented, we find the valves conſtructed.

A valve, I believe, is in general underſtood to be a part in every machine, calculated to allow whatever is to paſs to move in one direction only; and the valves in the vaſcular ſyſtem are intended for this purpoſe. They are of two kinds, having two modes of attachment, which is ſuited to the action of the part to which they are attached, and making a very eſſential difference in their formation.

They are thin inelaſtic membranes, having no action within themſelves, with one edge fixed, the other looſe in ſome, but not entirely ſo in others; they are either attached in a circular form, or in an oblique one. The circular attachment belongs to thoſe of the ventricles, and the oblique to thoſe of the arteries and veins. The circular are the moſt complex, requiring an additional apparatus to make them anſwer the intended purpoſe; it is neceſſary that their looſe floating edges ſhould be reſtrained from inverting themſelves into the auricle upon the contraction of the ventricles: this is done by tendons, which are fixed at one extremity along the edge of the valves, and at the other to ſome part upon the inſide of the ventricle.

The tendons which are longeſt are inſerted into columns of muſcle, the intention of which is very evident; for if they had gone the whole length in form of a tendon, they would have been too long when the heart contracted, and the valves in ſuch a caſe would have allowed of being puſhed into the auricles, ſo far as to admit of the blood eſcaping back again into the cavity; but the carniæ columnæ keep the valves within the ventricle, in the contracted ſtate of the ventricles; and the dilatation of the ventricles counteracts them and places the valve in their proper ſituation in that ſtate.

If the valves in this cavity had been placed obliquely along the inner ſides of the ventricle, as in the beginning of the arteries, and in the veins, the attachment then would not have been permanent; for it would have varied according to the relaxed or contracted ſtate of the heart; it would have been ſhort in the contracted ſtate, and longer in the relaxed; therefore to have a fixed baſe, it was neceſſary for them to be attached all round the mouth of the ventricles.

I have reaſon to believe, that the valves in the right ſide of the heart do not ſo perfectly do their duty as thoſe of the left, therefore we may ſuppoſe it was not ſo neceſſary.

The vessels of the heart are called coronary arteries and veins. In quadrupeds and birds, there are two coronary arteries, which arise from the aorta just at its beginning, behind two of the valves of the artery; from this circumstance a theory respecting the action of the heart was raised; but in the amphibia they arise at some distance, and not always from the same artery in the same species, often from the subclavian, and often from the anterior surface of the ascending aorta, which is reflected back. In the fish they arise from the artery as they are coming from the gills.

The veins pass into the right auricle.

In all animals, which have an auricle and ventricle, so far as I know, there is a bag (unattached) in which they are placed, called a pericardium*, but the insect tribe, whether aerial, aquatic, or terrestial have none, their heart being attached to the surrounding parts by the cellular membrane, or some other mode of attachment. In those animals which have this bag, it is not a smooth termination of the cellular membrane, as the peritonæum may be supposed to be; but a distinct bag, as in man, and in all quadrupeds.

The use of this bag is probably that the heart may move with more ease and facility; the two parts, to wit, the contained and containing, acting as a kind of joint with a capsular ligament, and like such joints it contains a fluid, but not a synovia, as the two surfaces are not hard like cartilage; besides, the heart is kept very much in its place, which we must suppose is of use. I have conceived it also to be possible, as it is a pretty strong membrane, that it might in some degree preserve the heart from too great distention; for I have observed by injections, that a little force will distend it beyond its natural size, if a part of the pericardium be taken off; but in the heart mentioned by Dr. Baillie there was no particular increase of bulk.

This bag has, like most others, a fluid which moistens the two surfaces. In other cavity of the body the fluid is no more in quantity than what is simply sufficient to moisten

* There have been instances where the pericardum has been wanting in the human subject: a case of this kind is published by Dr. Baillie, in a periodical work, entitled, "Transactions "of a Society instituted for promoting medical and chirurgical "Knowledge."

the parts. In this bag, however, it is more, from whence it has acquired the name of liquor pericardii. There may be about a tea ſpoon-full in the whole. This fluid appears to be ſerum, and is commonly a little tinged with blood which ariſes from the tranſudation of the red blood after death.

That this cavity has more water in it than moſt other cavities of the body, may ariſe from their being a greater action of thoſe parts on one another than takes place in others; it may alſo fill up the interſtices formed between two round bodies, ſo that when the pulmonary artery and aorta are filled, they may more eaſily aſſume a round figure.

The ſize of a heart we ſhould naturally ſuppoſe is proportioned to the ſize of the animal, and the natural quantity of blood; which laſt is, we might conceive, ever in proportion to the ſize of the animal; but I believe theſe modes of calculation will not be found to be juſt; for certainly ſome animals have much more blood in proportion to their ſize than others; and I believe the heart is not in ſize proportioned to the ſize of the animal, but bears a compound proportion or ratio to the quantity of blood, to be moved, and the frequency of the ſtroke it has to make; for when it is decreaſed in the one reſpect it muſt be increaſed in the other; and as a proof of this we find when an animal loſes a conſiderable quantity of blood, the heart increaſes in its frequency of ſtrokes, as alſo in its violence. That it principally bears proportion to the quantity of blood is evident; for the right ventricle is equal in ſize to the left, if not larger, which ſends its blood to the lungs only, which are infinitely ſmall when compared to the body; and the hearts of thoſe animals which have but one ventricle, as fiſh for inſtance, which is ſimilar in uſe to our right, are perhaps made as large in proportion to the ſize of the body as both ventricles in the quadruped.

The ſtrength of a heart is commonly, if not always, in proportion to the ſize of the parts to which the blood is carried with the velocity with which the blood is propelled, which becomes a collateral proof that it is an univerſal agent in the circulation. In the complete heart this is not equal in every part of the ſame heart; the right ventricle being much weaker than the left, but ſtill in the above proportions. The proportion between the two will be beſt

known by ascertaining the difference in the strength of the two arteries, and this again will differ according to the whole parts the blood is sent to by the heart. In the fish, for instance, it is only necessary it should bear the proportion in strength to the whole fish, that our right ventricle bears to our lungs, which is not in the least equal to that of the left ventricle; or in other words, its strength should commensurate with the size of the lungs; however, it is most probable that the right ventricle in the quadruped is stronger than in this proportion, because it is obliged to move a larger quantity of blood than is contained in any other part of the body of the same size, and with greater velocity; in the double heart, therefore, such as the human, the two cavities are not of equal strength, each being nearly in proportion to the size of the parts, or rather to the distance the blood is to go; the right ventricle only throwing it into the lungs, the left into the body. As a proof of this doctrine, we find that in the fœtal state of this class of animals, the two ventricles and the two large arteries, are equal in strength. Indeed, from reasoning, we should expect this, and even that the right ventricle should rather be the strongest; for at this period it sends the blood to the lower extremities; but since both the arteries unite into one canal we must suppose it to be necessary that the velocities of the blood in both should be equal; upon examination we find the two ventricles to be nearly equal in thickness in this young state of the animal.

The mixt kind of heart, as that of the turtle, etc. is under the same predicament. The two ventricles are to be considered as joint agents in the circulation; and as the pulmonary artery and aorta are equally strong, it becomes a proof that the strength of the heart must be equal every where.

If we were to estimate the strength of the ventricles in those possessed of four cavities, by the strength of the aorta and pulmonary arteries, either by their absolute strength or elasticity, we might come pretty near the truth.

Dr. Hales made an experiment on a horse, to ascertain the strength of the arteries, which gives us the power of the left ventricle; but all this explains nothing, for its power is equal to the use wanted.

The power of contraction of the ventricle must be within the strength of the artery; but it is hardly possible to ascertain what is the strength of an artery, nor, if we could,

would it aſcertain the ſtrength of the ventricle, for the force of the heart is in part immediately loſt by the blood being allowed to paſs on, although not ſo freely as if the artery was open at the other end ; in proportion, therefore, to the retardment, the artery is affected. We can aſcertain the elaſtic power of a given ſection of an artery, and alſo its abſolute ſtrength, but we are not unacquainted with the ſize of a ſection that will give the ſtrength of the artery to which it belonged when the whole was in a perfect ſtate or form.

Experiment I. A ſection of a ſound aorta, cloſe to the valves, three quarters of an inch long, was ſtretched tranſverſely to its greateſt extent, which ſtate was aſcertained by meaſuring it with a pair of compaſſes, and the artery was allowed to contract. The weight required to ſtretch it again to the ſame degree was one pound ten ounces. To break the artery required ten pounds and a quarter.

Experiment II. A ſection of the pulmonary artery, ſimilar to the former in length and ſituation, required ſix ounces two drachms to ſtretch it to its full extent. To break it required eleven pounds three quarters.

The uſe of this viſcus is in general very well known ; however, its uſe has been frequently ſuppoſed to be more univerſal than it really is. It gives to the blood its motion in moſt animals, and in all it ſends the blood to the organs of reſpiration : in the flying inſect it ſends the blood both to thoſe organs and to the body at large ; but in fiſh to thoſe organs only, the body at large in them having no heart. In the amphibia there is an attempt towards a heart both for the lungs and body, but not two diſtinct hearts. In the bird and quadruped there is a diſtinct heart for each. We may ſay, therefore, that there is one heart for reſpiration, and another for the life, nouriſhment, etc. of the animal ; theſe conſtitute the two ventricles.

As the extent of theſe two circulations is different, the two hearts, or in other words, the two ventricles, are ſuited in their ſtrength to the different extents of each circulation, as was obſerved above in treating of the ſtrength of the heart.

How far the heart is alone capable of carrying on the circulation is not to be aſcertained ; for although the circulation is carried on in paralytic caſes, yet this does not ex-

clude the involuntary nervous influence of the part; this, however, varies very much in different classes of animals; for I have already observed concerning the structure of the arteries, that their muscularity assisted in the circulation, and that in proportion as the vessels in general were endowed with this power the heart was weaker. I believe that the quadruped has the strongest heart of any class of animals; and I believe that their vessels have the least muscular power, more especially near the heart.

The immediate use of the heart in an animal, would seem to be generally subject to as little variety as that of any other viscus; but perhaps the heart is subject to more variety than any other part in its construction. I have observed that it is either single, double, or mixed, that it is single without an auricle, single with one auricle, single with two auricles, double with a union of the two, making the mixed, and double with two auricles. With respect to its use, it is, in the most simple kind of single heart, to propel the blood through the body, immediately from the veins, which blood is to receive its purification in this passage, when the lungs are disposed throughout the body, as in the flying insect. In another single heart it is intended to mix both the purified and the adulterated blood, and of course to throw it out to the body and lungs equally in this mixed state, as in the lobster. In the single heart, with an auricle, its use is, in one class, to throw the blood throughout the body, after being purified, as in the snail; and in another single kind, with an auricle, it is to receive the blood from the body, and send it to the lungs only, as in all fish. In the single heart with two auricles, it is formed to receive the blood both purified and unpurified, and dispose of it to both body and lungs in that state, as was observed in the lobster: the same thing happens, in some degree, in the turtle, snake, fætus, etc. In the double heart with two auricles, it acts like an union of the heart of the snail with that of the fish, one heart receiving the blood purified from the lungs, and sending it over the body, as in the snail; and the other receiving the blood from the body, and sending it into the lungs to be purified, as in the fish. From the above account we must see that the immediate use arising from the heart in one class of animals will not agree with its immediate use in another; but still in all, it is the engine employed to throw the blood to those parts into which the arteries conduct it.

It is impossible to say what the quantity of blood is that is thrown out of the heart at each contraction. The size of a relaxed heart, in the dead body of any animal, gives us the size of the cavity, or what it is capable of holding; but muscles seldom or ever are obliged to relax themselves to their full extent in common actions, although they often are when extensive effects are to be produced. The heart, like every part constructed for action, has its times of action beyond, and also within its natural limit of action; but it is its natural action which should be ascertained.

If we compare the actions of the heart with those of the body, we may suppose that the common quantity of motion in the heart is about half what it can perform, that is, it relaxes three-fourths and contracts one-half; therefore a ventricle which contains four ounces, will, in common, only dilate so as to contain three, and will only contract so as to throw out two.

The question is, when the heart acts with more frequency, as from exercise, does it, or does it not also dilate and contract more fully, and also act with greater velocity in its contraction? I believe that all these circumstances take place; for in exercise, the pulse not only becomes more frequent, but fuller, as if more was thrown out of the heart; and the heart is found to make a greater emotion in the chest, striking with its apex against the inside of the chest with greater force *, which can only arise from a greater quantity being thrown out, and with greater velocity. The breathing corresponds with the quantity of blood and the velocity; for if a larger quantity passes through the

* The reason why the apex of the heart strikes against the chest in its actions, was, I believe, first accounted for by the late Dr. William Hunter, in his lectures, as far back as the year 1746. The systole and diastole of the heart, simply, could not produce such an effect; nor could it have been produced, if it had thrown the blood into a straight tube, in the direction of the axis in the left ventricle, as is the case with the ventricles of fish, and some other classes of animals; but by its throwing the blood into a curved tube, viz, the aorta, that artery at its curve endeavours to throw itself into a straight line to increase its capacity; but the aorta being the fixed point against the back, and the heart in some degree loose or pendelous, the influence of its own action is thrown upon itself, and it is tilted forwards against the inside of the chest.

lungs in a given time, the breathing muſt be in the ſame proportion increaſed; if with a greater velocity, the ſame thing muſt neceſſarily take place; and if a greater quantity is thrown out, and with a greater velocity, then the arteries muſt relax in proportion, ſince the different parts muſt correſpond with each other; we muſt ſuppoſe, therefore, that in health, whenever there is any exertion greater than common, (which always increaſes the pulſe) the heart dilates more, contracts more, and does both with greater velocity; this I conceive ariſes from a neceſſity, which begins firſt in the veins; for when the body is in action, the blood in the veins is obliged to move with greater velocity than when at reſt: how far there may be other reaſons for this, I will not pretend to determine.

Another queſtion naturally ariſes; as we find that the times of repetition of the pulſe or actions of the heart increaſe in many diſeaſes, Does the ſame thing happen, that is above ſuppoſed to ariſe, from exerciſe in health? viz. Does the heart dilate more, contract more, and alſo contract with more velocity; I believe this caſe does not in the leaſt correſpond with our former poſition. The pulſe in ſuch circumſtances, although frequent, is ſmall and hard, ſhowing the arteries to be too much contracted by their muſcular power, and therefore unfit to receive a large quantity of blood from the heart in any given time. The breathing does not correſpond with the frequency of the pulſations, as in the former inſtance; yet it is poſſible that nearly the ſame quantity of blood may paſs as when in health, the velocity in the contracted ſtate of heart and veſſels making up for the quantity in the enlarged. That it moves faſter in ſuch ſtate of veſſels, is, I think probable; for in bleeding, the blood in the veins during ſuch a ſtate of veſſels, is commonly more florid.

OBSERVATIONS upon the heart's motion, while under the influence of artificial breathing.

I. I obſerved that the auricles contracted but very little, ſo that they did not nearly empty themſelves.

II. That the ventricles were not turgid at the time of their diaſtole; for I could feel them ſoft, and could eaſily compreſs them.

III. That the ventricles became hard at the time of their ſyſtole.

IV. That the heart, when it ceased to act, became nearly twice as large as when acting, and that it recovered its small size again whenever it began to act.

Observations on the above appearances.

From the first observation it would appear, that the auricles are only reservoirs, capable of holding a much larger quantity than is necessary for filling the ventricles at any one time, in order that the ventricles may always have blood ready to fill them.

From observation the fourth, it would appear, that any idea we form of the size of a heart from those in dead bodies, must be far from the truth; for the blood coming from every part of the body to the heart, in some measure distends it while it is in a relaxed state, so that when the heart begins to contract (as muscles do some time after death) it is kept dilated by the contained blood. However, it may be observed that the increased size of the heart would be less in the present case, than natural; for the very quick motion of this viscus, under this irritation, hindered a full diastole; but when I left off blowing, and the heart ceased acting, it became large; and on resuming my artificial breathing, it again became small; which I did three times in the course of this experiment. But I think I have observed in general that the heart is not so much affected by the stimulus of death as the other muscles of the body. We seldom see a dead body that is not stiff; but we very often find the heart large and flabby, not in the least contracted: and I am not certain but this may be the case also with some of the other vital parts, as the stomach and intestines.

It is to be set down as a principle, that the action of every muscle is alternate contraction and relaxation; and it cannot be otherwise; but as there is a necessity for a more constant and regular motion in the heart, than probably in any of the other muscles, more disputes have arisen about the cause of its regular alternate motion. Some have accounted for it from the position of the mouths of the coronary arteries respecting the valves of the aorta, supposing, erroneously, that the heart has its blood in the time of its relaxation*; but the circulation, whether existing or not,

* This will be readily understood when I come to explain the mode of action in the valves of the arteries.

has not ſuch immediate effect upon a muſcle; nor would it account for the action of the auricle in the ſame animal, nor would it account for the action of the heart in a fiſh; but from what we ſhall obſerve on the valves of the aorta, we ſhall find that this opinion immediately falls to the ground. An eaſy experiment may put this beyond a doubt; for, if the heart of a dog be laid open and the coronary artery wounded, it will be found to jet out its blood as the aorta diſtends. Others have accounted for the alternate motion of the heart, from the courſe of its nerves paſſing between the two great arteries, ſo as to be compreſſed when the arteries are dilated; but this could only produce relaxation. We know too that ſuch immediate compreſſion on a nerve has no ſuch immediate effect upon a muſcle; and it would moſt probably make it contract; for when the nerves of the heart are cut, it does not ſtop its motion, but rather makes it contract for the inſtant. The heart's motion does not ariſe from an immediate impulſe from the brain, as it does in the voluntary muſcles, and as it is only in the quadruped and bird that the nerves can be influenced in their paſſage to it; it does not account for this alternate motion in other claſſes of animals. The flowing of the blood into the heart has been aſſigned as a cauſe of its contraction; but even that will not account for it; although it will for many of its phenomena, yet not for all; for a local ſtimulus merely is too mechanical to produce all the variety attending the action of this viſcus; it would not be attended with that regularity which it has in health, nor that irregularity which we find in diſeaſe; neither could it ever ſtop, unleſs when abſolute death took place; nor reſume its action if it ever did ſtop. We find that thoſe parts which have occaſion for the immediate ſtimulus to produce action, have that action very irregular; as for inſtance, the bladder of urine and inteſtines. The bladder is taking up its action as ſimply for itſelf, and not ſecondarily, however beneficial that might be for the whole in a ſecondary degree; but the heart's actions ariſe from its being ſo much part of the whole, as the whole immediately to depend upon it; therefore we muſt look out for another cauſe of this regular alternate action of the heart, than that ariſing from mechaniſm or mechanical impreſſion; ſomething more immediately connected with the general laws of the animal œconomy.

The alternate contraction and relaxation of the heart conſtitutes a part of the circulation; and the whole takes

place in consequence of a necessity, the constitution demanding it, and becoming the stimulus, it is rather therefore the want of repletion which makes a negative impression on the constitution, which becomes the stimulus, than the immediate impression of something applied to the heart.

This we see to be the case, wherever a constant supply, or some kind of aid, is wanted in consequence of some action; we have as regularly the stimulus for respiration, the moment one is finished an immediate demand taking place; and if prevented, as this action is under the influence of the will, the stimulus of want is increased. We have the stimulus of the want of food, which takes place regularly in health, and so it is with the circulation. The heart, we find, cannot rest one stroke, but the constitution feels it; even the mind and the heart is thereby stimulated to action. The constant want in the constitution of this action in the heart, is as much as the constant action of the spring of a clock is to its pendulum, all hanging or depending on each other.

The nearest dependence of the heart is upon the lungs, and probably they have the same upon the heart; the two together become in their immediate use interwoven with the whole; for a stoppage of respiration produces a stoppage of circulation, and a restoration of respiration produces a restoration of the circulation or heart's motion. Thus, in my experiments on artificial breathing, the heart soon ceased acting whenever I left off acting with my bellows; and upon renewing my artificial breathing, it, in a very short time, renewed its action, first by slow degrees; but became quicker and quicker till it came to its full action.

I believe this experiment cannot be reversed; we cannot make an artificial circulation, so as to know, that if we stopped the heart's motion, we should so readily stop respiration; and on producing the heart's motion, respiration would again take place; but if we could do this, I doubt very much its being attended with equal success, because I believe that in all deaths, respiration stops first; however it must be supposed, that if the heart stopped for any length of time, respiration would also stop; and if I were to take the following case as proof, it would appear that respiration would not go on without the heart's motion.

A gentleman was attacked with a pain in the situation of the pylorus. The pains were such as indicated its seat

to be in the nerves of the ſtomach and its connections. It was ſuch as he could hardly bear. The other attending ſymptom was a total ſtoppage in the actions of the heart; and of courſe the face was pale and ghaſtly. Not the leaſt ſigns of motion in the heart could be felt. In this ſtate he was about three quarters of an hour. He was attended by Drs. Hunter, Sir George Baker, Sir William Fordyce and Dr. Huck Saunders. As he was perfectly ſenſible at the time, and could perform every voluntary action, he obſerved, that he was not breathing, which aſtoniſhed him; and at firſt conceiving he muſt die if he did not breathe, he performed the act of breathing voluntarily. This ſhews that breathing depends on the actions of the heart; and it alſo ſhews, that under certain circumſtances the actions of both may be ſuſpended, and yet death not be the conſequence. As he ſpoke while in this fit, without attending to his breathing, it ſhews that the breathing which produces ſound, is voluntary; and if we had only the power of involuntary breathing, then probably we could not ſpeak; for it is probable we could not regulate the action of the glottis and tongue, which are voluntary, to ſo regular an action of the lungs; for in ſpeaking, it is the one acting ſo as to correſpond with the other, both becoming voluntary. A gentleman who had a ſingular aſthmatic affection, his breathing gradually ſtopt, and again gradually recovered, but became violent, and this conſtantly and alternately held two or three minutes; and when the breathing ceaſed yet he ſpoke, although but faintly.

In thoſe animals which have two ventricles, it has been aſſerted by ſome, that their actions are alternate; but obſervation and experiment ſhews us, that the two auricles contract together, and that the two ventricles alſo contract together. This can be obſerved ſimply by looking on the heart in its actions; and if we in that ſtate make a puncture into the pulmonary artery and the aorta, we ſhall find the jet in both at the ſame inſtant, correſponding with the contractions of the ventricles. Indeed the circulation in the fœtus is a proof of it; for in the child there would otherwiſe be two pulſations inſtead of one.

This alternate motion of the heart is quicker in ſome claſſes of animals, than others; in ſome being extremely quick, in others very ſlow. In all the more inferior orders of animals, I believe it is the ſloweſt; and this may

probably be in ſome degree in proportion to their imperfection. It is alſo ſlower, probably, in each claſs in proportion to the ſize; and we know it is ſlower in each ſpecies, in ſome degree in proportion to the ſize; though not exactly ſo. The impulſe is alſo found to be quicker in the young than in the old of each ſpecies, in greater proportion than what we find ariſing from ſize only. Thus the motion of the heart of a catterpillar is extremely ſlow, and alſo of a ſnail. The motion of the heart in fiſh is not frequent; and we know it is extremely ſlow in the amphibia. But in thoſe poſſeſſed of two ventricles, as in birds and quadruped, the motion of this viſcus is much quicker. In them too it differs very much in proportion to their ſize, although not nearly in the ſame proportion. Thus a horſe's pulſe is about thirty-ſix in a minute; while a man's is about ſeventy. In the ſame ſpecies it is nearly of equal quickneſs; for in a man of three feet high, the pulſe was eighty, while a man above eight feet high, had a pulſe about ſeventy.

VI. GENERAL OBSERVATIONS ON BLOOD-VESSELS.

By the veſſels in an animal, are commonly underſtood thoſe canals which carry the juices of the body, called the blood of the animal, to and from the heart, for the immediate purpoſes of the animal œconomy; and in thoſe animals where no heart is to be found, yet veſſels are found, though their uſes are not ſo demonſtrable; and in ſome of a ſtill more inferior order, where no veſſels can be demonſtrated, yet, from analogy, canals may be ſuppoſed to exiſt; and thoſe ſhould ſtill be called veſſels*.

The vaſcular ſyſtem in an animal, is, in ſome degree, to be conſidered as the efficient part of the whole animal

* Of this, I am not certain. I have an idea, that ſome animals abſorb their nouriſhment, even without action, ſomewhat ſimilar to a ſponge; but diſpoſe of it immediately by converting it into its own increaſe.

reſpecting itſelf; every other part of the body being more or leſs ſubſervient to it, and depending upon it, for exiſtence and ſupport; and therefore the greateſt attention ſhould be paid to every circumſtance that can poſſibly explain the various uſes of the veſſels; for there is no operation reſpecting the internal œconomy of the animal, but is performed by them; inſomuch, that for the convenience of the veſſels in performing thoſe peculiar actions, they ſeem to conſtitute various combinations, which are called organs†. And although many parts have actions, independent of the veſſels, yet theſe are not for the purpoſes of growth, ſupport, etc. So that the veſſels are conſtructed for the immediate uſe of the machine, and may be called labourers in the machine. This naturally implies ſomething that is not a veſſel, or veſſels; a ſomething that conſtitutes the different parts of the body, and is only more or leſs vaſcular. They are probably the very firſt active parts in the ſyſtem; for we find them in action before they have formed themſelves into a heart; and in ſuch a ſtate of parts we find them the only part that has any ſtrength; the other parts only preparing for action: this is ſo remarkable that we can diſſect the veſſels of a chicken in the egg without injection, the other parts eaſily giving way. Theſe parts are formed of living animal matter, ſo compoſed as to conſtitute the different ſtructures fitted for their different uſes in the machine; yet ſome parts are ſo vaſcular as to appear almoſt to conſiſt wholly of veſſels; as if veſſels were formed into ſuch ſtructures; but this, we cannot conceive, for then they muſt loſe the action of veſſels.

In thoſe animals where the vaſcular ſyſtem is connected with a heart, which may be called the termination, as well as origin of the veſſels, we find that viſcus to make ſo ma-

† Perhaps it may be difficult to give a definition of an organ that will meet every one's ideas; or will diſtinguiſh thoſe bodies, accurately, from what may be ſaid, not to be an organ. A muſcle may be called an organ; but I would only conſider it among the materials of which an organ is compoſed. I have the ſame idea of elaſtic ſubſtances, cellular membrane, bone, cartilage, etc

I would, at preſent, define an organ to be a part of a particular conſtruction, compoſed of a variety of ſubſtances, which are combined together to anſwer ſome particular purpoſe, which is the reſult of the actions of the whole.

terial a part of this ſyſtem, as to require particular attention.

In many of theſe animals, we find two ſyſtems of veſſels, the arteries, and veins; and moſt probably they exiſt in all of them: there is alſo a third, which conſiſts of the abſorbents. The heart is the ſource of the arteries, and the termination of the veins and abſorbents. The two firſt depending on each other, form the circulation; and the third, is eſſential to both, bringing the materials which are to circulate*.

The arteries are to be conſidered as the acting part of the vaſcular ſyſtem, ſince they perform a variety of actions, the uſes of which are very important in the animal œconomy. They may be called univerſal, or conſtitutional, for their actions are immediately productive of health, or diſeaſe, in the conſtitution; and if they could be diſeaſed as a ſyſtem, that diſeaſe would, of courſe, be univerſal; as their actions are expreſſive of health, or diſeaſe, they become alſo one means of diſcovering either.

There is no internal operation in the machine reſpecting growth, natural repair, and ſecretion, that is not performed by them: no new part is formed, nor additional alteration made in the ſtructure of natural parts, nor repair for the loſs of natural ſubſtance, either by diſeaſe or accident, but is made by the arteries, although of all operations we know nothing, but from the effect produced. Theſe operations are performed by the termination of the arteries, which may be ſuppoſed to be of three kinds: one may be called arterial, conveying debelitated blood into the veins, and through their whole length, may be called arteries: another kind conſiſts of the ſeparaters from the blood, performing the different ſecretions: and the third contains the formers and ſupporters of the body: the two latter kinds I ſhould not call arteries, they are the workers, or labourers.

The abſorbing ſyſtem alſo takes a very active part in the animal œconomy, whether natural or diſeaſed, and ſeems in many actions to be the antagoniſt of the arteries; while the veins are much more paſſive, being principally employed in returning the blood to the heart.

* This ſyſtem is too extenſive to be deſcribed, in the preſent work, although it will be neceſſary to deſcribe one uſe not hitherto attributed to it, as it explains one part of my ſyſtem of diſeaſe.

It is probable, that every part of the body is equally vaſcular, although they may not all have equal quantities of blood paſſing through them, which muſt ariſe from the ſmallneſs of the veſſels, and not from their being fewer in number. When we ſay that a part is very vaſcular, we can only mean that it is viſibly ſo, by having a large veſſel, or veſſels, going to it, and ramifying in it; from which circumſtance it contains a certain proportion of red blood, rendering the veſſels viſible; which may alſo eaſily be made conſpicuous by injections. Where the veſſels are ſmaller this is not the caſe. When we ſay, therefore, that a part is not vaſcular, we mean it is not viſibly ſo; but ſtill we muſt ſuppoſe ſuch parts to be equally vaſcular, ſo far as reſpects their œconomy within themſelves; but in ſuch parts I conceive the blood to be more languid in its motion. Many parts appear to be much more vaſcular than they really are, from their veſſels dividing, and anaſtomiſing, and taking a winding courſe before they terminate*; for it is by the number of terminations of an artery in a given ſpace, that a part is made vaſcular, or not vaſcular: muſcles appear to be more vaſcular than they really are. When parts have another uſe, in which blood furniſhes the materials to be diſpoſed of, as in ſecretion, and reſpiration, where veſſels fitted for ſuch purpoſes are ſuperadded, then parts become proportionably more vaſcular. When blood does not ſeem to be the matter to be diſpoſed of, yet if there are other operations continually carried on in a part, beſides its ſimple ſupport, as in a muſcle, which has both the power of contraction, and conſiderable ſenſation, etc. then the veſſels are larger, and of courſe appear in great numbers: this is evident in the living body, for if a muſcle is hardly allowed to act, its veſſels become ſmall, and it becomes pale; but if thrown into a more violent action, for a continuance it becomes red: we cannot here ſuppoſe an increaſe of veſſels, but only an increaſe of ſize. Thus we have parts vaſcular in proportion to the quantity of action they are capable of, or under the neceſſity of performing: and this particularly in parts whoſe uſes may be called double, as the organs of ſecretion in general, brain, and muſcles; even in inflammation, and in proportion as theſe

* By ſimply cutting into the ſpermatic artery of a bull it appears to be extremely vaſcular, though, according to our idea of vaſcularity, it is as little ſo as any part.

parts are employed in their peculiar actions, they become to appearance more vaſcular. Some animals have naturally red muſcles, without its being the effect of conſiderable action: this is very remarkable in the hare; but the redneſs in the muſcles of this animal may be intended to adapt its muſcles naturally for violent exertions at all times. Muſcles are of different colours, reſpecting red and white, in the ſame animal; but that I believe is alſo in proportion to the quantity of action the parts are put to.

This effect the epicure is well acquainted with; he knows that the wing of a partridge is whiter than the leg: and that the leg of a woodcock is whiter than the wing. The veal of this country is a remarkable inſtance of this; for the calf is hardly allowed to ſtir, and the muſcles are white; but when the calf is allowed to follow its mother, the muſcles are of a reddiſh colour: it may be, however, remarked, that white meat is commonly the leaſt juicy; and we find it remarkably ſo in thoſe animals which are fed for this purpoſe, becauſe, they require nothing but their ſimple ſupport, and having little or no action within themſelves, they have but little waſte. Such change of appearance we find carried to a conſiderable extent in the uterus, at the time of the menſes; but much more particularly at the time of uterine-geſtation, where the veſſels increaſe both in ſize and length, in proportion to the actions required. But parts whoſe uſe in the machine may be ſaid to be paſſive, as tendon, cellular membrane, ligaments, inveſting membrane, bone, and cartilage, which laſt is probably the moſt paſſive, have all ſmall veſſels, and of courſe but few that are viſible. As bone, however, is compoſed of two parts, viz. animal ſubſtance, and earth, it is probable there may be more action required to form the latter than either tendon or cartilage, and therefore there will be more veſſels.

As a further proof that this is a general principle, we find that all growing parts are much more vaſcular than thoſe that are come to their full growth; becauſe growth is an operation beyond the ſimple ſupport of the part: this is the reaſon why young animals are more vaſcular than thoſe that are full grown. This is not peculiar to the natural operation of growth, but applies alſo to diſeaſe, and reſtoration. Parts become vaſcular in inflammation; the callus, granulations, and new formed cutis, are much more vaſcular in the growing ſtate, or when juſt formed

than afterwards; for we ſee them crowded with blood-veſſels when growing, but when full grown, they begin to loſe their viſible veſſels, and become not even ſo vaſcular as in the other neighbouring original parts, only retaining a ſufficient number of veſſels to carry on the ſimple œconomy of the part; which would now ſeem to be leſs than in an original part. This is known by injections, when parts are in the growing ſtate, or are juſt grown, and for ſome time after. We may obſerve, when the ſmall-pox is cured, that the remains of the puſtules are red, and continue ſo for ſome time; which is owing to thoſe parts being viſibly more vaſcular than common: and thoſe who have had the ſmall-pox ſeverely, are, in general, afterwards more pale than others, when thoſe parts have arrived at their permanent ſtate. If we cut into a part that has had a wound, or ſore, upon it, which has been healed for a conſiderable time, we ſhall find that the cicatrix, and the new formed parts, are not nearly ſo vaſcular as the original, which correſponds with what has been advanced; for we know that thoſe parts are not equal in power to original parts. In ſhort, whenever nature has conſiderable operations going on, and thoſe are rapid, then we find the vaſcular ſyſtem in a proportionable degree enlarged.

The number of veſſels in a part, and alſo the circulation of the blood through them, appears to keep pace with its ſenſibility; for firſt we find that moſt probably all parts endowed with veſſels are ſenſible; and all ſenſible parts are, to appearance, very vaſcular. Where any increaſed action is going on, requiring increaſed ſenſibility, there is alſo an increaſed circulation through thoſe veſſels, as in the parts of generation, during the time of coition, more eſpecially in the female; and this increaſe of veſſels, circulation, and ſenſibility in a part, takes place in diſeaſe, as is well illuſtrated in inflammation, where the whole ſeems to be increaſed in the ſame proportion, eſpecialy the two laſt, viz. circulation and ſenſibility.

Theſe obſervations can only be made in animals which have red blood; and beſt in thoſe which have the moſt red blood; but it is not poſſible to aſcertain, with accuracy, the proportion that one blood-veſſel bears to another, ſo as to know the exact quantity of blood each part may poſſeſs; which would better aſcertain the action of the part; for they may be ſaid not to be meaſurable with any degree of

accuracy; and therefore ſuch inveſtigation muſt be taken in the groſs.

Veſſels have a power of increaſe within themſelves, both in diameter and in length; which is according to the neceſſity, whether natural, or diſeaſed. The neceſſity appears to ariſe from an increaſe of the part to which the artery is going, the formation of a new part, or an irritation. The firſt may be reckoned the natural increaſe of the body: the ſecond, the occaſional increaſe of parts, as of the uterus, in uterine-geſtation, where the veſſels are increaſed in width, in proportion to the whole ſolid contents, including the young: beſides this, they are conſiderably increaſed in length before they reach the uterus, which obliges the ſpermatic artery, in particular, to be thrown into a ſerpentine form: this is more remarkable in ſome animals than in the human ſpecies.

Inſtances of new formed parts, where the veſſels are increaſed, are to be found in the ſtag, or all thoſe of the deer kind which caſt their horns; ſuch animals having the arteries conſiderably increaſed at the time the young horn is growing, ſo that the carotid arteries, which before had only to ſupply the head, and the external carotid, which before had only to ſupply the ſides of the head, now become larger, and are continued into the horn, which is extremely vaſcular.

After the ſeparation of the fœtus, or the full growth of the horn, the veſſels naturally leſſen, to adapt themſelves to the diminiſhed ſize of the parts.

It is curious to obſerve how veſſels become enlarged upon any irritation; not only the arteries, but the veins; and not only the ſmaller branches, but the larger trunks. This was evident in the following caſe: I applied a cauſtic to the ball of the great toe of a patient every other day, for more than a month, and after each application the ſurrounding parts put on a bluſh; and all the veins on the top of the foot, as well as up the leg, immediately began to ſwell, and became large and full. This was ſo remarkable, that the patient watched for this effect, on the days on which the cauſtic was applied, from its happening only on thoſe days.

In diſeaſes where there is an increaſed ſize of the part, as in tumors, etc. the increaſe of veſſels is no leſs conſpicuous; and they have the power of dilatation, and increaſe of ſtrength, in proportion to the ſize of the veſſels; which

are now endowed with new diſpoſitions, and action, different from thoſe they had before.

The arteries often perform diſeaſed operations in the body, which become ſymptoms both of local and conſtitutional actions, as in inflammation, fever, etc. for they are not only active in local diſeaſe, but their action often becomes a ſymptom of a conſtitutional diſeaſe, whether original, or ariſing from a local cauſe: but theſe ſymptoms become moſtly ſenſible to us in thoſe arteries whoſe actions we can feel; becauſe they have a peculiar action in their diaſtole, as well as in their ſyſtole, which is ſenſible to the touch; from which ſenſation, we, in many caſes, judge of the ſtate of the body at the time; as alſo the ſtate of the cauſe, when it is local, and out of ſight. The heart, the ſource of the circulation, is alſo affected from the ſame cauſe; ſo that its motion, and the motions of the arteries, commonly, if not always, correſpond.

VII. VALVES OF ARTERIES.

The arteries ariſing from the heart, I believe in all animals, have valves, which are ſo many flood-gates, to hinder a return of the blood into the cavities: and as there are two main arteries in the human body, ſo there are two ſets of valves, viz. one belonging to each artery. Theſe are ſituated at the beginning of the artery, and from their ſhape, are called ſemilunar. Veins have ſimilar valves, almoſt through their whole courſe. The valves are inelaſtic, being ſimilar to the inner coat of an artery; but the difference in the properties of the valves, and the arteries themſelves, which are elaſtic, will be further conſidered in in treating of the uſe, and mode of action of the valves. Each of theſe ſets is made up of three valves*; but in veins, there are commonly only two. This difference in the valves of the arteries, and veins, is perhaps to bring the artery into a more rounded figure, than could have taken place by two valves only: each of theſe valves is of a ſemilunar

* I have found in the human ſubject, only two valves to the aorta; but this is very rare.

form, having one convex edge, and the other nearly ſtraight. Theſe valves are attached to the inſides of the artery, at its very beginning, by their ſemicircular edge, which is oblique; the points, as it were, running a little way into the artery. Theſe terminations in each valve come cloſe to one another; but the looſe edges, which conſtitute the diameter, are not cut ſtraight off, but rounded. There is, beſides, a ſmall body on each, attached to, or near, the edge, between the two points, called corpora-ſeſamoidea. Theſe bodies are not placed exactly on the edge, but rather on that ſide next to the artery, leaving the edge of the valve looſe: this ſituation is beſt adapted to their intended uſe; the reaſon of the looſe edge being a little rounded, and of the bodies called corpora-ſeſamoidea being placed there, ariſes from there being three valves to each artery. Each of theſe valves, with its artery, forms a pouch, whoſe mouth, or cavity, opens toward the artery; and the convexity of each of the valves, when the artery is dilated, makes nearly the third of a circle, which is turned inwards, towards the centre of the artery, as well as towards the heart. It is from this oblique direction in the attachment that the valves perform their office, ſimply from the action of the heart upon the blood; and the blood upon the artery. This is entirely mechanical; depending on mechanical principles alone, as much as the action of a joint.

I have above obſerved, that the area deſcribed by the valves is the ſame with the artery, when that veſſel is in its ſyſtole, their outer ſurface lining the inner ſurface of the artery; but the artery being elaſtic, its diameter becomes larger when the blood flows into it; and the valves being inelaſtic, their looſe margins, or edges, are brought more into ſtraight lines acroſs the area of the mouth of the artery, and nearer to each other, ſo as to make an equilateral triangle. Thus they are fitted to catch the returning blood; and the artery re-acting with conſiderable force on the blood, preſſes on the valves, ſo as to puſh them inwards: theſe having no preſſure on the ſide next the heart become convex on this ſide, ſhutting up entirely the mouth of the artery. Here then is an effect ariſing naturally out of a variety of cauſes, viz. the oblique direction of the valves; their want of elaſticity; the elaſticity of the artery; and the dilatation of the artery; ſo that the return of the blood does not open the mouths of the valves, and in that way,

ſhut up the mouths of the artery. To demonſtrate this, let us ſuppoſe the extreme length of each of theſe valves to be an inch; then the circumference, of the artery, when in its ſyſtole, will be three inches: in that caſe the valves lie cloſe to the ſides of the artery, and deſcribe a circle of three inches circumference, (as in figure I.); but if you dilate this artery, as far as the valves will allow, which will be rather more than one fifth, the valves will run nearly into ſtraight lines, and make an equilateral triangle, (as in figure II.) whoſe ſides are a little curved inwards. As the artery is filled from the contraction of the heart, it is diſtended: and as it is diſtended, the valves do more and more their duty, till at length, by the full diſtention of the artery, they are made to bulge inwards, and the looſe edges, with the corpora-ſeſamoidea, are puſhed further towards one another; by all of which poſitions the area of the artery is entirely ſhut up.

Figure I. ſhews the artery in its ſyſtole, with the three valves, nearly cloſe to its ſides. The two black dots are deſigned to repreſent the mouths of the coronary arteries, now covered by the valves.

a a a. . . . .The circular ſection of the aorta.
b b. . . . .The mouths of the coronary arteries almoſt covered by the valves.
c c c. . . . .The hollow pouch of the valves.
d. . . . . The area within the valves.

Figure II. ſhows the artery in its diaſtole, where the three valves run nearly into ſtraight lines, making an equilateral triangle of the area of the aorta, d d d. But as their edges are rounded, and the bodies of the valves make a curve inwards, they by theſe means fill up in part this triangular ſpace, as is ſeen at f; and the corpora-ſeſamoidea, fill up the other part at e. In this way the whole area of the artery is filled up.

a a a. . . . . .The circular ſection of the aorta, in its ſtate of diaſtole; being now larger about one fifth.
b b. . . . . .The mouths of the coronary, now quite expoſed.
c c c c c c. . .The hollow pouch of the valves, now enlarged.

Fig. 1.

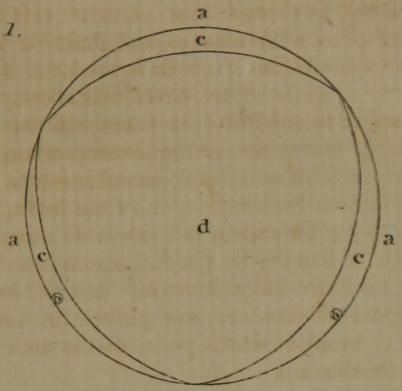
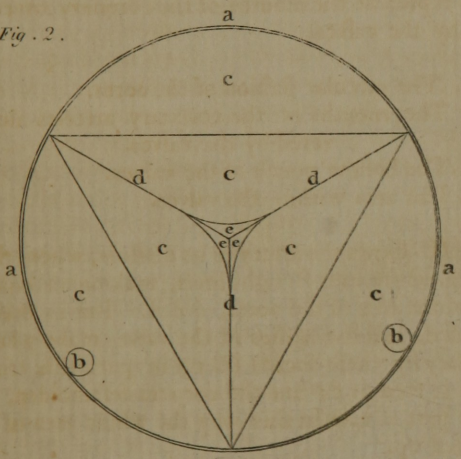


Fig. 2.



d d d. . . . . The circular edges which fill up more of the area of the artery than if they were ſtraight.
e e e. . . . . The corpora-ſeſamoidea.

The foregoing account is proved by injections againſt the valves; but it is ſtill more clearly proved that the diaſtole of the arteries makes the valves do their duty, when it is injected with the current of blood: for in proportion as the artery is diſtended, the valves recede from the ſides of the artery: and if the artery is fully diſtended, the communication is entirely cut off between the two pieces of injection, viz. that which is within the heart, and that which is within the artery. It may be objected here, that it will require a certain quantity of blood to make theſe valves do their office: and when there is not that quantity, it muſt be done by regurgitation. To this it may be anſwered, that nature always keeps a due proportion; and all the parts depend on one another: ſo that the quantity of blood, that is juſt ſufficient to keep the animal alive, is ſufficient to diſtend the artery ſo as to ſhut the valves*. The valves of the pulmonary artery do not do their duty ſo completely as thoſe of the aorta; for in them we do not find the corpora-ſeſamoidea; and if we inject a pulmonary artery, towards the right ventricle, it does not ſo completely hinder the injection paſſing into that cavity: nor are the two portions of injection completely ſeparated when the artery is injected from the ventricle as in the left ſide. So far as reſpects injections, the ſame obſervations are applicable to the valvulæ tricuſpides; therefore I believe the valves of the right ſide of the heart, are not ſo perfect as thoſe of the left: from hence we may ſuppoſe that the univerſal circulation requires to be more perfect than that through the lungs. We muſt ſee from this account of the action of the valves, that the

* As people advance in life, eſpecially men, we find the aorta loſing its elaſticity: and as it is acted upon with great force by the impetus of the blood, it loſes that elaſticity in the ſtate of its diaſtole; which throws the valves continually acroſs the area of the veſſels; and as the valves in thoſe caſes commonly become thicker, are often very irregular, and bony, we find that they neither recede from the ſides of the aorta, during the contraction of the heart, nor towards it during the ſyſtole of the artery: ſo that more blood is allowed to regurgitate into the ventricle, than in a regular circulation.

mouths of the coronary arteries are opened by the action of the heart; for as the arteries dilate, they become more and more expoſed.

VIII. OF THE DIVISION, OF BRANCHING, OF ARTERIES.

As all the arteries in animals poſſeſſed of a heart ariſe from, or begin at that heart, by one, or two trunks only, they are obliged to divide into, or ſend off branches, or ſmaller trunks, which again divide into ſtill ſmaller, till at laſt the whole body is ſupplied by the ultimate diviſions. This is called the branching, or ramification of arteries; and is ſomewhat ſimilar to the branching of a tree.

This branching of an artery does not depend on the artery itſelf, or on the powers propelling the blood, as in in a tree, but is governed by the formation of the body; that is, according as a greater, or leſs quantity of blood, or a greater, or leſs velocity is neceſſary to different parts.

Various modes of branching are made uſe of to anſwer the above purpoſes.

In general the moſt favourable mode for the free paſſage of the blood is adopted, viz. branching with acute angles; more eſpecially thoſe which are to carry the blood ſome conſiderable way; and ſtill more ſo in thoſe which are at a great diſtance from the propelling impulſe of the heart; which I ſhall now more particularly conſider.

As the force of the blood in the artery is ſtronger, the nearer it is to the heart, the difference in the velocity of the blood, near, and at a diſtance from the heart, if there was nothing to retard it, would be too great for the difference in parts; the near and the diſtant parts being in many inſtances of the ſame kind. To keep up a velocity ſufficient for the parts, and no more, nature has varied the angle of the origin of arteries, at different diſtances, from the ſource of the circulation. Thus we find that near the heart the arteries ariſe by obtuſe angles, ſome of them being reflected and the angles become leſs and leſs, till at length they

are very ſharp. The moſt remarable inſtance of this is in the intercoſtal and lumbar arteries; becauſe ſince they are a ſet of branches in the body, whoſe length and uſes are ſo much the ſame, if there be any difference in the angles, at the origin of the arteries, at equal diſtances from the heart, it muſt be made with regard to their length, from the origin to the part ſupplied. We find a difference even in the arteries which ariſe from the intercoſtals; for they are much more obtuſe at the beginning of the intercoſtals, than at their termination. The reaſon why this is not ſo evident, in all the arteries of the body, is, that there are ſo few arteries on the ſame ſide of the body, which take the ſame courſe, go to the ſame diſtance, and have the ſame office: for ſome parts require a greater velocity than others, which will make a difference in the origin of the two arteries, ſuppoſing they ſhould go the ſame length, and take the ſame courſe. We ſee the ſame thing in the ſecondary arteries, ſuch as the ſubclavian; for it ſends off its branches near its origin, at much more obſtuſe angles than it does further on. Haller, in his Phyſiology, ſays, That the arteries ariſe at an angle of forty-five degrees; which is the greateſt angle in projection: but he did not conſider, that in projection there are two powers, viz. gravitation, and the force applied; while the blood in the arteries has only one. It may be aſked, Whether the blood in an artery of a given ſize, ariſing from a large one, is ſent in with the ſame force as if the artery had ariſen from a much ſmaller trunk; or from an artery of the ſame ſize with itſelf, whoſe blood paſſed with the ſame velocity as in the large one? We find ſmall arteries coming off at once from large ones, inſtead of being a third, fourth, or fifth, from the large one. Arteries ſend off their branches at a longer, or ſhorter diſtance, according to circumſtances; or, in other words, they divide, and ſubdivide, more quickly in ſome places than in others. I believe this quick diviſion is more peculiar to glands, than moſt other parts, though it does not take place in all, as in the teſticle. They divide alſo quickly in the the ſubſtance of the brain. In the kidney, this is alſo remarkable; they would ſeem in that gland to be hurrying to their termination. The ſame happens as ſoon as the arteries enter the ſubſtance of the brain. Other parts appear to have the arteries elongated before they enter the part, as the ſpermatic artery; more eſpecially in ſome animals, as the bull, boar, etc. and in the female, in the

time of uterine-geſtation, where we ſhould expect the quickeſt circulation, we find the arteries elongated very conſiderably, which throws them into a ſerpentine courſe; all of which muſt retard the blood's motion in the part. We alſo find arteries playing in the parts, ramifying and anaſtomoſing, which diminiſhes the velocity of the blood; ſuch as thoſe of muſcles, membranes, etc. We may ſuppoſe from the foregoing inſtances, that in ſome, a quick ſupply of blood was neceſſary in ſuch parts: in the one for the drain; in an other, for the ſupport of the living powers: while in others, a more regular, ſlow, and even motion, anſwered the purpoſe better.

Arteries, in common, paſs in as direct lines from their origin to their deſtination, as poſſible; but this is not univerſally the caſe, for in many parts they run in a ſerpentine manner; ſo much ſo in ſome as to form a body of themſelves. Thus the ſpermatic artery in the male of many animals, more eſpecially the bull, is ſo convoluted, as to form a body. In the female alſo, the ſpermatic artery increaſes its ſerpentine courſe in the ſtate of uterine-geſtation. The internal carotid artery in man, and many other animals, as the horſe, where it paſſes through the ſkull, runs in a ſerpentine direction; and in the lion, bull, etc. it forms a plexus. This would appear to anſwer too purpoſes; one to leſſen the impulſe of the blood, as in the vertebral, and internal carotid, the ſpermatic artery, etc. the other to allow of the ſtretching of the parts, upon which the artery paſſes, as the mouth, or lips, the uterus, and other parts of the body, which admit of being ſtretched, or relaxed, as the bladder, ſtomach, enteſtines, etc. independent of their elaſticity.

We find not only the different ſyſtems of veſſels communicating with each other, as the arteries with the veins, the veins with the heart, to be continued into the artery again, and the abſorbents with the veins, to communicate, in the end, with the whole, but alſo the branches of each ſyſtem, communicating with one another, which is called anaſtomoſis.

Anaſtomoſing of veſſels, is the opening of one veſſel into another; ſo that if one of them be prevented from carrying its contents, the office can be performed by the other. The moſt common mode of anaſtomoſing is, when two

veſſels run into one, or are continued into each other; or one veſſel opens into another, from which others ariſe; but there is a peculiar communication between the two carotids, as well as between them and the vetebral, where a canal of communication paſſes directly between them; and this mode of communication takes place between the two deſcending aortas of ſome of the amphibia.

This anaſtomoſing is much more frequent in the ſmaller than the larger arteries. We ſeldom find trunks anaſtomoſe with one another. One reaſon for this is, the great diſproportion in number between the larger and ſmaller arteries; but the anaſtomoſis is much more frequent in the ſmaller in proportion to their number. The uſe of this is to give freedom to the circulation, as the chance of a ſtop being put to it is greateſt in the ſmalleſt arteries; the circulation in them not being ſo ſtrong; and paſſing through parts liable to be preſſed upon: this is readily ſeen in the tranſparent parts of the living body, when viewed through a microſcope. In ſome part of the body we find anaſtomoſis in pretty large trunks; but theſe are in parts eſſential to life, very liable to be compreſſed; or both.

The meſenteric artery anaſtomoſes by large trunks; the myſentery being a part eſſential to life, and very liable to compreſſion, from indurated fœces compreſſing the artery. In this caſe, if they only anaſtomoſed by the ſmall branches, on the inteſtines, the circulation might not be kept up ſufficiently to preſerve the gut. We obſerve the ſame thing in the brain; for there the arteries anaſtomoſe by large trunks, before they are diſtributed to the brain. The uſe of this is, that all parts of the brain might have an equal quantity of blood at all times, even where accident had put a ſtop to the circulation in any one veſſel; for the ſmall anaſtomoſis on the pia-mater, would not be ſufficient to keep up a due circulation; every where in the brain as I believe the arteries do not anaſtomoſe in the ſubſtance of the brain itſelf. There are large anaſtomoſes in the hand, and foot, for the ſame reaſon, as in the inteſtines. All the uſes ariſing from the anaſtomoſing of the veſſels are, perhaps, not yet perfectly underſtood: general reaſons can, I think, be aſſigned for them; but theſe will not apply to all caſes; there is ſomething, therefore, more than we are yet acquainted with. The abſorbents, and the veins, upon the whole, anaſtomoſe more frequently than the arteries; yet that circumſtance is reverſed re-

specting the veins in some places; and in the instances the uses of these systems of vessels are also in some measure reversed. Where all the three systems of vessels have nearly the same mode of action, we find that their manner of anastomosing is somewhat similar; and probably the differences might be easily accounted for.

Wherever they appear to be simply carriers, then their mode of anastomosing is somewhat similar: however, the absorbents anastomose more frequently than the veins; and the veins more than the arteries; and, probably, the absorbents anastomose every where. This is not so much the case with the veins; and not in the least so in some parts with the arteries. Let us see if we can assign reasons for all this variety in the different systems of vessels. The absorbents, from the office of absorbing, are to be considered only as carriers; and as they have no propelling force applied to their contents, and their coats are not strong, it is very probable, that a free communication between vessel, and vessel, should take place; upon the same general principle, the veins also anastomose; although perhaps not so frequently; and this difference may be, because they have in some degree, a propelling power applied to their contents; namely, the action of the heart. The arteries having a very strong propelling power applied to their contents, it was in them not necessary as a general principle; but where they are placed in similar circumstances, we find them similar in this respect.

Although the anastomosing of vessels is upon a general principle very proper, yet in many cases it would appear in the following parts to be very improper. The arteries do not anastomose in the kidnies. This cannot arise simply from there being no occasion for it, on account of there being no lateral, mechanical obstruction; since from the same mode of reasoning, the veins should not anastomose; which they do, very freely: this want of anastomosis in the arteries, therefore, answers some purpose in the œconomy of the part. In the liver, the branches of the vena-porta do not anastomose although the arteries do in their smaller branches; we may, therefore, suppose some particular purpose answered, besides free communication; and I believe the arteries do not anastomose in the substance of the brain; which makes the brain appear less vascular than it really is. We may observe, perhaps, as a general prin-

ciple, that arteries near to their deſtination, where they are to perform their particular functions, do not anaſtomoſe. Thus the artery of the kidnies, the vena-porta* ; the arteries in the ſubſtance of the brain, do not anaſtomoſe ; nor do the arteries on the villous coat of the inteſtines.

If it be queſtioned, whether anaſtomoſes are a means of retarding, or accelerating the circulation, I ſhould anſwer, that they appear to me, to retard the blood's motion ; although we find veſſels anaſtomoſing as freely with one another, at the greateſt diſtance from the heart, as near to it ; but at the ſame time we may obſerve, that where we ſhould ſuppoſe it was neceſſary for the circulation to be briſk, we find no anaſtomoſes in the arteries, as in the lungs, the kidnies ; and I believe hardly in the liver, except on the peritoneal coat, whoſe arteries are continuations of the hypatic artery.

I believe that the anaſtomiſing of veſſels increaſes their volume on the whole, and therefore allows a greater quantity of blood to be in them, than if they did not : that kind of net work too, which they make, increaſes the magnitude of the vaſcular ſyſtem ; for to anſwer this purpoſe, they take lateral and circular courſes ; which give them greater length, than if they had ſimply paſſed between origin, and deſtination, in ſtraight lines.

The better to aſcertain the velocity of the blood in the arteries, at the different diſtances from the heart, it will be neceſſary to know whether an artery be a cylinder, or a cone ; and when it divides into any number of branches, whether the whole of theſe, taken together, be leſs, equal, or greater, than the veſſel, or veſſels, from which they aroſe ; and, therefore, whether they hold leſs, the ſame, or more blood. It may be obſerved, that arteries keep a pretty exact proportion with each other ; the branches, with the trunk, etc. through the whole ſyſtem ; and therefore, whatever may be their ſhape, they preſerve it pretty regular, viz. if they are cylindrical, they are ſo regularly ; if conical, the ſame. I ſhould ſuſpect, however, that the anaſtomoſing of the arteries, in ſome degree, interferes with this regularity ; but it is probable that the ultimate

* This veſſel ſhould be conſidered as an artery.

branches may come back again, and correſpond with the original trunk. To aſcertain this, it is neceſſary to make choice of arteries, which for ſome length either ſend off no branches, or at leaſt ſuch as are very ſmall, when compared with the trunk: for it is impoſſible to meaſure with any degree of accuracy the ſize of branches, and then calculate their different capacity, in compariſon with that of the trunk, from whence they are derived: and I think it is reaſonable to ſuppoſe, that whether an artery divides or not, the ſize muſt be the ſame in both; for it is neceſſary that the ultimate effect ſhould be the ſame.

The arteries which are beſt adapted for this experiment, are thoſe of the placenta, and of the teſticles; particularly in the bull. The carotid arteries in ſome animals are tolerably well formed for experiments of this kind; for though theſe do not give us the exact proportions which the one end bears to another, yet they plainly demonſtrate which end is the largeſt.

The arteries of the placenta evidently increaſe in ſize, the nearer they approach to the placenta; and this is ſo very conſiderable as to require no experiment, unleſs it be intended to aſcertain the difference correctly. In the ſpermatic artery of the bull, it is equally evident; but as theſe arteries are much longer than the diſtance between their origin, and the parts which they are to ſupply, it may be ſuppoſed that this increaſe is peculiar to them, in order to anſwer ſome particular purpoſe: but the carotid arteries in ſome animals afford ſufficient proof that the arteries in common become larger as they paſs on and ramify; for the carotids may be reckoned ramifying arteries, as they ſend off branches.

The carotid artery of the camel, among quadrupeds, and of the ſwan, among birds, are very proper arteries for ſuch experiments.

To be as accurate as poſſible, I injected the arteries of two camels, and the arteries of a ſwan; and that one end might not be more diſtended than the other, the artery was well warmed, and placed in a perfectly horizontal poſition: the pipe was fixed into the lower end*, and the injection made ſo warm, as to keep fluid ſome time after having been injected: in this poſition it was allowed to cool. I made

* The fixing the pipe into the lower end was rather in favour of increaſing the ſize of this end.

ſections from each end; and, that they might be perfectly equal, I took a hard piece of wood, an inch thick, and bored a hole through it to the ſize of the artery, ſo as to contain a ſection exactly of that length, having a moveable button fixed at one end, which could be turned upon the hole, or off, at diſcretion. The artery being introduced through the hole, a projecting part was cut through, by a thin knife, in order that the artery might be divided at right angles to itſelf. After doing this, the artery was withdrawn, and the button was then turned upon the hole, ſo as to ſtop that end; and the cut end of the artery introduced to the bottom, or button: this piece, ſo encloſed, was ſeparated in the ſame manner.

Having taken a piece of the carotid artery from each end, which were of courſe exactly of equal lengths, I weighed them, and found that the ſection of the upper end was one grain and a half heavier than that of the lower.

The carotid artery of another camel, meaſuring three feet and a half in length, was found to ſend off forty-four ſmall branches, about the ſize of the human intercoſtal arteries; with one as large as the ulnar. Of this artery, a tranſverſe ſection, of one inch in length, being taken from each end, and weighed; that from the lower end was found to weigh two ſcruples, ſixteen grains and a half: while that from the upper end, weighed only two ſcruples, fourteen grains and a half.

In ſimilar ſections of the oppoſite carotid, which ſent off forty-ſeven branches, the difference in weight, between the upper and lower ſection, was five grains.

Similar ſections from carotid arteries of a ſwan being weighed, the lower ſections were found to be three grains and a half heavier than the upper; the lower ſection weighing thirteen grains and a half.

Had the lateral branches been preſerved an inch long, being the length of the ſections of the trunk, I believe each might have weighed above a grain; and in that caſe, the forty-four would have been nearly equal in weight to the trunk: ſhould this be true, the arteries increaſe very conſiderably, not only in their ramifications, but in their trunks. I imagine if the carotid artery, in the camel, did not ſend off any branch in its courſe, it would increaſe in ſize, nearly in the ſame proportion with the umbilical artery, or the ſpermatic, in the bull.

It is to be obſerved, that as arteries divide they increaſe in ſize, much faſter than if they did not: for inſtance, if a ſection of an artery, two inches long, is equally divided into two, the ſection that is the further from the heart ſhall be heavier than the other, perhaps, by one grain; but if the moſt diſtant ſection had divided into two branches, the two, taken together, would have been a grain and a half heavier; if three branches, two grains heavier, etc.

The increaſe of ſize in the arteries as they ramify, is an effect of the numerous ramifications.

From what has been already ſaid, it muſt appear that arteries form a cone, whoſe apex is at the heart: and if this be the caſe, in the adult, we ſhall find that it muſt be more ſo in the young ſubject; and will every day become leſs, as the child increaſes in growth.

The capillary arteries in the fœtus are probably as numerous as in an adult, perhaps more ſo; for we know that there is the ſame number of principal arteries in each. As far as we can trace them, they ſeem to ſend off the ſame number of ſmaller branches; and in many parts we find a great many more ſmall veſſels in the fœtus than in the adult.

In the eye, the membrane of the ear, etc. in all growing parts, ſuch as callus, granulations, etc. we find a great many more veſſels, than in ſimilar grown parts; or in the ſame parts, when completely formed; not in proportion to the ſize of the part, but more in number.

Theſe are ſtrong proofs that many arteries are obliterated in the adult. How much more vaſcular, therefore, muſt a child be, than an adult, in proportion to its ſize, when in a much ſmaller compaſs a greater number of arteries are accumulated!

From this it would appears that the only great change in the vaſcular ſyſtem, is elongation of the veſſels. As we find very little difference between the blood of a fœtus, and of an adult, it is natural to infer, that the ſmalleſt veſſels are nearly of the ſame ſize in both; for the termination of the arteries, or what may be called the operative part of the arterial ſyſtem, being intended to perform the ſame functions in the fœtus, as in the adult, it is reaſonable to ſuppoſe, that the increaſe is in the length of the whole vaſcular ſyſtem; and that the increaſe in the ſize of the trunks is in an uniform gradation, from the capillaries, towards the heart; but never becoming equal to the capillaries.

If the preceding account be true, or nearly ſo, we ſee that there muſt be a great proportional difference between the ſize of the two extremes of the arteries, in the young ſubject, and the adult. We may venture to ſay, that the aorta in the child in not one-fourth of the ſize of that veſſel in the adult; and that the capillaries are rather larger than thoſe in the adult, which would of itſelf make the whole capillaries in the fœtus more than four times the ſize of the aorta in the ſame; and as theſe arteries are very ſhort, the cone, of courſe, increaſes very faſt.

In the fœtus in utero, we are to conſider that the aorta, at the beginning from the ventricle, is larger than in the adult, in proportion to the quantity of blood that paſſes through the foramen ovale: and beyond the entrance of the canalis arterioſus the aorta is increaſed in proportion to the ſize of the canalis arterioſus; and it is at this part its ſize is to be eſtimated: this probably makes the aorta, beyond the entrance of the canalis anterioſus, twice as large as in the adult, in proportion to their ſize; but the drawback upon this, from the body, is the placenta; for the placenta is to be conſidered as part of the body, diſpoſing of the blood that afterwards circulates through the lungs: however, when it is ſeparated, it may take away with it nearly its own proportion of blood; although I rather ſuſpect it does not. But I do not ſuppoſe it is equal to the quantity paſſing through the foramen ovale, and canalis arterioſus; and if ſo, then the body has the overplus.

The aorta of a fœtus is, therefore, not only larger than that of an adult, but larger than in that proportion which the ſize of the fœtus bears to the ſize of the placenta: or it may be put in this view, that beſides the difference in the ſize of the aorta, in a young ſubject (as before obſerved) and in an adult, the ſize of the aorta, in the foetus, is ſtill larger, viz. more than in that proportion which the circulation in the lungs of the adult, bears to the circulation in the lungs of the foetus; which is probably much more than that of the placenta.

EXPERIMENT on the arteries of a child.

I injected the deſcending aorta of the foetus, juſt above the diaphragm, in the ſame manner as I did the carotids in the camel, and ſwan, by which means I injected the myſenteric artery, the ſubject of experiment.

This artery has a trunk, which at first does not put off branches, and then sends off several; which may be called so many trunks. These again do not immediately give off branches, and are therefore measurable with the trunk, from which they arise.

I first made a section of the trunk of the mesenteric artery, near its root, before it sends off any considerable branches, one-third of an inch in length; and then another section of the same artery, having the same length, close to the origin of the first branch: all the branches arising from it being preserved of the same length with the trunk itself. When they were weighed in opposition to each other, the trunk without the branches was found to weigh thirteen grains and a half; while that with the branches weighed eighteen grains; four grains more than the trunk. A section of the aorta, near half an inch long, being made just above the origin of the inferior mesenteric artery, was weighed against a section of the same length, including the inferior mesenteric, likewise of the same length; the last section weighing one grain more than the other. The highest amounting to six grains, the lowest to seven. A section of the lower end of the aorta, including a portion of the two iliacs, was weighed against a section of the two iliacs, which was equal in length, and these were found to weigh rather heavier.

By the above is confirmed what I formerly asserted; that an artery, not giving off branches, does not increase so fast as another which does, if we include all the branches.

From all that has been said, it appears that there must be a much greater quantity of blood in a foetus, than in an adult, in proportion to their difference of size; and that the heart must be larger and stronger, in proportion, to move this blood; which will probably still circulate in the smaller vessels with less velocity.

The whole of these differences, between the foetus and the adult, must be intended for the purposes of growth; and indeed we may discern the necessity of it: for if a child was not more vascular in proportion to its size, than the adult, its growth, we might conceive, would only be in proportion to the number of its vessels; which would be twelve times less than they are; for a new born child is only one-twelfth in size to that of an adult. A child would, therefore, grow faster and faster every year; for instance, in

proportion to its ſize, as the veſſels would become numerous in that proportion.

But this is not really the caſe, for children grow leſs and leſs, every year, in proportion to the ſize; only adding its firſt year's growth to itſelf every ſucceeding year; though, perhaps, not quite ſo much, as the veſſels rather decreaſe in number.

That this is the caſe may be proved by taking the eye for an example, which grows more the firſt year after conception, than it does any year after; ſo that the diſproportion between the veſſels of this part, in thoſe two ſtates, is particularly great.

The growth of an animal is, therefore, in proportion to the number of its capillary veſſels: as the body grows, the veſſels elongate to keep pace with that growth: the capillary veſſels at laſt come to a ſtand; and the arterial ſyſtem is daily loſing ground.

The heart grows in proportion to the increaſed length of arteries, that it may be able to throw the blood through the whole, but not in proportion to the ſize of the whole body; becauſe the veſſels do not increaſe in number, or ſize, in proportion to the ſize of the body. But as the heart increaſes only in proportion to the ſize of the whole vaſcular ſyſtem; while the body increaſes faſter, and more, the heart cannot be in proportion to the ſize of the whole body; hence its actions muſt in time loſe the power of elongating the body, and become merely ſufficient to nouriſh what is already formed. Perhaps it does not even continue to do ſo much; for it is not impoſſible, that the body may begin to decline from the moment it ceaſes to grow; the heart having puſhed the growth of the body, even beyond its own powers: to preſerve it in that ſtate.

IX. OF THE ACTION OF THE ARTERIES AND THE VELOCITY OF THE BLOOD's MOTION.

Arteries during their diaſtole, which ariſes from an increaſed quantity of blood being thrown into them, increaſe much more in length than width, being thrown into a ſurpentine courſe; therefore, inſtead of the term diaſtole, it ſhould rather be called, the elongated ſtate. It is, however, the increaſed diameter that becomes ſenſible to the touch. This, probably, ariſes from the muſcular coat oppoſing the dilatation of the arteries, while it cannot the lengthening. The dilatation of the attery producing the ſtroke, is either felt by the finger, or may be ſeen when ſuperficial; but were we to judge of the real increaſe of the artery by this, we ſhould deceive ourſelves; for when covered by the integuments, the apparent effect is much greater than it really is in the artery itſelf; for in laying ſuch an artery bare, the nearer we come to it, the leſs viſible is its pulſation; and when laid bare, its motion is hardly to be either felt, or ſeen.

The more an artery is covered, eſpecially with ſolid bodies, the more is the pulſation to be felt, or ſeen: thus tumors over large arteries have a conſiderable motion given to them; and have often been ſuppoſed to be aneuriſms.

The knowledge of this fact ariſing more from experiment than common obſervation in the living body, may be a ſufficient reaſon for keeping to the old expreſſion, dilatation.

This circumſtance, which has been but little taken notice of, produces an effect, which has alſo been unobſerved. If the arteries had been dilated by the force of the blood's motion, as has been ſuppoſed, its motion ſhould be much leſs retarded than it is; for even ſuppoſing that the increaſed area of the artery is the ſame when elongated, as if dilated, and therefore holds an equal quantity to a dilated one, it muſt appear evident, that the blood will not arrive ſo quickly at the oppoſite end.

The continual repetition of the cauſe of this ſurpentine courſe obliges the arteries in many places to retain this

ſtate, eſpecially in parts that do not yield readily, as the ſkull, upon which the temporal artery is placed; and this retention of the ſerpentine courſe, is ſtill more obvious in thoſe arteries which have loſt a good deal of their elaſticity. However, this increaſe of the artery is ſo manifeſt, as to be felt, or ſeen: and produces what is called the pulſe; which muſt gradually diminiſh in proportion as the arteries divide into ſmaller branches; a ſmall artery having a proportional pulſe, and the arterial ſyſtem increaſing as it goes along; both of which cauſes diminiſh the velocity of the blood, render the diaſtole leſs, and its motions more uniform.

From the deſcription I have given of the heart, with its action, and the parts of which an artery is compoſed, it muſt appear that an artery is at all times full of blood, which is moving on with more or leſs velocity; becauſe it receives it from the heart, at interrupted periods; and when a given quantity is thrown in at one end, this will make a conſiderable difference between this part and the other; which part will of courſe be more upon the ſtretch; for although the artery dilates, yet as it is from the impulſe of the blood, the blood muſt move much faſter on in the diaſtole of the artery, than its ſyſtole. This part of the artery will contract, and throw the blood into the remaining part; but not with the ſame force it was received; but ſtill the artery beyond will receive it faſter, than it will give it. By theſe means, all the parts of the artery are brought to a more equal ſtate; for this additional quantity of blood, that was at firſt in the one part only, is in ſome degree equally diffuſed through the whole arterial ſyſtem; by which means too, it is becoming proportionably ſlower in its motion: but all theſe circumſtances will vary according as the arterial ſyſtem conſiſts of cylinders, or cones, and if of cones, then according to the extremity, which is the baſe; all of which may be conjectured, but cannot be exactly eſtimated. Yet that the force of the heart might not be loſt, the elaſticity of the great artery, over the ſmaller, is happily applied; becauſe it propels the blood more forcibly on, between the ſtrokes of the heart: for although we are to ſuppoſe that the heart, which was capable of diſtending a part, ſo as to make it react, and ſend the blood through any given length, was alſo capable of ſending

it through that length at once; yet we muſt ſee, that by an elaſtic power being applied at one end, while this is gradually loſt towards the other, the elaſtic part acts with a ſuperior force over the other, in the proportion as the other has leſs elaſticity. This other being alſo leſs upon the ſtretch, is overcome by that which is more ſo; which is always the end next to the heart: for the muſcular part relaxes, requiring hardly any force to diſtend it; and indeed, as the muſcular power has contracted the artery, within its middle, or ſtationary ſtate; and this more and more, as we get into ſmaller veſſels, the muſcular coat is at firſt ſtretched by the recovery of the elaſtic power; ſo that the blood paſſes into the ſmaller branches with much leſs reſiſtance than it would have done if the veſſels had been elaſtic in proportion to their ſize. Theſe proportions, however, in the blood's motion, ariſing from the elaſtic power of the arteries, will not be the ſame in the fœtus, and adult; and will be ſtill more different in the aged ſubject: for in this laſt the elaſtic power of the artery is diminiſhing, as well as the muſcular, the coats becoming more rigid: beſides which, the veſſels vary from a conical ſhape, (whoſe apex is at the heart, and baſis at their extremities) towards a cylinder; and this change is alſo increaſed by the loſs of many of the ſmaller veſſels; ſo that as we grow up, the baſe of the cone is gradually diminiſhed from two cauſes.

The elaſtic power will allow of a quantity of blood in the animal, beyond the natural ſtate of the artery; and the muſcular power will allow of a ſmaller, without the animal being affected, although the muſcular alone would have anſwered both theſe purpoſes. Arteries then are the conductors, and diſpoſers of the blood; as conducters, they are in every animal above fiſh, both paſſive, and active; paſſive, in admitting of the propelling power of the heart; and active, in continuing that power to the extreme part.

Beſides theſe reaſons for a difference in the velocities of the blood, at different diſtances from the heart, I conceive there is a material difference between the velocities of the blood, in thoſe veſſels which carry red blood, and thoſe which carry only the coagulable lymph, and the ſerum; for where the red blood goes, there is a quicker return, than where there is only the coagulable lymph, and ſerum. For this, there are two reaſons, viz. that where the red blood paſſes, it is commonly nearer to the heart, while the other parts go to a greater diſtance: but, beſides this, the veſ-

sels which carry the red blood, are larger, and I believe ramify more quickly; the velocity therefore of the blood, is greater in them. Where the lymph and serum pass only, the velocity of the blood is languid, and it appears merely to carry nourishment, such as in tendons, ligament, etc.

So far we are to consider the above as a general principle arising out of the construction of a blood-vessel; but they are secondary, or collateral circumstances, acting so as to accelerate, or retard, the blood's motion.

Since the solids and fluids have a mutual dependence on each other, and since the solids answer various purposes, for which, quantity, velocity, etc. are peculiarly necessary, we find that this intercourse between the two is with great exactness kept up. I have already observed that the angles, by which branches of an artery arise, either retard or allow of a freer motion in the blood; but Nature appears to have taken still more care in retarding the blood's motion, where velocity might do mischief. She seems also to have taken more care about the blood's motion in some parts than in others: as for example, in the brain; a part which probably cannot bear the same irregularity in quantity, or velocity, of the blood, as many other parts of the body. I should suppose, that by sending four arteries to the brain, instead of one, or which would have been more regular, two, the force of the motion of the blood is broken, as well as by the winding course of the internal carotid arteries. The verterbræ, likewise, are intended, we may suppose, to prevent a too great velocity of the blood; both because the artery is longer than it need be, and the blood is hindered from moving in a straight line: but besides the serpentine course of the arteries of the head, they pass through a bone; but principally the carotids, where the bony canal is closely applied to the coats of the artery; so that there can be no pulsation here, but a greater velocity of the blood in those parts, and probably less in the brain. This I should suppose retards also the motion of the blood in the brain; because the blood passing through a smaller place than common, must meet with a greater resistance, and therefore a small quantity must pass through this part in a given time, so that the pulsation of the arteries in the brain should be less than any where else: for we may suppose, that the motion is considerably lost by the blood com-

ing into an elaſtic canal of the ſame diameter, with that through which it paſſed, before it came into the bony canal. If then this motion is loſt, and the quantity of blood is really leſſened in a given time, its motion muſt be more regular, and the pulſation leſs.

In ſome animals, the carotid artery is found to divide and ſubdivide, forming a plexus, and the branches unite again before it goes to the brain. This is called, rete mirabile; and in animals, which have it, will certainly break the force of the blood's motion: but ſince it is not univerſal, ſome peculiar purpoſe muſt be anſwered by it. It is not in the horſe, and aſs, for inſtance; but it is in the lion. Where the veſſels anaſtomoſe, there is alſo a conſiderable retardation to the blood s motion; and they are found to anaſtomoſe a good deal on the pia-matter, before they enter the brain; but I believe not within its ſubſtance.

X. OF VEINS.

THE veſſels* carrying the blood from any part of the body towards the heart, are called the veins: they are more paſſive than the arteries; and ſeem to be from their beginning, to their termination in the heart, little more than conductors of the blood to the heart, that it may receive its ſalutary influence from the lungs. However, this is not univerſally the caſe, for the vena portarum would ſeem to aſſume the office of an artery in the liver, and therefore becomes an active part; and we have many veins formed into plexuſes, ſo as to anſwer ſome purpoſe, not at all ſubſervient to the circulation; but ſtill in this reſpect, they are not to bereckoned active. They differ from the arteries in many of their properties, although in ſome they are very ſimilar.

They do not compoſe ſo uniform, or regular a ſyſtem of veſſels, as the arteries, either in their form, or uſe, being

* A vein is commonly a canal, eſpecially that which carries red blood; but in many animals it is entirely cellular yet I uſe the word as a general term, when applied to the blood.

ſubject to conſiderable variety in their uſes, which are, however, paſſive, not active; and often anſwering, from their conſtruction, collateral purpoſes.

The coats of the veins, upon the whole, are not ſo thick as thoſe of the arteries; but differ materially in different ſituations of the body. Thus they become thinner, and thinner, in proportion to their ſize, the nearer to the heart: however, this is not equally ſo through the whole venal ſyſtem, but principally in the depending veins, as thoſe of the extremities, more eſpecially the lower in the human, and ſtill more ſo, the nearer to the extreme parts. In ſuch parts it is often difficult to diſtinguiſh the vein from the artery: yet this is not to be remarked in the veins of aſcending parts, or thoſe coming from the head, or ſuch as are horizontal, eſpecially in the human ſubject; and in animals who have a large portion of their body horizontal, there is a little difference in the coats of ſuch veins at different diſtances from the heart. I ſuſpect the muſcular powers are much greater in what may be called aſcending veins, than either deſcending, or horizontal: and I believe, in general, it is very conſiderable; for if we look at the back of our hand, and compare their ſize in a warm day, or before a fire; and in a cold day, they hardly appear to be the ſame veins. They are not ſo ſtrong in their coats as the arteries, and their ſtrength is in an inverſe proportion to their ſize in the extremities; and the reaſon is very obvious. They are more denſe in their coats than the arteries, yet in the dead body they ſeem to admit of the tranſudation of the blood; for when there is the leaſt degree of putrefaction, we can trace the veins with the eye, on the ſkin, as if very large, the cellular membrane and the ſkin being tinged for ſome way on each ſide of the vein. In the liver, we find injections eſcaping the vena cava hepatica, and getting into its ſubſtance in a peculiar manner. They have nearly the ſame elaſticity with the arteries.

They are ſimilar to the arteries in their ſtructure, being compoſed of an elaſtic, and muſcular ſubſtance; the elaſtic in ſome degree preſerving a middle ſtate, although not ſo perfectly as in the arteries. The muſcular power adapts the veins to the various circumſtances which require the area to be within the middle ſtate, and aſſiſts the blood in its motion towards the heart.

The coats of the veins themselves are vascular; although not very much so. The arteries arise from the nearest small ramifying arteries; and the corresponding veins do not terminate in the cavity of the vien to which they belong, but pass off from the body of the vein, and join some others from different parts; and at last terminate in the common trunk, some way higher.

On laying open the jugular vein of a dog, and closing up the wound for some hours, and then opening it, I observed the vessels of this part very distinctly. They were becoming inflamed, therefore turgid; and I could easily distinguish between the arteries and veins, by the colour of the blood in them.

Veins have interruptions in their cavities, called valves. They are thin inelastic membranes, of an exact semilunar form; their unattached edge being cut off straight, not curved, as in those of the arteries; and this is, because there are only two of them, whose circumference adheres to the sides of the vein. They are not placed in a transverse direction, so as to cut the axis of the vein perpendicularly; but obliquely, as the valves at the beginning of the arteries, making a pouch, whose mouth is turned towards the heart. They are attached in pairs, the two making two pouches, whose edges come in contact. In the larger veins of many animals, as the jugular veins of a horse, etc. there are often three valves, as at the beginning of the aortas but not so completely formed: these valves as it were, cut the veins into two at this part. These two valves are not always of equal size. At this part there are always two swellings in this form; but I believe more in the adult, than in the young subject. They are not formed from a doubling of the internal coat, as has been imagined; for the internal coat is elastic; but the valves are rather of a tendinous nature; from this circumstance, together with their shape, and their mode of attachment to the sides of the vein, they always do their office whenever the vein is full, in the same manner as the valves of the arteries. The valves of the veins are chiefly in the extremities, jugular veins, and the veins on the exterior parts of the head; but never in the veins of the brain, heart, lungs, intestines, liver, spleen, nor kidnies.

Where a smaller vein opens into a larger, there is often a valvular structure at the acute angles; but this is not constant.

The veins, taken altogether, are much larger than the arteries; but in the extremities, the veins that attend an artery, are sometimes less. Nevertheless, there are commonly two of them; but besides these, there are superficial ones, which are much larger than those deeply seated. The best way, however, of judging, is by comparing them with the corresponding arteries, where there are no supernumery veins, as in the intestines, kidnies, lungs, brain, etc. we find that they are larger than the arteries; and this too, where a considerable waste has taken place of the arterial blood in the different secretions.

From this circumstance the blood's motion in them is slower; and they allow a greater quantity to be in the body at all times.

There is a greater number of trunks of veins in the body, than of arteries, at least visible veins; for wherever there is an artery, in common there is a vein; and in many places too, one on each side, which sometimes make a kind of plexus round it; besides, there are many veins where there are no corresponding arteries, as on the surface of the body; for in the extremities many of the larger veins pass superficially; but those become fewer and fewer towards the trunk of the body. They are numerous also in the neck of the human subject; but in some of the viscera, as the intestines, the veins and arteries correspond in number very exactly. Dr. Hales, however, in his Staticks says, that he has seen a number of arteries throw their blood into one vein, which, if true, shews that there are more small arteries than veins.

Although veins generally attend the arteries, there are some exceptions, even in corresponding veins, as in the piamater; but they cannot all attend the arteries, there being more superficial veins on the extremities, and neck; but the large trunks do. The supernumerary veins are not so regular as those that attend the arteries, being hardly alike in two people.

The veins may be said, upon the whole, to accompany the arteries; and it is most reasonable that this should be

the caſe, ſince both perform the ſame office of conducting the blood, the ſame courſe muſt anſwer equally in both: this, however, is not univerſally the caſe, ſome veins being intended for particular purpoſes, as the vena portarum; ſome forming bodies, as the penis, plexus reteformis, and others varying their courſe for convenience, as in the brain; the veins of this viſcus taking in general a very different courſe from the arteries, but this is principally in the larger veins of the brain; for the ſmaller, which are in the ſubſtance, accompany the arteries. The intention of this ſeems to be, that the largeſt veins, called the ſinuſes, ſhould be ſo formed as not to be compreſſible; probably that there ſhould be as little chance as poſſible of any ſtoppage to the circulation of the blood in this part. But in ſome parts of animals they vary their courſe from the arteries, where we do not ſo well ſee the intention, becauſe it is not the caſe in others. Thus the veins in the kidnies of the cat kind and hyæna have the veins, in part, paſſing along the ſurface in the external membrane, like the ſinuſes in the brain. Veins ſeldom or ever take a ſerpentine courſe, becauſe a retardment in the blood's motion in them anſwers no particular purpoſe in the œconomy of the parts; and the more readily the blood gets to the heart the better. However, the plexuſes, although not intended to retard the motion of the blood, anſwer other purpoſes not immediately connected with the circulation.

Veins, upon the whole, anaſtomoſe more frequently than the arteries, eſpecially by their larger trunks, and more particularly in the extremities; for we often ſee a canal of communication going between two trunks, and one trunk ſhall divide into two, and then unite again. Where the veins and the arteries correſpond, their anaſtomoſes are nearly the ſame. I believe they do not anaſtomoſe in the lungs or liver; however, the veins correſponding to the arteries, do not always follow this rule; for the veins in the ſpleen and kidnies anaſtomoſe in very large trunks, while the arteries do not at all. This of the larger veins anaſtomoſing more frequently, is becauſe a vein is more eaſily compreſſed, and the blood has a ready paſſage into another; beſides, the valves render it more neceſſary, for when the blood has got paſt a valve, it cannot take a retrograde courſe, but may take a lateral: and indeed it is principally in thoſe veins which have valves that we find thoſe large anaſtomoſ-

ing branches; by this means the blood gets freely to the heart.

As the area of all the veins is larger than that of the arteries, the blood will move more ſlowly through them; and this is evident from every obſervation that can be made. It may be obſerved in the large ſuperficial veins in the extremities of the living body, and the difference of velocity in the blood flowing from a vein and artery in an operation is very great. The blood, however, moves with a good deal of velocity in a vein: for if we ſtop the circulation in the beginning of any of the ſuperficial veins of an extremity, and empty the vein above, immediately upon removing the finger the blood will move along the vein faſter than the eye can follow it; yet its motion is ſo ſlow as to allow the blood to loſe its ſcarlet colour, and acquire the modena red; and this more ſo as it paſſes on to the heart.

The blood moves more ſlowly in the veins than in the arteries, that it may come into the right auricle more ſlowly; for if the two venæ cavæ were of the ſame ſize with the aorta, the blood would have the ſame velocity in them which the auricle, as it is now conſtructed, could not have borne: but it may be probable, that the blood is aſſiſted in its paſſage into the auricle by a kind of vacuum being produced by the decreaſe of the ſize of the ventricles in their contraction.

From the number of anaſtomoſing branches, eſpecially by larger trunks, from the blood being liable to temporary obſtructions in many places, and alſo moving with little force, its courſe becomes often very irregular, and undetermined; much more ſo than in the arteries.

The firſt cauſe of the blood's motion in the vein of a quadruped, is the force of the heart; for I think we muſt ſuppoſe that the heart can, and does carry on ſimple circulation; becauſe in paralytic limbs, where voluntary muſcular action is totally loſt, and where, I conceive, the involuntary is very weak, the circulation is continued, although, I believe, with much leſs velocity than in perfect and ſound parts: beſides, we have obſerved, that the arteries continue the motion of the blood in them where the heart either fails to do it, or where an increaſed motion may be wanted. The arteries, therefore, will aſſiſt the heart in pro-

pelling the blood through the veins; however, it is assisted by collateral causes. The second cause, is their muscular contraction; which most probably is in the direction of the blood's motion, assisted by lateral pressure of all kinds; because the valves will favour this course wherever they are. However, as the valves are not universal, the motion of the blood in some veins must be carried on without them, and therefore they are not absolutely necessary.

Since we see the veins assuming the office of arteries in the liver of quadrupeds, birds, amphibia, and fish, and much more so in many of the inferior orders of animals, the motion of whose blood is first derived from the heart, we must suppose that veins have considerable power in carrying on the circulation; but the resistance being continually removed at their termination into the heart, will direct and assist the blood's motion in that direction, more especially when influenced by the action of the vessels themselves, or any lateral pressure. In those veins which are accompanied by the arteries, the pulsation of the artery assists in propelling the blood towards the heart; more especially where there are two or more attending an artery.

When treating of the motion of the blood, in the arteries, I observed that its motion was not in an uniform stream, but interruped, which arose from the heart's action; but as it receded from that viscus, that its motion gradually became more uniform, till at last it was nearly a continued stream. However, it is not certain, but an alternate accelerated motion is continued into the veins, immediately from the heart, although it may not be an easy undertaking to ascertain this: for simply observing an accelerated motion in the blood of the veins, more especially the small ones, does not prove that this was an alternate increase immediately from the arteries.

Every artery has a pulsation in itself, immediately from the heart; but a secondary vein, or one that is a third or fourth in order of size cannot, because it has more than one cause acting upon it: for such vein is receiving the impulse of the heart at very different times, owing to the larger trunk receiving blood by a number of smaller veins that come from a variety of parts: so that if the trunk was to receive it by starts from the smaller veins, it would only be a tremor, or confused motion. This is a reason why this cause could produce none in the secondary veins. The fact is, however, that there is a pulsation in the veins;

for when we bleed a patient in the hand, or foot, we evidently ſee a ſtrong jet, much more in ſome than in others; and much more here than in the bend of the arm. The query is, Does this ariſe from the immediate ſtroke of the heart; or is it by the lateral preſſure, occaſioned by the ſwell of the arteries? To aſcertain this the better, it is neceſſary to obſerve ſeveral things: we may remark that the pulſation in the veins is more in ſome parts than in others: thus I ſhould ſuppoſe it was more in the veins of the kidney, ſpleen, lungs and brain, eſpecially the laſt, than in many other parts: but this from the lateral ſwell of the arteries cannot, from the above obſervations, affect all parts alike; for the veins on the back of the hand being ſuperficial, and not ſurrounded with vaſcular parts, could not be affected by arteries: but ſtill it may ariſe from the lateral ſwell of the ſmaller arteries; and this acceleration, given to the blood's motion in the ſmaller veins, is carried to thoſe on the back of the hand. But I think I have ſeen the difference in the projection ſo great, that it hardly could ariſe from that cauſe alone: and, indeed, if this was the only cauſe, we ſhould have it in ſome degree in every vein; for every vein is ſo far ſurrounded as to be in ſome meaſure affected from the ſwell of the arteries of the part: but we certainly do not perceive it in ſo great a degree in the bend of the arm. The larger veins, near to the heart, have a pulſation which ariſes from the contraction of the heart preventing the entrance of the blood at that time, and producing a ſtagnation. This I ſaw very evidently in a dog whoſe cheſt I opened, and produced artificial breathing: but I could not ſay whether this aroſe from the contraction of the auricles, ventricles, or both: but the vena cava ſuperior has a contraction in itſelf, in both dog and cat, and, probably, in the human ſubject. Even breathing produces a ſtagnation near the thorax; for during inſpiration the veins readily empty themſelves; but in expiration there is a degree of ſtagnation. Coughing, ſneezing, or ſtraining, in any way where the thoracic and abdominal muſcles are concerned, produces this effect.

I think it is probable, that where there is an univerſal action of the vaſcular ſyſtem, the actions of the arteries and veins is alternate. That when the arteries contract, as in many fevers, the veins rather dilate, more eſpecially the larger.

PART II.

CHAPTER I.

UNION BY THE FIRST INTENTION.

I MAY obſerve, that all alterations in the natural diſpoſitions of a body are the reſult either of injury or diſeaſe; and, that all deviations from its natural actions ariſe from a new diſpoſition being formed.

Injury is commonly ſimple; diſeaſe more complicated.

The diſpoſitions ariſing from theſe are of three kinds; the firſt, is the diſpoſition of reſtoration in conſequence of ſome immediate miſchief, and is the moſt ſimple.

The ſecond is the diſpoſition ariſing from neceſſity; as for inſtance, that which produces the action of thickening parts, of ulceration, etc.

This is a little more complicated than the former, as it may ariſe both from accident and diſeaſe, and therefore becomes a compound of the two.

The third is the diſpoſition in conſequence of diſeaſe; which is more complicated than either, as diſeaſes are infinite. Yet many local diſeaſes although complex in their natures, are ſo ſimple in their extent, as to allow the removal of the diſeaſed part, becoming when that is done; ſimilar to many accidents.

As diſeaſe is a wrong action of the living parts, the reſtoration to health muſt firſt conſiſt in ſtopping the diſeaſed

diſpoſitions and actions, and then in a retrograde motion towards health.

In treating ſyſtematically of ſuch complaints as are the object of ſurgery, we ſhould always begin with the moſt ſimple, and advance gradually to the more complicated, by which means we ſhall be more clearly underſtood.

There are many complaints requiring the attention of a ſurgeon, which cannot be called diſeaſe, becauſe having been produced by ſomething foreign to the body, as in accidents, they are to be conſidered as a violence committed upon it, altering in ſome degree the ſtructure of parts, and conſequently interrupting the natural operations already deſcribed.

The parts ſo hurt not being able to purſue their original or natural mode of action, are obliged to deviate from it; and this deviation will vary according to the nature of the violence, the nature of the part, and the ſtate of the conſtitution at the time.

An alteration in ſtructure requires a new mode of action for its reſtoration; as the act of reſtoration cannot be the ſame with what was natural to the parts before any alteration had taken place.

The alteration of ſtructure by violence, requires only the moſt ſimple change in the natural action of the part to reſtore it; and of courſe the moſt ſimple method of treatment by art, if it be ſuch as to require any aſſiſtance at all; for there are many accidents where none is neceſſary.

It will be proper to obſerve here, that there is a circumſtance attending accidental injury which does not belong to diſeaſe, viz. that the injury done, has in all caſes a tendency to produce both the diſpoſition and the means of cure.

The operations of reſtoration ariſe naturally out of the accident itſelf; for when there is only a mechanical alteration in the ſtructure, the ſtimulus of imperfection taking place, immediately calls forth the action of reſtoration; but this is contrary to what happens in diſeaſe; for diſeaſe is a diſpoſition producing a wrong action, and it muſt continue this wrong action till the diſpoſition is ſtopped, or wears itſelf out; when this ſalutary effect, however, has once taken place, the ſtate of the body becomes ſimilar to that in a ſimple accident, viz. a conſciouſneſs of imperfection is excited, which produces the action of reſtoration.

In injuries ariſing from accident, we have hitherto ſuppoſed that the parts have no tendency to any diſeaſed action, independent of the accident; for if they have, it is probable that ſuch a tendency may be ſtronger than the diſpoſition for reſtoration, and in that caſe they will fall into the peculiar diſeaſed action, as was explained when treating of ſuſceptibility. Let us take the ſcrophula and cancer as examples, and we ſhall find, that if a part be hurt, which has a ſtrong tendency to ſcrophula, it will, moſt probably run into the ſcrophulus mode of action, in preference to that of reſtoration; and therefore, we have many joints, when injured, aſſuming the ſcrophulous action, called white ſwelling; or if a woman, beyond thirty years of age, receives a blow on the breaſt, it is more likely to acquire the cancerous mode of action, than that of reſtoration; which ſhould be well diſtinguiſhed from what is immediately conſequent, viz. the inflammation; for on this depends a knowledge of diſeaſes.

Although accident may be ſaid to produce an effect on a part (whatever that effect may be) which has a tendency to its own cure, yet there are often not only immediate conſequences ariſing from that effect, as inflammation; and again, the conſequences of this inflammation, as ſuppuration; but the baſis of diſeaſes are alſo frequently laid by it, not by producing them immediately or naturally, but by exciting ſome ſuſceptibility of the conſtitution, or of a part, into a diſpoſition for a diſeaſe, which may be latent for a conſiderable time, and then come into action.

Thus ſcrophula, cancer, etc. often ariſe from accident, even where the parts in conſequence of the injury have gone through the immediate and the ſecondary ſtages of a cure.

Thoſe effects of accident which ariſe from the nature of the parts hurt, may be divided into ſuch as take place in ſound parts, and ſuch as effect parts already diſeaſed. The firſt is what I ſhall at preſent treat of, the ſecond, being connected with diſeaſe, is not to our preſent purpoſe.

The injuries done to ſound parts, I ſhall divide into two ſorts, according to the effects of the accident.

The firſt kind conſiſts of thoſe in which the injured parts do not communicate externally, as concuſſions of the whole body, or of particular parts, ſtrains, bruiſes, and ſimple fractures, either of bone or of tendon, which form a large diviſion. The ſecond conſiſts of thoſe which have an ex-

ternal communication, comprehending wounds of all kinds, and compound fractures.

Bruiſes which have deſtroyed the life of the part, may be conſidered as a third diviſion, partaking, at the beginning, of the nature of the firſt, but finally terminating like the ſecond.

I. OF INJURIES, IN WHICH THERE IS NO EXTERNAL COMMUNICATION.

The injuries of the firſt diviſion in which the parts do not communicate externally, ſeldom inflame; while thoſe of the ſecond commonly both inflame and ſuppurate. The ſame operations, however, very often take place in both, though the order in which they happen is reverſed; the firſt becoming like the ſecond, by inflaming and ſuppurating; and the ſecond being in many caſes, when properly treated, brought back to a reſemblance of the firſt, and united by the firſt intention; by which inflammation and ſuppuration are prevented. But when the life of a part has been deſtroyed by the accident, it muſt neceſſarily ſuppurate; and therefore theſe injuries will be rendered ſimilar, in this reſpect, to thoſe of parts which communicate immediately, and have not been united by the firſt intention.

That injury which in its nature is the moſt ſimple, and yet calls forth the actions of the part to recover from it, is a degree of concuſſion*, where the only effect produced is a debility of the actions or functions of the whole or part, ſimilar to that occaſioned by a bruiſe, in which the continuity of the ſubſtance is not interrupted; in ſuch a ſtate the parts have little to do, but to expand, and reinſtate themſelves in their natural poſition, actions, and feelings; and this is what happens in concuſſion of the brain.

The rupture of a ſmall blood-veſſel is, perhaps, the next in order of ſimplicity; where the continuity of the part is broken, extravaſation takes place, and the blood is diffuſed into the common cellular membrane, into the interſtices

* Here I mean concuſſion as a general term, not confining it to the brain.

of ſome part, or into a circumſcribed cavity. But ſhould the veſſel be either very large, or eſſential to life, ſuch as are femoral, bracheal, or coronary arteries; or ſhould the rupture take place in a vital part, as the brain, or in interſtices or cavities belonging to a vital part, as in the cavities of the brain, or pericardium, in all ſuch caſes the injury may kill from the extravaſation alone, however inconſiderable may be the original miſchief.

The operation of reſtoration in this caſe, when the vital parts are not concerned or diſturbed, conſiſts firſt in the coagulation of the extravaſated blood between the ruptured parts, laying, as it were, the foundation of union, next in cloſing the ruptured veſſel, or in promoting its inoſculation, and ſometime after in bringing about an abſorption of the ſuperfluous extravaſated blood. If the veſſel cloſe, that effect is produced by the muſcular contraction of its coats; but in what way it inoſculates, whether by the two orifices when oppoſed having a mutual attraction, and inſtead of contracting the two portions of the ruptured veſſel elongating, ſo as to approach each other reciprocally and unite*; or whether a new piece of veſſel is formed in the intermediate coagulable lymph, is not eaſily determined.

Inoſculation, however, can only take place where the extent of the parts divided is not great, and the oppoſite ſurfaces remain near each other; but even then it is moſt probable that we muſt in part aſcribe to another mode of union the communication of veſſels which takes place be-

* Inoſculation is a term commonly uſed by writers, but whether it was derived from theory or obſervation is not material. The very few inſtances where it can be obſerved, together with the want of accuracy in thoſe who firſt introduced the term, would incline me to think that it aroſe from theory, or opinion only. I never could get an opportunity of obſerving it in all my experiments, and obſervations on inflammation, except in the coats of the eye. In many inflammations of that organ, we find an artery or arteries paſſing from the tunica conjunctiva to the cornea and ramifying on that part. Theſe have been often cut acroſs to prevent the influx of blood; the two ends are ſeen to ſhrink, but in a little time they are again perceived to unite, and the circulation to be carried on as before. In this there can be no deception; and to perform, therefore, ſuch an operation effectually, a part of the veſſels ſhould be removed.

tween the two divided ſurfaces; for where inoſculation does not, or cannot take place, the union of the ruptured veſſels is produced by the coagulation of the extravaſated blood of this part, which becomes vaſcular.

That the blood becomes vaſcular, is clearly ſhewn in the caſe of the blood extravaſated on the teſticle.

The ſuperfluous extravaſated blood is taken up by the abſorbents, by which means the whole is reinſtated as much as it is in the power of the parts to do it. I may obſerve here, that the power of recovery in the arteries is greater nearly in proportion to the ſmallneſs of their ſize, which is combined with ſeveral cauſes, viz. their diſtance from the heart, their elaſticity, their diviſion into ſmaller branches, and their accumulated diameters becoming larger, which allows them to recover. Secondly, there is an increaſed power within the ſmaller artery itſelf abſtracted from the above circumſtances.

This includes a great variety of caſes, and the moſt ſimple difference which can happen between them will be owing to the magnitude of the ruptured parts, or to a difference in the parts themſelves; or to the magnitude of the injury; or to a difference in the effects. It will comprehend ſimple fractures of all kinds, broken tendons, as is often the caſe with the tendo-achilles; even many injuries of the brain producing extravaſated blood, which is probably the only way in which the brain can be torn when there is no fracture.

Some of theſe will often require art to reinſtate them in the natural poſition, out of which they may have been put by the accident, or by ſome peculiar circumſtance attending the nature of the part, as we ſee in a fracture of the patella, or broken tendon, where the upper part being too far pulled up by the muſcles, it muſt be reinſtated by the hand of the ſurgeon, to bring the parts into a ſituation more favourable to their recovery.

But extravaſations, even from the moſt ſimple accidents, are often ſo ſituated as to obſtruct the actions of life; as for inſtance, in that affection of the brain, which is called apoplexy. The ſame thing happens in extravaſations into the pericardium, or into any of the other vital parts, where little can be done, although much is wanted. In many other parts, where the actions of life cannot be affected, yet the extravaſations are often too conſiderable to allow the parts to go through their proper modes of reſtoration.

The quantity of extravaſated blood being often ſo large as to diſtend the parts, and form a kind of tumor, called ecchymoſis, of which I ſhall now treat.

The extravaſated blood in ſuch caſes being the only viſible complaint, to remove it is the cure, which may be effected by abſorption; or, if neceſſary, by an operation.

An ecchymoſis we may conſider as of two kinds, one in which the blood coagulates when extravaſated, the other where it remains fluid; but this diſtinction makes little difference in the diſeaſe itſelf, and of courſe little in the mode of treatment; it ſhould be obſerved, however, that the firſt kind, for the moſt part, terminates well; while the ſecond ſometimes inflames and ſuppurates.

When theſe injuries get well by the abſorption of the blood, the cure is gradual, and often takes a conſiderable time; but if the tumors become leſs and do not inflame, they ſhould be allowed to go on to perform their own cure; and even where inflammation takes place, that ſhould be permitted to advance to ſuppuration, and the tumors to threaten burſting before they are opened by art, or what I believe would be ſtill better practice, they ſhould be left to open of themſelves.

In ſome inſtances, a blow the cauſe of the ecchymoſis, may have injured the ſuperficial parts or ſkin ſo much as to produce inflammation; and under ſuch circumſtances I ſhould recommend the caſe to be treated as an inflammation ariſing from any other cauſe, without paying attention to the blood underneath. It often happens that the blow has deadened the ſkin over this blood, which deadened part, as is uſual in ſuch caſes, muſt, in a certain time, afterwards ſeparate from the living.

Where this has taken place, and the extravaſated blood has coagulated, it has often been found to remain in the cavity, as a mere extraneous body, without acting, and without even allowing the ſtimulus of an expoſed ſurface, or of an imperfect cavity to take place. The edges of the ſkin all round ſhewing the diſpoſition to contract over this blood, as if it was a living part to be preſerved, nothing has ſeemed to be wanting to finiſh the cure but the blood being alive with due powers of action.

In theſe caſes the common practice has been to ſcoop out the blood and diſtend the internal ſurface with warm

dreſſings to ſtimulate it to inflammation, etc. and a ſore being the conſequence of this method it goes on as ſores commonly do. But in other caſes where the opening leading to the coagulated blood has been very ſmall, I have ſeen that without any other means being uſed the blood has been gradually ſqueezed out of the orifice by the contraction of the ſurrounding parts, till the whole cavity became ſo much contracted as to contain no more than what ſeemed to ſerve as a bond of union to the parts; and thus the cure has been completed without further trouble. The following caſe was treated in this way.

CASE.

Mrs. B—t fell backwards and pitched upon a pail which was behind her, and the left labium pudendi ſtruck againſt its handle with the whole weight of her body.

Within five minutes after the accident, the bruiſed part ſwelled to as great degree as the ſkin would allow; from which ſudden appearance of the ſwelling, and feeling of fluctuation, I concluded that blood had been extravaſated by the rupture of ſome ſmall artery. I bled her, and deſired a poultice to be applied to the part, in order to keep the ſkin as eaſy as poſſible under ſuch diſtention.

Believing the tumor to ariſe from extravaſated blood, I did not chuſe to open it, that the bleeding might be ſooner ſtopped by the preſſure of the extravaſated blood againſt the ſides of the cavity. Some hours after the accident the ſkin burſt, and a good deal of blood came away. On examining the wound I found the opening of conſiderable ſize, leading into a cavity as large as the egg of a gooſe, and filled with coagulated blood, which I did not remove for the reaſons given above, that it might aſſiſt in ſtopping the veſſels which were ſtill bleeding. The poultice was continued, the bleeding gradually became leſs; and every time I examined the part, I found the cavity diminiſhed, but ſtill filled with coagulated blood, which continued to be puſhed out of the wound, and after ſome time a ſlough came off from the bruiſed ſkin, which enlarged the ſize of the wound. About a fortnight after the accident the parts were all ſo much collapſed, as to have forced out the blood entirely, and there ſeemed only a ſuperficial ſore, not above an inch long and half an inch wide. What may it be ſuppoſed would have been the conſequence, if I had enlarged the

opening, ſcooped out the blood and dreſſed the part with lint, or any other application I might think proper?

The effect of ſuch treatment would certainly have been a large ſore, nearly of the ſame ſize with the cavity; and the ſides of the cavity would have inflamed and ſuppurated. Is there not reaſon to believe that the coagulated blood, by remaining in the wound, prevented inflammation over the whole ſurface, and allowed the parts to contract to their natural poſition, ſo as to leave no other ſore than that where the ſkin had burſt and ſloughed?

This practice ſhould be generally followed in ſuch caſes of ecchymoſis.

The ſecond ſpecies of ecchymoſis is that in which the blood has not coagulated but remains fluid. This caſe, although it alſo frequently occurs, does not always terminate ſo well as the former, nor allow of ſuch a ſalutary termination, where an opening has been made, either by the accident, or by art; for then ſuppuration will be produced all over the cavity; more caution is, therefore, neceſſary to prevent an opening. It has often the appearance of an incyſted tumor; but being an immediate conſequence of ſome accident upon the part, its nature becomes readily underſtood, though ſometimes from its ſituation it has the ſymptoms of an aneuriſm attending it; neither does the cauſe of it contradict this idea.

If formed over a large artery the tumor will be attended with a pulſation; but when from this cauſe it cannot be made to ſubſide by preſſure, yet it is not, therefore, to be ſuppoſed harmleſs, as in fact it requires to be treated with great caution.

If the pulſation ſhould ariſe from the real influx of blood, this will ſoon be ſhewn by the increaſe of the tumor, and will lead to the proper treatment, viz. opening it and ſtopping the bleeding veſſel. This ſeldom happens from contuſion, the kind of accident deſtroying in ſome degree the free exit of the blood out of the artery; and if the tumor ſhould not increaſe after a certain period, even if there be a pretty evident pulſation, we may then be certain that it aſſumes this ſymptom from ſome neighbouring artery or arteries. The ecchymoſis which is produced on the head of a child during birth, has ſometimes a pulſation, ariſing from that of the brain, as the ſutures are ſtill open; and every tumor of the ſcalp, whether from a blow or any other cauſe, may be miſtaken for aneuriſm, if it appears

before the fontinelle be cloſed, and ſhould it be opened without proper examination, may diſconcert the ignorant ſurgeon.

That the blood does not coagulate in this ſpecies of ecchymoſis, muſt ariſe from ſome peculiar mode of action in the veſſels, occaſioned by the effects of the injury: for I apprehend that in ſuch caſes, the blood dies in the act of extravaſation, in the ſame manner as the blood of the menſtrual diſcharge whenever it is effuſed.

The ecchymoſis which we have mentioned, as happening very commonly to children in the birth, particularly under the ſcalp, requires nothing to be done; as by waiting with patience, the whole will in general be abſorbed.

Although this is commonly the event in new born infants, yet ecchymoſis does not terminate alike favourably in other caſes, the tumor often remaining for a conſiderable time without undergoing any change, and after months, ſometimes diſappearing, but at other times inflaming and ſuppurating.

When an extravaſation of blood takes place between the ſcalp and head, in conſequence of a blow, which is very common, and continues fluid, we find a kind of ridge all round the bag, and by preſſing all round the edge of the bag, the finger ſinks, ſo as to give diſtinctly, (we conceive) the feel of a depreſſed bone; but this feeling of a depreſſion following the edge of the ecchymoſis all round, is a proof that it cannot be depreſſion of the bone; becauſe no depreſſion could be ſo regular, nor would any depreſſion be of the ſame extent with the ecchymoſis. The edge of the ſcalp ſurrounding the ecchymoſis ſeems to be raiſed, and I believe it is; if ſo, then ſomething ſimilar to the adheſive inflammation muſt have taken place to ſet bounds to the extent of the bag, and to hinder the blood from getting into the cellular membrane.

It might perhaps be the beſt practice to make a ſmall opening into ſuch tumors with a lancet, and by letting out the blood get the ſides of the cavity to heal by the firſt intention. When the parts inflame and ſuppurate, the caſe is to be treated as an abſceſs.

This ſometimes diſappears by reſolution: but this being ſeldom permitted, the ecchymoſis is reduced either to the ſtate of a freſh wound, which is allowed to ſuppurate, or an abſceſs; for ſurgeons are induced to open early, by ſeeing an inflammation, and feeling a fluctuation, two ſtrong

motives when every circumſtance is not well attended to; but in ſuch caſes I ſhould wait till I obſerved evident ſigns of ſuppuration, viz. the thinning of the ſkin over the matter, and pointing of the contents, which are the only true marks of the formation of the matter, as well as of its coming near the ſkin.

If the blow ſhould have deadened a part of the ſkin, then a ſeparation of the ſlough will take place, and expoſes this cavity ſo as to produce ſuppuration. And this is to be conſidered as a ſtep ſtill farther removed from the moſt ſimple ſpecies of injury, than where the blood coagulates.

I am not able, under ſuch circumſtances, decidedly to ſay which is the beſt practice, whether to leave the ſlough to ſeparate, or to make a ſmall opening and allow the blood to eſcape ſlowly from the cavity.

In both kinds of ecchymoſis, when inflammation has taken place in the ſkin from the violence, if it has not advanced to ſuppuration, the object of the ſurgeon ſhould be to bring about the reſolution of the tumor; when he finds there is no further increaſe of the tumor, he may conclude that reſolution is beginning to take place; which being clearly aſcertained, he is then to aſſiſt in exciting the abſorbents to do their duty, in order to take up the extravaſated blood. I believe the beſt exciting power is preſſure, which if urged beyond the point of eaſe, ſets the abſorbents of the parts to work, for the purpoſe of removing the ſubſtance which preſſes, or the part that is preſſed: but moſt commonly the body preſſing, if it be ſubject to the laws (or powers) of abſorption; and in this caſe the extraneous ſubſtance preſſing on the inner ſurface of the cavity, is the extravaſated blood which we wiſh to have removed.

The following caſes explain this.

A lady fell and ſtruck her ſhin againſt a ſtone, a conſiderable ecchymoſis came on almoſt immediately, and the ſkin over it inflamed to a conſiderable degree. The blood had not coagulated, there was therefore a perceptible fluctuation underneath, and her phyſician recommended an opening to be made. I was ſent for, and on examining the part, was rather of opinion, from the ſurface being a regular curve, and no part pointing, that matter had not formed; I therefore recommended patience; the ſubſiding of the inflammation, and the application of ſuch preſſure as ſhe could bear without uneaſineſs, cauſed the whole tumor to be abſorbed.

A man was brought into St. George's Hoſpital whoſe thigh had been run over by the wheel of a cart; a very large enchymoſis was formed on its inſide, and a conſiderable inflammation of the ſkin had taken place. The blood had not coagulated, therefore a fluctuation could eaſily be felt; but as there was no appearance of pointing, ſimilar to that of matter coming to the ſkin, I was in hopes that ſuppuration was not coming on; and although the inflammation was conſiderable, I ſuppoſed that it might ariſe rather from the violence of the accident than from the extravaſation: I waited therefore the event; ſaw the inflammation gradually go off, and as that ſubſided I obſerved the tumor decay, although it was very ſlow in its decreaſe: I then directed a ſlight compreſs to be applied, after which the tumor evidently diminiſhed much faſter than before, till the whole was abſorbed.

The union by the firſt intention uſually takes place ſo ſoon after the injury, that it may be ſaid to be almoſt immediate; for when the blood has coagulated in ſuch a ſituation as to adhere to both ſurfaces, and ſo as to keep them together, it may be ſaid that the union is begun. It is not, however, immediately ſecure from mechanical violence, and the blood itſelf by loſing its power of retaining life, may likewiſe be rendered unfit to preſerve the communication with the adheſing ſurface, (by which it is connected with the body at large) and thus the union be of courſe prevented. If there be no ſuch impediment, then the union of the parts may be very quick; but it will be in ſome degree according to the quantity of extravaſated blood interpoſed; for if that be large, the whole blood will not become vaſcular, but the ſurface only which is in contact with ſurrounding parts, and the reſt will be abſorbed as in the enchymoſis. Where the quantity is ſmall, as in a ſlight wound without laceration, and where all the divided ſurfaces can be brought into almoſt abſolute contact, their union will be firm in twenty-four hours, as happens in a hair-lip, or wounds of the ſcalp.

Although under ſuch circumſtances the blood ſeems to change into a ſolid form very quickly, yet when the ſituation of the wound particularly ſubjects the parts to mechanical violence, we ſhould not truſt to this union being completed in ſo ſhort a time.

In the hair-lip, for inſtance, perhaps forty-eight hours may be required to make it perfectly ſecure, and except

when the ſtitches by producing ulceration might make ſcars, there can be no harm in allowing ſuch parts even a longer time for their union. But in wounds of the ſcalp, this caution is not neceſſary; and indeed in ſuch caſes it is ſcarcely required to make ſtitches at all.

In caſes of accidental injury, whether they be in themſelves ſlight or conſiderable, in whatever ſituation or part they may have happened, if the ſalutary proceſſes, above deſcribed, go on readily, no other effect of injury, or irritation, or pain, in conſequence of nature's operations is felt. No univerſal ſympathy or fever takes place, except what ariſes from the mere injury done, but all is quiet as if nothing had happened. This is ſometimes the caſe even in a ſimple fracture of the bones of the leg, in fiſſures of the ſkull, etc. However, the magnitude of the accident often produces effects which are alarming, and more particularly when they happen to parts eſſential to life. Theſe effects are often the cauſe of much danger, the conſtitution becoming affected according to the nature and importance of the parts injured. Thus concuſſion and extravaſation affecting the brain, muſt likewiſe affect the conſtitution, from its natural action and influence on the body being diminiſhed, increaſed, or otherwiſe diſturbed. The ſame thing happens from an injury done to any other vital part of the body, and the effects will be according to the uſe of ſuch parts, or the influence which they have on the ſyſtem.

However, theſe immediate and ſalutary operations do not always take place ſimply, for they are often altered by other circumſtances; as the accident ſometimes becomes the cauſe of irritation, and produces another operation of the parts, called inflammation, which is often of ſingular ſervice, by increaſing the power of union in the broken parts.

This inflammation will generally be in proportion to the degree of injury done, the nature of the parts injured, and the ſtate of the conſtitution at the time, which in other words, is in proportion to what is requiſite for the firſt powers of union. But it ſometimes happens, that inflammation goes further than is required, and produces a variety of actions ſucceeding each other in regular progreſſion. This may occaſionally be obſerved in certain ſimple fractures, in which the extravaſated blood acting as an extra-

neous body, becomes the cauſe of the ſuppurative inflammation; and the ſimple is in this way brought to a ſtate reſembling the compound fracture. The inflammation, however, does not extend over all the lacerated parts, as when they are expoſed at the time of the injury, many of theſe having united by the firſt intention.

We may here obſerve, that accident of the moſt ſimple kind may produce effects which do not allow the common operations of nature to take place, as when a large blood-veſſel is broken, or when a fractured rib penetrates into the lungs, or a compreſſion of the brain ariſes from a fracture of the ſkull. But none of theſe accidents admit of the modes of cure above-mentioned, as they each require particular treatment, and therefore are not to our preſent purpoſe.

II. OF INJURIES WHERE THE WOUND COMMUNICATES EXTERNALLY.

The ſecond diviſion of injury ariſing from accident, is where the ruptured parts communicate externally, producing effects different from the former. Theſe may be divided into two kinds, viz. wounds made by a ſharp cutting inſtrument, and contuſions producing death in the parts injured. Wounds are ſubject to as great a variety as any thing in ſurgery.

A wound is a breach made in the continuity of the ſolids of a part, beginning moſt commonly on the external ſurface, and proceeding inwards; although ſometimes its directions is from the inſide outwards, as in compound fractures. A gun-ſhot wound may be ſaid to partake of both circumſtances, as it paſſes through a part: wounds often admit of the ſame mode of cure with accidents which do not communicate externally, but then it requires the art of the ſurgeon to place them in the ſame ſituation, or under the ſame circumſtances.

A wound is either ſimple or compound; the ſimple is what I have now to explain, and is of ſuch a nature as to admit of union by the firſt intention. Of this deſcription

we may likewiſe conſider wounds which are the conſequence of certain ſurgical operations.

The form of the inſtrument by which wounds have been inflicted will alſo make a difference in their nature; for if it be ſharp it will make a clean cut wound; if obtuſe in its ſhape, a bruiſed one, and may alſo deaden a part, and the parts may likewiſe be torn after having been cut; all of which varieties will render a different treatment neceſſary towards effecting a cure.

In the moſt ſimple caſes of wounds, a number of blood-veſſels being divided, there is an effuſion of blood, which eſcaping by the wound, the internal parts are left expoſed, eſpecially the cellular membrane; and theſe if not brought into contact with correſponding living parts immediately, or by means of the coagulated blood, will inflame and ſuppurate. Accidents of this kind differ from thoſe of the firſt diviſion by communicating externally, a circumſtance which makes them often require very different modes of treatment. In caſes where parts have been forced out of their natural ſituation, they ſhould be reduced, that when cured they may anſwer their natural purpoſes, as in fracture, diſlocation, &c.

Wounds admit of three modes of treatment, ariſing from their ſize, ſituation, and the nature of the parts wounded. One mode is artificial, two are natural, in which laſt the conſtitution is allowed to perform the cure in its own way, which will be explained when we ſpeak of ſcabbing.

Theſe being different from the former, and from each other, it might be thought that I ſhould have conſidered them firſt as being natural proceſſes; but the firſt can be put into the ſame ſtate with the two others, and therefore ought to precede them. For this purpoſe art muſt be employed by the ſurgeon to bring the ſeparated ſurfaces in contact; that by retaining them there till union ſhall have taken place, the injury may be removed from the ſtate of an expoſed wound.

This treatment of freſh wounds with a view to cure them by the firſt intention, is equally proper after many operations, as in accidental injuries. Inſtances of this often occur after diſſecting out tumors, ſcalping when no fracture is found, and when trepanning has not been performed; and it has been put in practice even where the trepan has been

: pplied. It has been employed alſo after amputations; in ſhort, wherever a clean cut wound is made in ſound parts, and when the ſurfaces can be brought into contact, or where there is ſufficient ſkin to cover the part, this practice may, and ſhould be followed.

In no caſe, however, of a breach of continuity, can we entirely prevent the parts from retaining the appearance of a wound, for the breach in the ſkin will more or leſs remain, and the blood will coagulate, become dry, and form a ſcab. But this operation of nature reduces the injury to the ſtate of a mere ſuperficial wound, and the blood which is continued from the ſcab to the more deeply ſeated parts, retaining its living principle, juſt as the natural parts do at the bottom of a ſuperficial wound, the ſkin is formed under this ſcab in the one caſe as in the other; yet if the ſcab ſhould either irritate, or a part underneath loſe its uniting powers, then inflammation, and even ſometimes ſuppuration, may be produced. It is often, however, only inflammation that is produced; the ſcab here preventing the further progreſs of miſchief in the ſame manner as the ſcabbing of the pus on a ſore prevents the proceſs of ſuppuration, which becomes one of the uſes of pus.

In many of the caſes in which we mean to produce union by the firſt intention, it is not neceſſary to be very nice in ſponging out the blood, with a view to make the two ſurfaces of the fleſh come entirely into contact, the blood itſelf anſwering a ſimilar purpoſe. In ſeveral caſes, having brought the two portions of looſe ſkin together, I have ſeen the two cut edges unite almoſt immediately, and though the cavity underneath was diſtended with blood yet it did well, the tumor gradually decreaſing as the blood was abſorbed; this is to be conſidered in the ſame light as an ecchymoſis.

When the portion of ſkin is not ſufficient to cover the whole wound, and the cut edges cannot be brought together, ſtill the ſkin ſhould be made to cover as much as it can, in order to diminiſh the ſize of the parts that muſt otherwiſe ſuppurate and form a ſore; as in conſequence of this mode of treatment, the living extravaſated blood is confined in the wound, and coagulating there, unites the two ſurfaces together.

The mouths of the veſſels are ſoon ſhut, either by inoſculation, or their own power of contraction, and by the blood becoming vaſcular, as in the former ſtated caſe of union

by the firſt intention; and if there ſhould be any ſuperfluous extravaſated blood, we know that it will be afterwards abſorbed.

The blood being alive, this uniting medium becomes immediately a part of ourſelves, and the parts not being offended by it, no irritation is produced. The red particles are abſorbed, and nothing but the coagulating lymph is retained, which being the true living bond of union, afterwards becomes vaſcular, nervous, etc.

This mode of treatment by art, though an imitation of the former, can ſeldom be ſuppoſed equally complete; perhaps we ought not to expect it to be ſo in any caſe, as there are circumſtances often attending the artificial mode of treating wounds, which do not occur in the natural. The ligature uſed for tying a blood-veſſel leaves an extraneous body in the wound*; a part deprived of life by the inſtrument, etc. will become an extraneous ſubſtance, and the ſurfaces cannot always be brought into contact, ſo as to allow a perfect union to take place. In ſuch caſes, union is prevented by the blood loſing in part its living principle, eſpecially in thoſe parts next to the external ſurface; and perhaps the art employed by the ſurgeon himſelf may aſſiſt in changing the original ſtate of the wound, as the paſſing of needles and ligatures muſt always produce ſuppuration through the whole paſſage.

Theſe ſubſtances ſo circumſtanced, moſt probably become the cauſe of irritation, and conſequently of inflamtion. But if the poſition of the parts be ſuch as in any ſort to allow of union, although not readily, the inflammation will go no further than the firſt ſtage, and will even give aſſiſtance to the firſt mode of union.

The poſſibility of effecting a cure by this method is probably limited to ſome certain diſtance of time after the wound has been received, though that ſpace may admit of ſome latitude; perhaps the ſooner it is done the better; but while the blood continues to be extravaſated it certainly may be attempted upon our firſt principles of union.

* If ſuch a wound has a depending angle, and the veſſels ſhould even be tied nearer the upper angle than the lower, yet I would adviſe to bring the looſe end of the thread out of the wound at the lower, for by that means the matter will flow much more eaſily.

Where the former bond of union is loſt in a part, to produce a new one a ſecondary operation takes place, namely, inflammation; and if this is likewiſe loſt, then a third mode of union will ariſe, which is by means of granulation.

If the divided parts are allowed to remain till the mouths of the divided veſſels be entirely ſhut, inflammation will inevitably follow, and will furniſh the ſame materials for union which are contained in extravaſated blood, by throwing out the coagulated lymph; ſo that union may ſtill take place, though ſome time later after the diviſion of the parts. This inflammation I have called the adheſive; and the inflammation that precedes ſuppuration, I have called the ſuppurative inflammation. If the parts, however, continue too long aſunder, ſuppuration muſt follow, and pus is unfriendly to union. We may here obſerve, that ſuppuration takes place on expoſed ſurfaces, with a much leſs degree of inflammation and in much leſs time than on thoſe which are not expoſed, and from their not being oppoſed by living ſurfaces, which tend to bring on the adheſive ſtate, they continue it much longer.

Whether this coagulating lymph iſſues from the half cloſed mouths of the veſſels which were cut, or from the ſurface of the opened cells, is not eaſily determined; but moſt probably it is from the latter, as it comes on about the time that the ſwelling of the ſurrounding parts begins to appear. There is reaſon to ſuppoſe it to be the ſame kind of diſcharge with that which cauſes the ſwelling, and which is continued through the whole courſe of this ſtage of inflammation; for on examining the dreſſings of ſuch wounds as are allowed to ſuppurate, ſeveral days after the wounds have been made, the lint is generally adhering to the ſurface by means of the coagulating lymph; the ſuppuration not having yet ſufficiently taken place to looſen it.

When theſe operations are completed in due order, the ſimple operations of the animal are entirely confined to the part, neither the mind nor the conſtitution ſeeming in ſuch caſes to be at all affected, except that there is a feeling of tenderneſs in the part. But whatever theſe ſenſations may be, they ariſe entirely from the injury done, and not from the operation of union, unleſs when the ſuppurative inflammation comes on.

The inflammation often runs ſo high, even where the parts have been brought into contact, as to deſtroy, by its

violence, that union which the extravaſated juices were intended to produce, the conſequence of which is ſuppuration at laſt.

Is it by this exceſs of inflammation that the extravaſated juices loſe their living principle, and become as it were extraneous bodies? or is it not poſſible, that in theſe caſes the inflammation may be the effect rather than the cauſe of the loſs of the living principle, by the blood firſt loſing its living principle, and inflammation ariſing from it as a conſequence?

The time requiſite to complete this union will be nearly the ſame as that of the firſt intention; and probably ſooner if there be no particular tendency to ſuppuration; but if there be, union may be ſuſpended ſome time longer, for here the uniting medium will be thrown out in larger quantity, and where the union is moſt eaſily effected, there is leſs of this medium; when two ſurfaces unite by inflammation, they are commonly in contact, or elſe moſt probably union from this cauſe would not ſo readily take place. We ſhall find in the deſcription of the adheſive inflammation, that the union of two ſides of a circumſcribed cavity is very ſoon effected, and ſoon becomes ſtrong.

There is another mode of union, which, although upon the ſame principle, yet differs with regard to the parts which are to be united.

I have hitherto explained union as taking place only in the diviſion of correſponding parts of the ſame living body, but it is equally poſſible to unite different parts of the ſame, or of different bodies, by bringing them into contact under certain circumſtances. There is ſeldom occcaſion for ſuch practice; but accident, or rather want of attention, has in ſome caſes been the cauſe of union taking place between different parts of the body. The chin has been united to the breaſt, the tongue to the lips or cheek, etc. and when this happens it has commonly been through the medium of granulations. The attempt to unite parts of two different bodies, has only been recommended by Taliacotius. The moſt extraordinary of all the circumſtances reſpecting union, is by removing a part of one body and afterwards uniting it to ſome part of another, where on one ſide there can be no aſſiſtance given to the union, as the divided or ſeparated part is hardly able to do more than preſerve its own living principle, and accept of the union.

The poſſibility of this ſpecies of union ſhews how ſtrong the uniting power muſt be; by it the ſpurs of the young cock can be made to grow on his comb, or on that of another cock; and its teſticles, after having been removed, may be made to unite to the inſide of any cavity of an animal.

Teeth, after having been drawn and inſerted into the ſockets of another perſon, unite to the new ſocket, which is called tranſplanting. Ingrafting and inoculating of trees ſucceed upon the ſame principle*.

* That the living principles in two bodies which have a perfect affinity to one another, ſhould not only be a preſervative, but a cauſe of union is evident; but even in bodies which appear foreign to one another, the ſtimulus of an extraneous body is not produced where union is not intended, and cannot take place, although we ſhould at firſt ſuppoſe that the extraneous ſtimulus would be given, and ſuppuration ſucceed.

This is verified by the eggs of many inſects, which are laid under the ſkin of different animals, producing only the adheſive inflammation in the ſurrounding parts; by which the ſkin is thickened and a nidus is formed for the eggs.

The Guinea worm, called vena medeneſis, is alſo a ſtriking inſtance of this; for while the animal is endowed with the living principle, it gives but little trouble, yet if killed, gives the ſtimulus of an extraneous body, which produces ſuppuration through its whole length.

Other inſtances of the ſame ſort are:

The æſtrum bovis, which lays its eggs in the backs of cattle.

The æſtrum tarendi, which lays its eggs in the back of the rein deer.

The æſtrum naſale, which lays its eggs in the noſes of rein deer.

The æſtrum hæmorrhoidale, which lays its eggs in the rectum of horſes.

The æſtrum ovis, which lays its eggs in the noſe and frontal ſinuſes of ruminating animals, particularly ſheep.

The little inſect in Mexico, called migna, which lays its eggs under the ſkin; and laſtly the cheggars, which get in the feet of animals.

III. PRACTICAL OBSERVATIONS RESPECTING UNION BY THE FIRST INTENTION.

It is with a view to this principle of union, that it has been recommended to bring the ſides (or lips) of wounds together; but as the natural elaſticity of the parts makes them recede, it has been found neceſſary to employ art for that purpoſe. This neceſſity at firſt ſuggeſted the practice of ſewing wounds, and afterwards gave riſe to various inventions in order to anſwer this end, ſuch as bandages, ſticking-plaſters, and ligatures. Among theſe, the bandage commonly called the uniting bandage, is preferable to all the reſt, where it can be employed; but its application is very confined, from being only adapted to parts where a roller can be uſed. A piece of ſticking-plaſter, which has been called the dry future, is more general in its application than the uniting bandage, and is therefore preferable to it on many occaſions.

I can hardly ſuppoſe a wound, in any ſituation, where it may not be applied, excepting penetrating wounds, where we wiſh the inner portion of the wound to be cloſed equally with the outer, as in the caſes of hair-lip. But even in ſuch wounds, if the parts are thick, and the wound not large, the ſides will ſeldom recede ſo far as to make any other means neceſſary. The dry future has an advantage over ſtitches, by bringing a larger ſurface of the wound together, by not inflaming the parts to which it is applied, and by neither producing in them ſuppuration or ulceration, which ſtitches always do. When parts, therefore, can be brought together, and eſpecially where ſome force is required for that purpoſe, from the ſkin not being in large quantity, the ſticking-plaſter is certainly the beſt application. This happens frequently to be the caſe after removal of tumors, in amputation, or where the ſides of the wound are only to be brought together at one end, as in the hair-lip; and I think the difference between Mr. Sharp's croſs ſtitch, after amputation, as recommended in his Critical Enquiries, and Mr. Aliſon's practice, ſhews ſtrongly the ſuperiority of the ſticking plaſter (or dry future). In thoſe parts of the body where the ſkin recedes more than in others, this treatment becomes moſt neceſſary; and as the ſcalp

probably recedes as little as any, it is therefore ſeldom neceſſary to apply any thing in wounds of that part; the practice will certainly anſwer beſt in ſuperficial wounds, becauſe the bottom is in theſe more within its influence.

The ſticking-plaſters ſhould be laid on in ſtripes, and theſe ſhould be at ſmall diſtances from each other, viz. about a quarter of an inch at moſt, if the part requires cloſe confinement; but when it does not, they may be at greater diſtances. This precaution becomes more neceſſary if the bleeding is not quite ſtopped, there ſhould be paſſages left for the exit of blood, as its accumulation might prevent the union, although this does not always happen. If any extraneous body, ſuch as a ligature, ſhould have been left in the wound, ſuppuration will take place, and the matter ſhould be allowed to vent at ſome of thoſe openings, or ſpaces, between the ſlips of plaſter. I have known a very conſiderable abſceſs formed in conſequence of this precaution being neglected, by which the whole of the recently united parts has been ſeparated.

The interrupted ſuture, which has generally been recommended in large wounds, is ſtill in uſe, but ſeldom proves equal to the intention. This we may reckon to be the only one that deſerves the name of ſuture; it was formerly uſed, but is now in a great meaſure laid aſide in practice, not from the impropriety of uniting parts by this proceſs, but from the ineffectual mode of attempting it. In what manner better methods could be contrived, I have not been able to ſuggeſt. It is to be underſtood that the above methods of bringing wounded parts together, in order to unite, are only to be put in practice in ſuch caſes as will admit of it; for if there was a method known, which in all caſes would bring the wounded ſurfaces into contact, it would in many inſtances be improper, as ſome wounds are attended with contuſion, by which the parts have been more or leſs deadened; in ſuch caſes, as was formerly obſerved, union cannot take place according to our firſt principle, and therefore it is improper to attempt it.

In many wounds which are not attended with contuſion, when we either know, or ſuſpect, that extraneous bodies have been introduced into the wound, union by the firſt intention ſhould not be attempted, but they ſhould be allowed to ſuppurate, in order that the extraneous matter may be expelled. Wounds which are attended with laceration, although free from contuſion, cannot always be

united by the firſt intention, becauſe it muſt frequently be impoſſible to bring the external parts, or ſkin, ſo much in contact, as to prevent that inflammation which is naturally produced by expoſure. But even in caſes of ſimple laceration, where the external influence is but ſlight, or can be prevented, (as we obſerved in treating of the compound ſimple fracture) we find that union by the firſt intention often takes place; the blood which fills up the interſtices of the lacerated parts having prevented the ſtimulus of imperfection in them, and preventing ſuppuration, may afterwards be abſorbed.

Many operations may be ſo performed as to admit of parts uniting by the firſt intention; but the practice ſhould be adopted with great circumſpection; the mode of operating with that view, ſhould, in all caſes, be a ſecondary, and not a firſt, conſideration, which it has unluckily been too often among ſurgeons. In caſes of cancer, it is a moſt dangerous attempt at refinement in ſurgery.

In the union of wounded parts by the firſt intention, it is hardly or never poſſible to bring them ſo cloſe together at the expoſed edges, as to unite them perfectly by theſe means; ſuch edges are therefore obliged to take another method of healing. If kept moiſt, they will inflame as deep between the cut ſurfaces as the blood fails in the union, and there ſuppurate and granulate; but if the blood is allowed to dry and form a ſcab between, and along the cut edges, then inflammation and ſuppuration of thoſe edges will be prevented, and this will complete the union, as will be deſcribed by and by.

As thoſe effects of accidental injury, which can be cured by the firſt intention, call up none of the power of the conſtitution to aſſiſt in the reparation, it is not the leaſt affected or diſturbed by them; the parts are united by the extravaſated blood alone, which was thrown out by the injury, either from the divided veſſels, or in conſequence of inflammation, without a ſingle action taking place, even in the part itſelf, except the cloſing, or inoſculation of the veſſels, for the flowing of the blood is to be conſidered as entirely mechanical. Even in caſes where a ſmall degree of inflammation comes on, it is merely a local action, and ſo inconſiderable, that the conſtitution is not affected by it; becauſe it is an operation to which the powers belonging to the parts themſelves are fully equal. The inflammation

may produce a ſmall degree of pain, but the operation of union gives no ſenſation of any kind whatever.

The firſt and great requiſite for the reſtoration of injured parts, is reſt, as it allows that action, which is neceſſary for repairing injured parts, to go on without interruption, and as injuries often excite more action than is required, reſt becomes ſtill more neceſſary. But reſt may be thought to conſiſt merely in abſtaining from bodily exerciſe; this will in general be proper, as moſt parts of the body will be affected either immediately, as being engaged in the action itſelf, or intermediately by ſome connection with the injured parts. Thus, if the injury be in the limbs, and not ſuch as to prevent walking together, ſtill perſons ſhould not be allowed to walk; and we find from the want of this caution, complaints in thoſe parts are commonly longer in recovering than in others; for by keeping the limbs at reſt, the whole progreſſive motion is ſtopped, a thing more diſagreeable to the mind than any prevention of motion in the body. If an arm be injured, it is not ſo, the want of its uſe is not ſo diſtreſſing to the patient, becauſe he can enjoy locomotion, and may have no objection to keeping his hands quiet. Reſt is often admitted from neceſſity, as in the fracture of a leg, but ſeldom where motion is only an inconvenience. But it muſt appear, that the rupture of a veſſel requires union as well as the fracture of a bone, although the veſſel having more powers of reſtoration within itſelf than the bone, and having leſs occaſional diſturbance from other powers, eſpecially of fractures of the loweſt extremities, yet the reſt ſhould be proportioned to the miſchief which would follow from the want of it; and this will vary according to the ſituation of parts. The ſame principle of reſt ſhould apply to every injury, although this is not often allowed to be the caſe. Thus where an injury produces inability to move a part, eſpecially if in a joint, it is from fear of the loſs of motion, not only allowed to be moved by its own muſcles, which would be the moſt proper mode, if motion at all was neceſſary, but is moved by the ſurgeon, or by his direction, who, not ſatisfied with mechanical violence, has recourſe to ſtimulants, as warm applications, in order to rouſe up the internal action of the parts, and at the very time when every thing ſhould be kept quiet till reſtoration of the injury has taken place. In many parts of the body this practice

is not so injurous as in others, in which it may be attended with very serious consequences. Thus when a man has suffered a concussion of the brain, and perhaps a blood-vessel has given way, the mind is deranged, becoming either defective or too acute, and if these symptoms should continue but a little while, the medical assistant applies blisters to remove the effect, either forgetting, or not rightly judging the cause. This is even carried further, we hardly see a man taken with all the signs of an apoplexy, where a paralysis in some part takes place, or hemiplegia*, but that he is immediately attacked with cordials, stimulants, electricity, etc. Upon a supposition that it is nervous, debility, etc. the poor body is also tortured, because it cannot act, the brain not being in a condition to influence the voluntary muscles; we might with exactly the same propriety stimulate the fingers when their muscles were torn to pieces. I must own I never saw one of them which had not an extravasation of blood in the brain when opened, excepting one, who died of a gouty affection in the brain, with symptoms similar to apoplexy†. Such a case, most probably, would require a very different mode of treatment, therefore when it happens to be a gouty man, blisters, to the head, feet, etc. would probably be the best practice; but surely this would not be the proper practice in a rupture of a vessel; we ought to bleed at once very largely, especially from the temporal artery, till the patient begins to shew signs of recovery, and to continue it till he might begin to become faintish. We should give saline purges freely, to diminish impetus and promote absorption; then great quietness should be enjoined, and as little exercise of the body as possible, and especially to avoid coughing and sneezing. Plain food should be directed, and but little of it; nor will such cases ever allow of being

* It may be observed here, that the only difference between an apoplexy and hemiplegia is in degree, for they both arise from extravasations of blood.

† For many years I have been particularly attentive to those who have been attacked with a paralitic stroke, forming a hemiplegia. I have watched them while alive, that I might have an opportunity to open them when dead; and in all I found an injury done to the brain, in consequence of the extravasation of blood. I have examined them at all stages, when it was recent, some of weeks standing, others of months, and a few years, in which I saw the progress of reparation.

rouſed to action, when as much recovered in their texture as nature can accompliſh, to the ſame degree that other parts will admit of or even require.

Theſe obſervations lead us to conſider the means of relief, for, beſides reſt, it often happens that the parts can be relieved from the ſecondary conſequences of the injury, ſuch as inflamations, etc. But this leads to conſtitutional and local treatment, and will be included in the hiſtory of inflammation.

I have already mentioned that when the ſalutary effects above deſcribed take place, the conſtitution is not in the leaſt effected, yet it is proper in all caſes where much miſchief might ariſe from a failure, to pay a little attention to the conſtitution. The patient ſhould eat plain food, drink weak liquors, and have the body kept open; this treatment with reſt ſuitable to the caſe, will in many inſtances prevent evils that might otherwiſe occur and prove troubleſome.

IV. OF SCABING.

The operations which I have deſcribed prevent inflamation, eſpecially that ſort of it which produces ſuppuration; but even where the parts are not brought together, ſo as to admit of union by the firſt intention, nature is always endeavouring to produce the ſame effect. The blood which is thrown out in conſequence of the accident, and which would have united ſurfaces brought into contact, is in part allowed to eſcape, but by its coagulation on the ſurface a portion is there retained, which drying and forming a ſcab*, becomes an obſtacle to ſuppuration. The inflamation may be greater than where union can be effected, but not nearly ſo great as when ſuppuration takes place.

* A ſcab may be defined firſt, dried blood on a wound, dried pus on a ſore, a ſlough from whatever cauſe allowed to dry, mucus, from an inflamed ſurface, as in the noſe.

The blood lying on the freſh ſurface, although not now alive, and therefore not fitted for union with the living parts underneath, yet precludes the neceſſity of any further diſcharge as a covering to the expoſed ſurface, which is one of the uſes of pus.

This might be conſidered as the firſt mode of healing a wound or ſore, for it appears to be the natural one, requiring no art; and in the ſtate of parts beforementioned, the complete union is in ſome degree indebted to this mode of healing, by uniting the edges that were not or could not be brought into cloſe contract, by means of a ſcab; proper attention to this has, I believe, been too much neglected.

Many wounds ought to be allowed to ſcab, in which this proceſs is now prevented; and this ariſes, I believe, from the conceit of ſurgeons, who think themſelves poſſeſſed of powers ſuperior to nature, and therefore have introduced the practice of making ſores of all wounds: a ſcab however muſt always be on a ſurface, it is only a ſuperficial wound, or on ſuperficial parts of deeper wounds, that ſcabs can form.

How far this practice may be extended, I do not know, but there are caſes in which it ſhould be diſcouraged, as where deep ſeated extraneous bodies have been introduced, as in gun-ſhot wounds, or where deeper ſeated parts have been filled; but it will anſwer extremely well, where the ſuperficies only is deprived of life.

Superficial hurts are very common, on parts oppoſite and near to ſome bone, as on the head, ſhin-bone, fingers, etc. but more eſpecially on the ſhin. In all ſuch caſes it is better to let them ſcab, if they ſeem inclined, or will admit of it; and if that ſhould not ſucceed, they can but ſuppurate at laſt, and no harm is done.

In many deep ſeated wounds, where all the parts have remained in contact, thoſe underneath will unite much better if the ſurface be allowed to ſcab. Some compound fractures (more eſpecially where the external wound is very ſmall) ſhould be allowed to heal in the ſame way; for by permitting the blood to ſcab upon the wound, either by itſelf, or when ſoaked into lint, the parts underneath will unite, the blood under the ſcab will become vaſcular, and the union will be complete, even where the parts are not in contact.

How far this practice may be extended is not yet aſcertained. A ſmall wound doing well under this treatment is a common caſe, and ſome examples of large wounds are mentioned, though theſe do not ſo generally ſucceed; but I do not know that there is any danger in the attempt. In many caſes, therefore, which ſeem doubtful, where the external contuſion is not very great, or not continued of the ſame ſize as in the deeper ſeated parts, it may be tried.

In ſome of thoſe caſes which have been allowed to ſcab, the parts injured have appeared ready to go into inflammation; a red circle has been ſeen all round, produced by the irritation of the ſcab. Suppuration takes place underneath the ſcab, and the pus makes its eſcape from under its edges: but even in ſuch caſes, I ſhould be cautious of treating it as a ſuppurating ſore: I ſhould allow it to go on, and occaſionally preſs the ſcab in order to ſqueeze out the pus; for it very often happens that the red circle ſurrounding the ſcab becomes of a duſky brown, which is the beſt ſign of reſolution, the ſuppuration diminiſhes, and the whole does well. But if inflammation ſhould proceed farther and ſeem to be increaſed by the mode of treatment, it muſt not be urged further; the ſcab ſhould be poulticed in order to ſoften it, that it may come off eaſily, and it ſhould afterwards be treated according to the nature of the ſore.

This practice ſucceeds wonderfully well in caſes where we find applications of all kinds diſagree with the ſkin. A perſon ſhall get a blow on the ſhin, which ſhall probably deaden a part, a poultice is then often applied, that poultice brings out pimples on the ſurrounding ſkin, theſe pimples increaſe and become ſores of ſome breadth, the poultice is increaſed in breadth to cover them, new pimples ariſe, and ſo on, that I have ſeen a whole leg full of thoſe ſores.

In ſuch, I always allow the wound to ſcab, and to accompliſh this, the beſt way is to take off the dreſſings in the morning, and put on trowſers, without ſtockings, and by the evening the parts are ſcabbed; or we may powder them with lapis calam: or chalk finely powdered, and deſire the patient to go bed, for the firſt night, with the trowſers on; where the ſore has been only one, I have made a circular pad, and bound that on till the ſcab was formed.

The mode of assisting the cure of wounds by permitting a scab to form is likewise applicable, in some cases, to that species of accident where the parts have not only been lacerated, but deprived of life. If the deadened surface is not allowed to dry or scab, it must separate from the living parts, by which means these will be exposed, and suppuration brought on; but if the whole can be made to dry, the parts underneath the slough will cicatrize, and the dried slough will at last drop off. I have seen this take place after the application of a caustic, and many other sloughs. Where this can be effected, it is the best practice, as it will preclude inflammation and suppuration, which, in most cases should be avoided if possible.

I have treated many cases in this way, and the living parts underneath have formed a skin as the slough separated. This will more readily take place where the cutis is not deprived of life through its whole substance; for it has a much stronger disposition and powers to restore itself than the cellular membrane has to form a new cutis; indeed the skin formed upon entire new flesh is very different from the original cutis; therefore as the skin is the part most liable to these accidents, we have the best chance of succeeding in this way when the cutis alone is injured.

This practice is the very best for burns or scalds, after the inflammation has either been considerably prevented, or subdued, by proper applications or by time, for which there probably are more remidies than for an inflammation arising from any other cause, as if there was something specific in such causes. Whatever will abate an inflammation arising from accident, will have the same effect upon a scald or a burn; and from the diversities of applications, we have opportunities of knowing the best. Oil was long an application, but which has no virtue; spirits has also been long applied, and with very good effect. The common application, which is a soap made with lime water and oil, seemed to answer better; and now vinegar is strongly recommended, and I think with justice, as far as I have seen.

Cold lessens all inflamations, and is a very good application where it can be applied, but it cannot be applied so universally as many others: however, cold has this disadvantage, that the pain, although removed while under the application, occurs with double force when it is removed,

much more than from any of the applications, and the reaſon is evident, for as the warmth returns, the pain is increaſed by the warmth, even in ſound parts; on the contrary, it is recommended, that when a part is burnt to hold it to the fire as hot and as long as it can be held, which undoubtedly leſſens the ſucceeding inflammation, and ſoon gives eaſe. This I have often ſeen, and probably it can only be accounted for on the principle of producing the act of contraction in the veſſels.

I have taken a bucket of cold ſpring water with me, when I have made an attempt on a waſp's neſt, and put my hand into it, after having been ſtung, and while my hand was in the water I felt no pain, but when I took it out, the pain was greater than when I put it in. This is not the caſe with other applications, for their ſpecific virtues are not counteracted by any natural circumſtance attending the body, and then they can be applied with a continuance to any part where the ſkin is thin. The bliſters commonly break, and ſo much the better, as the application can come in contact with the inflamed ſurface, but on the hand, foot, fingers, and toes, eſpecially in working people, and thoſe who walk much, the bliſters ſeldom break of themſelves; they ſhould be pricked with a needle to take off the tenſion.

When the inflammation has gone through its ſtages, then the parts ſhould be allowed to dry. This in many parts is very awkward, as when a large ſurface of the body is ſcalded, for expoſure is neceſſary, and in ſome parts it is almoſt impoſſible, as behind the ears, armpits, etc. To keep the cloths from ſticking to the parts, it is neceſſary to powder it with ſome inoffenſive powder, ſuch as lapis calaminaris, very fine powdered chalk; this does not hinder evaporation, the principle of ſcabbing; and if the diſcharge ſhould be ſo much at firſt as to moiſten the firſt powdering, then ſtrew more over the whole, till it forms a hard cruſt.

This is hardly neceſſary on the face, but it will rather dry ſooner by being at firſt powdered. In ſuch caſes nature will go on infinitely farther than if the parts had been diſturbed by our applications.

V. ACCIDENTS ATTENDED WITH DEATH IN A SUPERFICIAL PART.

In the foregoing account of injuries done to the body, and of the modes of reſtoration, we have been ſo far from conſidering inflammation as one of them, that hitherto it has been inculcated to guard againſt it with the utmoſt care.

It ſometimes, however, takes place, and is one of the modes of reſtoration when the methods abovementioned fail, as well as a mode of reſtoring parts under diſeaſe, we ſhall therefore proceed to explain its principle; but as there are accidents already mentioned, which often advance to ſuppuration, I ſhall now treat of them.

Among the diviſions of accidents, one is where death is produced in the injured parts, and where inflammation and ſuppuration muſt take place, in conſequence of the dead parts which ſeparate not being within the power of the former treatment to produce a cure; but it ſhould be remembered, that the inflammation, which is the forerunner of ſuppuration in ſuch caſes, is not nearly ſo great as even the inflammation ariſing from a wound that ſuppurates. In many accidents, ſuch as bruiſes, the ſkin preſerves its living powers, while the cellular membrane underneath has become dead; this will afterwards produce an abſceſs, and muſt be treated as abſceſſes commonly are, remembering that, in the preſent caſe, the abſceſs, after being opened, will be later in acquiring the healing diſpoſition than abſceſſes are commonly; the dead cellular membrane muſt ſeparate, which will come away like wet dirty lint.

It ſometimes happens, that in one part, the ſkin; in another, the cellular membrane only ſhall become dead; and in ſuch caſes, I have often obſerved that the bruiſed ſkin ſloughs much ſooner than the cellular membrane; an abſceſs, therefore, is frequently forming under the ſound ſkin while the other parts are healing, a circumſtance which often diſappoints both the patient and ſurgeon.

When the wound, or the dead part, is conſiderable, it is probable the treatment will, in general, be very proper, becauſe the degree of miſchief calling up the attention of

the ſurgeon, and producing acquieſcence in the patient, he will be induced to ſubmit to whatever may be thought neceſſary. The beſt application, at firſt, will probably be a poultice, which ſhould be either ſimple or medicated, according to the nature of the ſucceeding inflammation, and continued either till the inflammation has ſubſided, and ſuppuration come on ſufficient to keep the parts moiſt, or till the ſlough has entirely ſeparated, when the ſore may be dreſſed according to its particular diſpoſition. But ſuch accidents as have a ſuperficial part killed, when the ſlough would readily ſeparate, and the part ſuppurate kindly, are often treated improperly at firſt, by the patients themſelves applying Friar's balſam, or ſome ſuch medicines; but theſe not being within the power of ſcabbing, inflammation comes on and alarms the patient, a poultice is then commonly applied, which removes the firſt dreſſing, and the ſlough appears, which gives a diſagreeable appearance to the wound, and it is ſuppoſed to be a foul ſore. From ſuch an idea various methods are employed, and the application of red precipitate, etc. but with no good effect: and the patient becomes fretted from a ſore, apparently ſo trifling, being ſo difficult to heal; but it is impoſſible that ſuch a ſore can heal, while there is a ſlough to ſeparate. It is, therefore, the ſurgeon's buſineſs to inform himſelf of the nature of the complaint, to explain it to his patient, who will then become better ſatisfied, and leſs uneaſy about his own ſituation. When this piece of ſlough comes away, the ſore will put on an appearance according to the nature of the conſtitution, or of the part, and is to be treated accordingly.

CHAPTER II.

FUNDAMENTAL PRINCIPLES OF INFLAMMATION.

AN animal in perfect health is to be considered as a perfect machine, no part of it appearing naturally weaker than another, yet this is not ſtrictly true; but ſtill if no relative action, with regard to external matter, was to take place, the machine would, in itſelf, be tolerably perfect for its own actions. As the animal, however, is employed upon common matter, and therefore liable to accidents, which interrupt the natural operations, it becomes abſolutely neceſſary for its continuance, that it ſhould poſſeſs, within itſelf, the power of repair; we find it accordingly endowed with powers of repair upon many ſuch occaſions; but where parts give way from their own natural actions, this miſchief cannot be repaired; becauſe, if they are not able to ſuſtain their own actions, they cannot recover when diſeaſed or injured. It is found that ſome ſtructures of parts more readily give way than others, and conſequently are much longer in repair, either when diſeaſed or injured by accident. We alſo find that different ſituations, of ſimilar parts, give them advantages or diſadvantages, with regard to their powers of reſtoration. This is principally known from injuries being done to them, or in conſequence of thoſe injuries from the attack of a diſeaſe.

It is alſo ſhewn in the common actions of the body, or parts, of which, in health, we have comparative trials. We never can know what a thing is incapable of doing till it gives way, which giving way is either a diſeaſe, or productive of it: nor can we know the powers of reſtoration in the part till tried.

As a proof that parts cannot always be proportioned to the action or powers applied, which have no action within themſelves, but are only acted upon by external force, we

adduce the inſtances of a broken patella, or broken tendo achillis, or a thickening of the valves of the heart. In the firſt, however, there is commonly another power ſuperadded beſides ſimply the actions of the parts, viz. the body falling and being ſtopped at once. In the valves of the aorta, however, and the valvula mitralis, we have the beſt examples, for they become thickened from the actions of the parts themſelves; while no ſuch effect takes place in the valves of the pulmonary artery, even an anueriſm proves the ſame.

Where there is a difference in ſtructure, there are comparative powers to reſiſt the conſequences of actions, attended with injury, ſuch as their admitting more or leſs readily of thickening, ulceration, or mortifications and their comparative powers of reſtoration. When we compare the powers of reſtoration in muſcle, nerve, cellular membrane, ligament, tendon, bone, etc. with each other, they are found to be very different. Muſcles, ſkin, and probably nerves, poſſeſs the greateſt powers of that kind; and the cellular membrane, ligament, tendon, bone, etc. the leaſt, and are, in this reſpect, pretty equal among themſelves. How far elaſtic ligaments have powers of reſiſtance and repair, I do not know, but I ſhould ſuppoſe they had them in a very conſiderable degree, from the veſſels not giving way ſo readily as in many of the others.

Their comparative powers become pretty evident in moſt of their diſeaſes, but chiefly, I think, in mortification. As mortification is the moſt ſimple effect of debility, it gives the comparative powers of parts in the moſt ſimple manner. We find that muſcles, ſkin, and often blood-veſſels, ſtand their ground, while they are deprived of their connecting membranes which has either ſloughed off, or ulcerated; tendons likewiſe ſlough off as far as theſe muſcles, and ſtop there.

I have alſo obſerved, that difference in the ſituation of ſimilar ſtructures in the body makes a material difference both in the powers of reſiſtance to injuries, and of reparation when injuries have taken place. This difference ſeems to ariſe in proportion to the diſtance of the parts from the heart, or ſource of the circulation. Thus we ſee muſcles, ſkin, etc. becoming more readily diſeaſed in the legs than any where elſe, and more ſlow in their progreſs towards a cure; but this is not wholly to be laid to the charge of ſituation or diſtance from the ſource of the circulation, ſome

portion of it is to be attributed to position, the legs being depending parts, and those parts which are most distinct happen also to be the most dependent*. We find an horizontal position assist in the repair of such parts, but even then they are not equal in their powers to parts situated about the chest; the difference therefore is principally to be attributed to situation, or distance from the heart. The same disease that shewed the comparative powers between the muscle and tendon, shews also that they are equally affected by position; thus we see ulceration and mortification taking place in the lower extremity, as such, more readily and with less powers of repair, than happens in parts near the chest.

This is still more the case if the person be tall. This is seen by changing a limb from a horizontal position, in which it was easy to a dependent one, wherein it feels pain; because the new position increases the length of the column of blood in the veins. I am inclined to believe that the retardation of the cure is more owing to a stagnation of the blood in the veins, from the length of the column, than from a deficiency of the motion of the blood in the arteries. As the readiness of a part to fall into disease, and its backwardness to admit of cure, arises from position, it is in some degree compensated by rest and a change of the position.

These differences in the structure, situation, and position of parts in the body, make, I believe, but little difference in the progress of specific diseases; the venereal disease, however, certainly does not make such progress in bone, tendon, etc, as in the skin, nor does the cure advance so rapidly in those parts; but both these effects may be attributed to another cause, which is, that bones and tendons are more deeply seated. I believe, however, that position makes no difference in the disease itself, although it may have some influence upon the power of cure, and perhaps in all specific diseases, in the progress towards a cure; for a venereal sore is always approaching nearer and nearer to the nature of a common sore, and therefore is more and more readily influenced by what influences a common sore.

* We find in most authors the whole laid to this, which I shall more fully discuss in the history of opinions.

But in diſeaſes, for which there is at preſent no cure, as the cancer, I believe it makes no difference where it is ſituated, or in what it is placed, except in the caſe of ſuch parts as have a tendency to ſuch diſeaſes, which no one of the parts abovementioned has more than another.

I have ſo far conſidered, in the general way, the comparative powers of different ſtructures, of different ſituations, and of different poſitions in ſome parts of the body when affected by diſeaſe. Diſeaſe is the only circumſtance which expoſes theſe principles to our view, but to ſee how far the ſame principle was carried in natural operations, of which the moſt remarkable is the growth of parts, I made ſeveral experiments on fowls. The firſt was the common experiment of tranſplanting the ſpur of a young chicken from its leg to its comb, in which experiment I always found that the ſpur on the comb, when it took root, grew much faſter and became much larger than that left on the leg. This I attributed to the greater power of action in the comb than in the leg, although they are pretty nearly at equal diſtances from the ſource of the circulation; but probably poſition alſo favoured it, as there was no ſtagnation in the veins of the head. In the power of producing ſuch effects in diſeaſe, as well as in the growth of parts, I was then deſirous to know the comparative degrees between the male and the female. I wiſhed alſo to aſcertain if the parts peculiar to the male could grow on the female, and if the parts of a female, on the contrary, would grow on a male.

Although I had formerly tranſplanted the teſticles of a cock into the abdomen of a hen, and they had ſometimes taken root there, but not frequently, and then had never come to perfection, yet the experiment could not, from this cauſe, anſwer fully the intended purpoſe; there is I believe, a natural reaſon to believe it could not, and the experiment was therefore diſregarded*. I took the ſpur from the leg of a young cock, and placed it in the ſituation of the ſpur in the leg of a hen chicken, it took root, the chicken grew to a hen, but at firſt no ſpur grew, while the ſpur that was left on the other leg of the cock, grew as uſual.

This experiment I have repeated ſeveral times, in the ſame ſummer with the ſame effects, which led me to con-

* Vide book on Teeth.

ceive that the ſpur of a cock would not grow upon a hen, and that they were, therefore, to be conſidered as diſtinct animals, having very diſtinct powers. In order to aſcertain this, I took the ſpurs of hen chickens and placed them on the legs of young cocks. I found that thoſe which took root, grew nearly as faſt, and to as large a ſize as the natural ſpur on the other leg, which appeared to be a contradiction to my other experiments. Upon another examination of my hens, however, I found that the ſpurs had grown conſiderably, although they had taken ſeveral years to do it; for I found that the ſame quantity of growth in the ſpur of the cock, while on the cock during one year, was as much as that of the cock's ſpur on the hen in the courſe of three or four years, or as three or four to one; whereas the growth of the hen's ſpur on the cock was to that of the proper ſpur of the cock as two to one. Theſe experiments ſhew that there is an inequality of powers in different parts of the ſame animal, and that the legs have much leſs than the comb; they alſo ſhew that there is a material difference in the powers of the male and the female. The ſpurs of a cock were found to poſſeſs powers beyond thoſe of a hen, while at the ſame time, the one animal as a whole, has more powers than the other; yet when I apply theſe principles to the powers of cure in local diſeaſes of the two ſexes in the human race, I can hardly ſay that I have obſerved any difference. It is to be obſerved, however, that women commonly live a much more temperate life than men, which certainly muſt have conſiderable influence both with regard to reſiſting and curing diſeaſes.

In all complicated animals, among which man is the moſt complex, the parts are compoſed of different ſtructures, and we find that in ſuch animals the powers of action of thoſe different ſtructures within themſelves are very different; when they are therefore excited to any common action, the varieties produced ſhould be well known and particularly attended to. Beſides, every ſimilar ſtructure in different animals does not always act in the ſame manner. Thus we cannot make a horſe vomit; nor can we give many ſpecific diſeaſes, which attack the human ſubject, to any other animal, more particularly the morbid poiſons. The mode, therefore, of action in one animal does not implicitly direct to the mode of action in another; nor does the ſame ſtructure in the ſame animal always act

in the ſame way at all times: it acts at various times in a way ſimilar to the ſame ſtructure in various animals; and beſides, the ſame ſtructure varies its action in different ſituations in the ſame animal. Beſides, the exterior actions of life make a very material difference in the internal actions of animals, or in the excitement of diſeaſe, either univerſally or locally; for there are parts which cannot bear one mode of life, while there are other parts which cannot bear another. Parts and mode of life being in oppoſition with each other. A great many of theſe varieties depends upon the difference in the natural ſtrength and weakneſs of the parts; but as thoſe vary very conſiderably in different habits, ſo the varieties are increaſed; and likewiſe, as many occurrences in life produce the principle of ſtrength or weakneſs, we have thoſe varieties ſtill more increaſed, as well as diſeaſe.

Theſe obſervations, as heads, I ſhall treat more fully, but not as my principle ſubject, attending to them only ſo far as they are connected with inflammation, and may illuſtrate the varieties in that action.

I. OF THE DIFFERENT CAUSES WHICH INCREASE AND DIMINISH THE SUSCEPTIBILITY FOR INFLAMMATION EITHER IN THE WHOLE BODY OR IN PARTS.

Susceptibility for inflammation may be ſaid to have two cauſes, the one original, the other acquired. The original conſtitutes a part of the animal œconomy, and it is probably inexplicable.

Of the acquired it is probable that climate, and modes of life, may tend conſiderably either to diminiſh or increaſe the ſuſceptibility for inflammation.

The influence, however, of climate may not be ſo great as it commonly appears to be, for it is generally accompanied by modes of life that are not ſuited to others; and if we conſider how much leſs pernicious many climates are now than they were formerly, ariſing from the mode of living being different, we may be led to allow leſs influence

to climate; and on the other hand, if we conſider how diſeaſe becomes multiplied and varied in the ſame climate, we ſhall ſee that climate alone is not attended with ſo much variety as may have been ſuppoſed.

It is obſerved by ſome of the ableſt phyſicains of this day, that the fever called inflammatory, is now not ſo common in this country as it was formerly repreſented to have been; that it is now ſeldom that in fevers they are obliged to have recourſe to the lancet, at leaſt to that exceſs which is deſcribed by authors in former times. They are now more obliged to have recourſe to cordials than evacuations, and indeed the diſeaſe called the putrid fever, and putrid ſore throat, are but of late date. I remember when the laſt was called, Fothergill's ſore throat, becauſe he firſt publiſhed upon it, and altered the mode of practice. I remember when practitioners uniformly bled in putrid fevers; but ſigns of debility and want of ſucceſs made them alter their practice.

Whether the ſame difference takes place in inflammation I do not know, but I ſuſpect that it does in ſome degree, for I am inclined to believe that fever and inflammation are very nearly allied, that is, that either will be according to the conſtitution, which is not the caſe with ſpecific diſeaſes, excepting in their common modes of action, which conſiſt either in fever or inflammation; but I believe we have much leſs occaſion for evacuations in inflammation than there were formerly, the lancet, therefore, in inflammation, and alſo purgatives, are much more laid aſide. How far climate varies the conſtitution ſo as to alter the nature of diſeaſes, I do not at preſent know; but it would appear from Dr. Blane's account, that inflammation is hardly a diſeaſe in the Weſt Indies.

How far an alteration in the mode of life is the cauſe of this difference, I will not pretend to ſay, but certainly the way of life is very much altered. We certainly live now more fully than they did formerly. We may be ſaid to live above par. At the full ſtretch of living, therefore, when diſeaſe attacks us, our powers cannot be excited further, and we ſink, ſo as to require being ſupported and kept up to that mode of life to which we have been accuſtomed.

A kind of conſtant ſtate and variety of mind may often alter conſtitutions ſo much as to alter the mode of diſeaſed action, which is much more common in ſome countries

than others. We may be pretty certain that this ſtate of mind often produces inflammation of the gout.

Probably there is but little power in art to concert the ſuſceptibility of inflammation; however, if the ſuſceptibility of the body be ſimilar to that of the mind it ought to be in ſome degree corrected by art. The mind is corrected by reaſon, together with habit, but the body can only have the laſt employed upon it; it might be made leſs ſuſceptible by the immediate cauſes coming ſlowly upon it, or by avoiding thoſe cauſes and even acting in diametrical oppoſition to them; this will at leaſt anſwer in the acquired ſuſceptibilities. The acquired ſuſceptibility for inflammation, or indeed for any other diſeaſe as it is acquired by art or habit, may be leſſened ſimply by a ceſſation of thoſe habits; and if the habit is of any particular kind, which is always aſcertainable, then the habit of the contrary is to be uſed, which muſt alſo be aſcertainable.

Strength and weakneſs are the oppoſites of each other, and therefore muſt have very different effects in diſeaſe. They have very different powers in reſiſting diſeaſe in their mode of action, and alſo their readineſs to terminate that action.

Strength, probably, under every circumſtance, produces good effects, or at leaſt it is always more in the power of management, by art, than weakneſs; I can conceive, however, that too much ſtrength might act with too much power, becoming unmanageable under diſeaſe that excites action.

In inflammation, when the conſtitution is ſtrong, then it will be commonly the moſt manageable, for ſtrength leſſens irritability: but in every kind of conſtitution, inflammation will be the moſt manageable where the power and the action are pretty well proportioned; but as every part of the body has not equal ſtrength, theſe proportions cannot be the ſame in every part of the ſame conſtitution. According to this idea of ſtrength, the following parts, viz. muſcles, cellular membrane, and ſkin, and more ſo in proportion as they are nearer to the ſource of the circulation, will be moſt manageable in inflammation and its conſequences, becauſe they are ſtronger in their powers of action than the other parts of the body.

The other parts, as bone, tendon, ligament, etc. fall into an inflammation which is leſs in the power of art to

manage, becauſe, though the conſtitution is good, yet they have leſs powers within themſelves, and therefore are attended with the feeling of their own weakneſs; and I believe they affect the conſtitution more readily than the former, becauſe the conſtitution is more affected by local diſeaſe, when the parts have leſs power within themſelves of doing well; and the effects, if bad on the conſtitution, reflect a backwardneſs on the little powers they have. Strength and weakneſs of the conſtitution, or of parts, are ſynonymous terms with a greater or leſs quantity of animal life, or living principle joined with powers of action.

The inflammation, if in vital parts, will be ſtill leſs manageable, for although the parts themſelves may have very ſtrong powers, yet the conſtitution, and the natural operations of univerſal health, become ſo much affected, that no ſalutary effect can ſo readily take place, and therefore the diſeaſe becomes leſs manageable.

If the vital part is the ſtomach, or ſuch as the ſtomach readily ſympathiſes with, inflammation, in ſuch parts, will be ſtill leſs manageable, for no operation can go on well, either in the ſtomach or in other parts, where the viſcus is affected, as the powers of reſtoration become weaker than ever.

In weak conſtitutions, although the inflammation be in parts which admit of the moſt ſalutary operations, in the time of the diſeaſe, and in ſituations the moſt favourable to reſtoration after diſeaſe, yet the operations of inflammation are proportionably more backward, as to their ſalutary effects, in ſuch conſtitutions, and more or leſs according to the nature of the parts affected, which I ſhall now conſider more fully.

II. EFFECTS OF STRENGTH OR WEAKNESS OF CONSTITUTION, AND OF PARTS, WHILE UNDER INFLAMMATION.

WHATEVER is to be the conſequence of injuries, eſpecially inflammation, is produced much more readily in a ſtrong conſtitution than in a weak one. A wound, for inſtance, made upon a perſon of an healthy conſtitution, and

ſound parts, will unite almoſt at once; it admits readily of an union by the firſt intention. A greater ſtrength of conſtitution and of parts, admits of reſolution, while in the adheſive ſtate of inflammation, very readily, and therefore tends much to prevent the ſuppurative inflammation from taking place, for it gives a better diſpoſition to heal by the adheſive; ſo that the union of parts by the firſt intention, the inflammation and reſolution, as well as the readineſs to change from the one to the other, according as the preceding, is prevented, depends equally upon the ſtrength and health of conſtitution and parts inflamed. We may alſo obſerve, that a greater ſtrength and ſoundneſs of the conſtitution, or parts inflamed, when the inflammation has got beyond the ſtage of reſolution, and has aſſumed the diſpoſition for ſuppuration, haſtens on inflammation and ſuppuration, and alſo brings it ſoon to a termination, while, at the ſame time, the matter is brought more quickly to the ſkin by ulceration,

Whatever, therefore, is the ſtep which nature is to take, whenever an injury is done, or a neceſſity for inflammation has taken place, it is performed with readineſs and facility in ſtrong conſtitutions and parts.

Weakneſs of conſtitution and weakneſs of parts, are ſuppoſed to be the immediate cauſe of moſt tedious or chronic diſeaſes. It appears to be often uſed as a general term, as have alſo nervous, bilious, to denote any thing for which we cannot well account, and to which, I am certain, there has been affixed no preciſe meaning. Every action that is not acute, eſpecially a mild continuation of ſome of the ſymptoms of a former violent diſeaſe, is called weakneſs. Thus a gleet is called a weakneſs, diarrhœa is called a weakneſs, flour albus is called a weakneſs; none of which I conceive ſimply to ariſe from weakneſs; for I believe that weakneſs ſeldom or ever becomes an immediate cauſe of diſeaſe, or action of any kind; but it often becomes the prediſpoſing cauſe of diſeaſe, many diſeaſes not taking place, except where weakneſs is an attendant, as agues, ſcrophula, nervous, etc. none of which are ſimple weakneſs; and it may continue many diſeaſes when they have already taken place. This is, I think, very evident in many diſeaſes which would terminate well if there was ſtrength in the conſtitution to perform the right actions. However, where there is a ſtrong ſuſceptibility for any one

diſeaſe, in which weakneſs might alſo become a prediſpoſing cauſe, I can believe that, in ſuch caſes, weakneſs, eſpecially if ſuddenly brought on, may become an immediate cauſe of that diſeaſe; as, for inſtance, a man may, from a wound, or any other cauſe, have a ſtrong tendency to a locked jaw; if you bleed that man freely, it is a thouſand to one but that a locked jaw comes on: weakneſs produces a conſciouſneſs of its own want of powers, or incapacity, which produces increaſed action, that even proceeds the length of unnatural actions, called nervous. Theſe effects are no leſs viſible in acute diſeaſes in ſuch conſtitutions, which include accidents, or violence, of all kinds; for they run into too violent action, which is not of a ſalutary kind, and therefore may be called unnatural diſeaſed action.

When a wound is made in a perſon of a weak habit, there is a great backwardneſs in the two cut ſurfaces to unite by the firſt intention, therefore inflammation takes place if there be ſtrength of conſtitution to produce it, which is not always the caſe; ſo that in ſuch habits inflammation is more likely to be a conſequence; but this does not ariſe from a greater readineſs to inflammation in the habit, but from a want of power and diſpoſition to heal, which renders inflammation neceſſary; however, in this caſe the want of powers or diſpoſition to unite may partly depend upon a different principle from that of weak parts or ſolids; it is probable that the blood of people of weak habits is weak in its living principle, which it therefore very ſoon loſes upon extravaſation, ſo as to become unfit for a bond of union, by which it degenerates into an extraneous body, and therefore the ſuppurative inflammation muſt take place if there be ſtrength to produce it.

In weak habits and diſeaſed parts, inflammation is ſlow in any of its ſalutary effects, and is hardly capable of either producing the adheſive or ſuppurative inflammation; if they ſhould take place, it is but imperfectly, and the ſurrounding inflamed parts of the ſuppurating ſurfaces are hardly capable of reſolution, but continue inflamed; we even find in many conſtitutions, where the animal powers are very much weakened, that inſtead of their readily running into inflammation, it is hardly poſſible to promote it, even from a breach of continuity in the ſolids, which, in moſt other caſes, is ſureſt of being followed by inflammation: ſuch conſtitutions are in general thoſe which are

dropſical: I have ſeen ſeveral caſes, where the power has been ſo weak, that the wound, after tapping, has not united by the firſt intention, nor has even acquired the adheſive ſtate of inflammation, and has admitted water to paſs through it from the abdomen for ſeveral weeks without the peritoneal inflammation being excited. In the ſame dropſical habits, I have ſeen ſcarifications in the legs or feet not inflame, ſo that the cells were not united, but continue to diſcharge the water for many weeks. In ſuch caſes of extreme weakneſs, this total want of inflammation would appear to be a ſalutary effect; for in many dropſical caſes, where the parts have powers to inflame, but not ſufficient to go through the different ſtages of the inflammation, and at laſt reſolve, as in healthy conſtitutions, the inflammation generally produces a total loſs of animal powers, and the parts mortifies, which often produces death in the whole, ſo that in ſuch caſes the parts only act to deſtroy themſelves*. As a further proof that debility is often the cauſe of increaſed inflammation, in conſequence of any violence, and often the cauſe of mortification, is plainly ſhewn in Mr. Dick's account of dropſies among the troops in the Eaſt Indies, Edin. Med. Com. In the firſt year of the attack in any man, he durſt not venture to ſcarify the legs, but when they were attacked with the ſame diſeaſe the year following, which was often the caſe, whenever he attempted to ſcarify the legs, a violent inflammation and mortification were the conſequence. He was in this ſecond attack obliged to have recourſe to ſtrengtheners; and we may obſerve that, in the caſe of tapping, if the conſtitution is irritable, the cavity of the abdomen commonly feels the effect, and inflammation of the peritoneum, and death is the conſequence.

As the effect which this inflammation has upon the conſtitution is by ſympathy, it muſt be in proportion to the readineſs with which the conſtitution aſſumes that action. This ſuſceptibility is ſtronger in ſome conſtitutions than in others; and every conſtitution is more ſuſceptible of ſympathy with ſome parts of the body than with others.

The kind of conſtitution which is leaſt affected by this inflammation, is that which is in general moſt healthy, where ſympathy hardly takes place; this happens to be the caſe with ſuch conſtitutions as can moſt readily perform

* Vide paper on the Recovery of drowned People.

all the different operations with eaſe ; and when the parts inflamed are able to manage their own buſineſs, they thereby affect the conſtitution leſs ; for we ſhall find, that a conſtitution may be affected by a local diſeaſe, merely becauſe it is beyond the power of the part to cure itſelf.

But it is to be obſerved, that conſtitutions in full vigor, or which have not been in the ſmalleſt degree accuſtomed to local diſeaſe, take the alarm much more readily than thoſe which are not in ſuch full health, or which have been accuſtomed with local diſeaſe. Thus, if a man in perfect health gets a very bad compound fracture in the leg, or has his leg taken off, either for this fracture or in conſequence of any other accident, he ſtands a much worſe chance of recovery than one who has been accuſtomed to a local diſeaſe: even the man with the compound fracture will do much better, if his leg is not taken off, till the firſt ſymptoms are over ; or at leaſt we may be certain that the ſymptoms ariſing from the amputation will not be nearly ſo great as thoſe that ariſe at firſt from the fracture, or would have ariſen from the immediate amputation. This would appear to be a contradiction to the above poſition ; but upon an accurate inveſtigation I think it may be accounted for ; for firſt, I do not look upon full health, as the beſt condition to reſiſt diſeaſe ; diſeaſe is a ſtate of body which requires a medium; health brooks diſeaſe ill, and full health is often above par ; perſons in full health are too often at the full ſtretch of action, and cannot bear an increaſe, eſpecially when diſeaſed ; and as I before obſerved, it is a new impreſſion on the conſtitution, and till it be in ſome degree accuſtomed to local diſeaſe, it is leſs able to bear ſuch as is violent ; beſides, the removal of a diſeaſed part which the conſtitution has been accuſtomed to, and which is rather fretting the conſtitution, is adding leſs violence than the removal of a ſound part in perfect harmony with the conſtitution ; the difference, however, is not wholly owing to that cauſe, for the circumſtance of a conſtitution being accuſtomed to a mode of life, etc. which it is to continue, makes a conſiderable difference.

III. OF PARTS OF THE BODY MOST SUSCEPTIBLE OF THE THREE DIFFERENT INFLAMMATIONS TO BE TREATED OF.

All parts of the body are ſuſceptible of inflammation, although not all equally ſo; nor will all parts of the body admit readily of the three different kinds of inflammation I mean to treat of; ſome parts admitting readily of one only, others of two, and others of all the three; which difference appears to be according to the ſituation of the inflamed parts in the body, and alſo the nature of the parts inflamed. The cellular membrane the firſt. The cellular membrane free from the adipoſe, appears to be more ſuſceptible of the adheſive inflammation, than the adipoſe membrane, and much more readily paſſes into the ſuppurative. Whether this ariſes from ſurfaces inflaming more readily than other parts, I will not pretend to ſay. Thus we ſee that the cellular membrane connecting parts together as muſcles, and the cellular membrane connecting the adipoſe to muſcles, eaſily inflames and runs readily into ſuppuration, and, as it were, ſeparates the muſcles from their lateral conexion, and even ſeparates the adipoſe from the muſcles, while the ſkin and adipoſe membrane ſhall only be highly inflamed, and the matter ſo formed muſt produce ulceration through all this adipoſe membrane, to get to the ſkin, and then through the ſkin, in which laſt mentioned parts it is much more tedious; ulceration, therefore, does not ſo readily take place in thoſe parts as it does in the common connecting membrane. Muſcles, nerves, and blood-veſſels, are parts which nature wiſhes to retain, and the adipoſe membrane contains a ſubſtance which is properly no part of the animal, viz. oil; it may therefore be more difficult for this part to be abſorbed than what are properly the parts of the animal itſelf.

As a deficiency in the power to heal becomes a ſtimulus, or an incitement to inflammation, we find that ſimilar parts, in proportion as they are removed from the ſource of the cirulation, ſuch as the lower extremities, are more ready to inflame than others not ſo circumſtanced; and

what adds to this backwardneſs is their being depending parts, which adds to the incitement.

The deeper ſeated parts of the body, and more eſpecially the vital, very readily admit of the adheſive inflammation, which is proved by diſections; for we hardly ever open a human ſubject where there are not in the circumſcribed cavities conſiderable adheſions: and moſt probably many in the common cellular membrane, if they were equally viſible.

The deeper ſeated parts, however, do not in common ſo readily paſs into the ſuppurative inflammation; and this readineſs to accept of the adheſive, moſt probably becomes a cauſe why the ſuppurative inflammation does not ſo readily take place.

But if the inflammation comes on at once, with great violence, it would appear to paſs almoſt at once over the adheſive, immediately to the ſuppurative action; or perhaps where it may appear to have done this, there may be an eryſepelatous diſpoſition; for although it is not the diſpoſition of the eryſepelatous inflammation to ſuppurate, yet it has a greater backwardneſs to produce adheſions. This effect we often find take place in the abdomen, in the thorax, etc. and I have already mentioned that I ſuſpect the eryſepelatous inflammation does, in ſome degree, reverſe the common rules of the common inflammation, by being more ready to ſuppurate in deep ſeated parts than in the ſuperficial, and extend much farther towards the centre of the body.

I ſuſpect too, that the coverings of the brain, viz. pia and dura-mater, have ſomething of this diſpoſition. They appear to ſuppurate very readily, or with very little inflammation; for from a ſlight blow on the head, we find theſe membranes much oftener ſuppurate than we ſhould from a ſimilar blow on the ſhin-bone; for inſtance, a blow on this bone will only produce ſuppuration on the external ſurface, very ſeldom in its internal cavity; but a blow on the head that ſhall not even produce the adheſive inflammation in the ſcalp, ſhall make thoſe membranes ſuppurate.

Inflammation, wherever ſituated, is always more violent on that ſide of the point of inflammation next to the external ſurface.

This effect we often find take place in the abdomen, in the thorax, etc. and I have already mentioned that I ſuſpect inflammation, wherever ſituated, if there be a continuity of parts between it and the external ſurface, will be greater on that ſide next to the external ſurface of the part, than towards the centre of the part.

This alſo equally takes place in inflammations, although cloſe to the different outlets of the body, and is probably moſt eaſily demonſtrated in them. Thus, for inſtance, if an inflammation comes on in the ſocket of a tooth at its root, inflammation will not take place on the inſide of the jaw, but towards the outſide; and if it is beyond the union of the lips with the gum, it will attack the ſkin over the inflamed part, while all the internal parts, ſuch as the gums on both ſides, but principally on the inſide. The tongue if in the lower jaw, ſhall be perfectly ſound.

If an inflammation attacks the cellular membrane on the outſide of the gut near the anus, although the gut is in contact with the inflamed part, yet the inflammation extends to the ſkin of the buttock, while the gut remains pretty free from inflammation.

If an inflammation attacks the peritonæum covering an inteſtine, and if adheſions between it and the peritonæum lining the abdomen are a conſequence, the inflammation immediately paſſes through the abdominal muſcles towards the ſkin, while the proper coats of the inteſtines ſhall in moſt caſes remain ſound; however, this is not always the caſe, although much more commonly ſo than the reverſe: we ſee the ſame thing in the obſtruction of the natural paſſage of the tears called fiſtula lacrymalis, for there the ſack and ſkin ulcerate on the inner angle of the eye, while the the inſide of the noſe defends itſelf by becoming thicker; ſo much ſo in many caſes as to ſtop the cavity of the noſe, and unite with the ſeptum, which has been the cauſe of the failure of the operation for the fiſtula lacrymalis. We even find, that if an abſceſs forms in a frontal ſinus from an obſtruction in its duct, that the matter makes its way through the frontal bone externally, inſtead of getting into the noſe.

The ſame obſervations are applicable to abſceſſes in the antrum, which are common caſes; and indeed, if we obſerve accurately, we ſhall find that nature rather defends ſuch parts as are either deeper ſeated, or on the inſide of outlets, as will be explained hereafter.

The ſpecific qualities in diſeaſes alſo tend more rapidly to the ſkin than to the deeper ſeated parts, except the cancer; although even in this diſeaſe the progreſs towards the ſuperficies is more quick than its progreſs toward the center. The venereal has ſomething of the ſame diſpoſition with the cancer, although not ſo much. In ſhort, this is a law in nature, and it probably is upon the ſame principle by which vegetables always approach the ſurface of the earth. That this is a general principle in vegetation requires no illuſtration, but what is the immediate cauſe is not ſo eaſily determined. I conceive it might be the light, not warmth, for the ground is often warmer than the air, or ſurface, into which vegetables are often growing. To aſcertain this, as far as I could, by experiment, I took a tub, about eighteen inches deep, and about two wide, and filled it with fine mould, in which I planted ſome beans and peas; their eyes were placed in various directions, and over the ſurface was ſpread a cloſe maſhed net. The mouth of this tub was turned down, was raiſed about three feet from the ground, and was ſuſpended between two poſts. Round the tub, and over its bottom, which was uppermoſt, were placed wet ſtraw, mats, etc. to take off any influence the ſun or air might have upon its contents, and a ſmall hole was bored in its bottom, to which was fixed a ſmall long tube that came through the ſtraw. This was intended for pouring ſome water, if I found the earth get dry, into the tub. Under the mouth of the tub I placed looking glaſſes in ſuch a way that the light was thrown upon the mouth of the tub, or ſurface of the earth. The weather was fine; ſo that through the whole day there was the reflection of the light from the looking glaſſes upon the ſurface of the mould, which was much more powerful than day-light without the direct rays of the ſun. This I continued till I conceived that the beans and peas had grown ſome length, but not finding their tops coming down through the ſurface of the mould, I examined the contents of the tub, and found that they had all grown upwards towards the bottom of the tub, and that in thoſe whoſe eyes had been placed downwards the young ſhoot had turned round ſo as to riſe up. As one experiment leads to another, I wiſhed to ſee how a bean would grow if kept in conſtant rotatory motion. For this purpoſe I put ſome earth in a baſket, having the ſhape of a cylinder, and about a foot diameter, with the two ends of wood for greater ſtrength,

through the centre of which I fixed an axis or ſpindle; in the earth I planted a bean, about half way between the ſurface and axis, with its eye to the ſurface. The baſket was laid acroſs the mouth of a large tub, with the ends of the ſpindle reſting on the edges of the tub, which were fitted to one another ſo as to allow of eaſy motion. Round the baſket was rolled ſome ſmall cord, to the end of which was ſuſpended a box, water tight; into this was put lead, ſo as almoſt to make it ſink in water, and which was ſufficient to turn the baſket round in the open air. This large tub was filled with water, and the box placed upon it, and the ſpindle with the baſket placed acroſs the mouth of the tub; a very ſmall hole was boared at the lower end of the tub, which allowed the water to eſcape, but very ſlowly; as the water ſunk in the tub the box deſcended, and as the box deſcended the baſket was turned round. This tub took about twelve hours in emptying, and during that time the ſpindle with the baſket, only turned about one and an half. The tub was repeatedly filled, and when I conceived the bean might have grown ſome inches, if it had grown at all, I examined it, and found it had grown as much as if it had been planted in the common ground, but it had no particular direction but that of paſſing in a ſtraight line from the bean, which was at firſt towards the circumference, the direction in which it was planted; but in its courſe it had met with a ſmall ſtone, which had turned it into the direction of the axis, and it had gone on in a ſtraight line in that direction. Here, as there was no fixed inducement to grow in any one direction, the bean grew in a ſtraight line, in that direction given it by chance.

This circumſtance of the deeper ſeated parts not ſo readily taking on the ſuppurative inflammation as thoſe which are ſuperficial, is ſhewn in caſes where extraneous bodies irritate any parts; for we find that extraneous bodies are in general capable of producing inflammation, but if theſe extraneous bodies are deeply ſeated, they may remain for years without doing more than producing the adheſive inflammation, by which means they are incloſed in a cyſt, and only give ſome uneaſineſs; or if they are ſuch as can be made to change their ſituation by the actions of the body upon them, as pins and needles, or from gravity, as is the caſe ſometimes with bullets, then the parts through

which they pass seem not to be much altered or disturbed* : but if the same body was nearer to the skin it would produce suppuration. This is proved by the cases that have occurred of people swallowing pins, needles, &c. they have been found to travel almost over the whole body, without producing any effect, except in some situations exciting some sensation ; but when they have come near to the skin, the very same substance has generally produced suppuration. This principle shews itself very remarkably in the cattle which feed in bleach fields ; there is not one of these killed without having their stomachs, etc. stuck full of pins, and no seeming inconvenience takes place, for they appear to be healthy, and fatten as readily as other cattle. However, it is to be remarked that these pins are not found in the fourth or digesting stomach, therefore do not give that disturbance to the constitution that might be expected. It is probable that these cases of pins, etc. owe their want of power in producing suppuration, not entirely to situation, but in some degree to the nature of the substance, metals perhaps not having the power of irritation beyond the adhesive, for when the adhesive has taken place, the part appears to be satisfied.

This appears also to be the case with the introduction of glass, even in superficial parts ; a piece of glass shall enter the skin just deep enough to bury itself, inflammation shall come on, the wound in the skin, if brought together, shall heal by the first intention, and the inflammation shall not exceed the adhesive, but rather degenerate into the disposition for forming a sack, by which means a sack is formed round the glass, and no disturbance is given to the irritability of the parts. This was the case with Mr. Knight, apothecary, who had a piece of glass three-fourths of an inch long run into the palm of his hand, and remained there for ten weeks, without any further inconvenience than retarding the motion of the hand, and sometimes giving a pricking pain, when the sack was made to press upon the points of the glass ; this insensibility, however, arises from

* This circumstance of such bodies moving in various directions and not towards the surface, is a proof of the truth of my principle, for their motion arises from a mechanical cause, and is ruled by it ; which ever way it is directed they must move, whether by gravitation, as is the case with bullets, or by the mechanical pressure of the part upon the two ends of the pin, which will determine the motion towards the point.

a ſack being formed with ſuch properties, but it cannot be aſſigned as a cauſe in the caſe of bodies moving as pins. Whether this fact, of external parts aſſuming the ſuppurative inflammation more readily than the internal, ariſes from unknown properties in the parts themſelves, or from circumſtances which attend ſituation, ſuch as heat, cold, etc. is not eaſily determined; but whatever be the cauſe, the effects are good, as many ſituations of inflammation, viz. the internal, would prove dangerous, if the parts were always, or often to ſuppurate; of two evils, nature chooſes the leaſt; while on the other hand, when near the external ſurface, it becomes the leaſt evil to produce ſuppuration, in order to get rid of the extraneous matter. Accidents may be aſſigned as one cauſe of this frequency upon the external ſurfaces, but the caſes of pins abovementioned, (which is accident) ſhow, that even when it ariſes from accident, the parts near the external ſurface much more readily ſuppurate; and in all caſes ariſing from the conſtitution, or ſpontaneous, the external inflammations exceed the internal, in number, violence, and extent.

IV. OF THE TWO PARTS THAT HAVE THE ORDERS OF INFLAMMATION RESPECTING PRIORITY INVERTED.

I FORMERLY divided the ſurfaces capable of taking on inflammation into two; the firſt of theſe was the cellular membrane in general, together with the whole circumſcribed cavities; the ſecond was all the outlets in the body, commonly called mucous membranes; for inſtance, all the ducts of glands, and the alimentary canal.

The firſt order of parts, I have already obſerved, generally (if not always) take the adheſive firſt in the true inflammation, and then all the three inflammations in ſucceſſion; for the adheſive is immediately admitted in the cellular membrane and circumſcribed cavities, to exclude, if poſſible, ſuppuration, where ſuppuration, and of courſe ulceration, would prove hurtful.

In the following parts the order of inflammation, with regard to its being adhesive or suppurative, appears to be inverted; as the ulcerative is a consequence either of the adhesive or of the suppurative inflammation, it is ruled equally by both. In internal canals *, where adhesions in most cases would prove hurtful, the parts run immediately into the suppurative inflammation, the adhesive inflammation in common being excluded; such parts are the internal surfaces of the eyelids, nose, mouth, trachea, air-cells of the lungs, œsophagus, stomach, intestines, pelvis of the kidneys, ureters, bladder, urethra, uterus, vagina, and indeed all the ducts and outlets of the organs of secretion, which all these parts mentioned may be in some degree reckoned, and which are commonly called mucous membranes. In such parts, if the inflammation is but slight, the suppurative in common takes place, which is almost immediate, as it is not retarded by the adhesive stage, which accounts for the quickness of suppuration of these parts in many cases. I have known a violent discharge of pus come on the surface of the urethra only a few hours after contamination. These facts are shewn us every day in various inflammations of those parts, and particularly in the gonorrhœa, cold in the nose, lungs, intestines, etc. The matter from such is generally not called true matter, or purulent, but is often so, if not always, having all the characters of pus; however this will be according to circumstances. Since those surfaces are, in general, secreting surfaces, suppuration would appear to be only a change in the secretion; and I think I have visibly seen, or could visibly trace, the one change gradually leading into the other: the different parts, therefore, of which the pus is composed, will not always be in the same proportion, so that the matter will seem to vary from true matter, towards that of the common secretion of the part, and vice versa. But this does not alter the position, for it is common to matter from a sore; and even common to our ordinary secretions. If this inflammation, which produced suppuration on those surfaces, becomes more violent, or has something of the erysepelatous disposition, we find that it moves from the

* I make a distinction between an internal cavity and a canal; they are very different in their construction, their uses, and also their mode of action in disease are very different.

ſuppurative to the adheſive, and throws out the coagulating lymph. I have ſeen this in the inteſtines, often on the inſide of inteſtines that had been ſtrangulated in a hernia. I have been able, alſo, to produce it on the inſide of the vagina of an aſs, by injecting a ſtrong ſolution of corroſive ſublimate. But if of the eryſepelous kind, theſe ſurfaces will take on the adheſive action immediately or at firſt. This is evidently the caſe in what is called the ulcerous ſore throat; I have ſeen it in the trachea, I have ſeen it thrown up from the lungs in branches, I have ſeen it in the pelves of the kidneys, ureters, bladder and urethra.

This is contrary to the mode of action of the eryſepelatous inflammation in the cellular membrane and circumſcribed cavities, for there it hardly produces adheſions, and when it ſuppurates the ſuppuration takes place firſt. The common inflammation and the eryſepelatous would ſeem to change actions ſimilar to the adheſive and the ſuppurative, according as they are changed to places of different diſpoſitions, never acting in the ſame way under the ſame apparent circumſtances, and, therefore, ſomething ſpecifically different. As the adheſive inflammation is commonly excluded from ſuch ſurfaces in the true inflammation, ſo of courſe is the ulcerative in ſuch caſes; for it is in general only as a conſequence of the adheſive and ſuppurative having previouſly taken place, with the confinement of pus, that ulceration becomes neceſſary; for the ulcerative in ſuch caſes is a conſequence of a ſtimulus ariſing from preſſure from within.

In inflammation we ſeldom pay attention to more than the continued and the univerſal ſympathy; how far the contiguous takes place without adheſions, further than ſenſation, I am not certain. I believe it never produces inflammation without them; for we may obſerve, that a teſticle ſhall be conſiderably inflamed, and the ſcrotum not in the leaſt affected. The ſcrotum ſhall even inflame and ſlough off, without the teſticle being affected till death or expoſure takes place in the tunica vaginalis; then it becomes an expoſed or imperfect ſurface, ſimilar to the opening, or application of a cauſtic in the hydrocele; but I know that contiguous ſympathy produces a nervous tenderneſs or ſenſibility, expreſſed by the word ſore.

Thus I have ſeen complaints in the viſcera of the abdomen produce a vaſt tenderneſs in the ſkin of the abdomen; and alſo complaints of the lungs, produce a tenderneſs in

the ſkin of the cheſt oppoſite to the complaint. The remote ſympathy ſometimes takes place when particular parts are inflamed.

The continued is that ſympathy which increaſes the inflammatory ſpace, by which means the inflammation ſpreads beyond the irritating point. This becomes more a ſubject of ſurgery than any of the ſympathies, becauſe it increaſes the local complaint, and it takes its peculiarities from the conſtitution at large, as well as from the nature of the parts inflamed; as much can be learned from it in an inflammation as from any other ſymptom.

The univerſal ſympathy, or conſtitutional, is where the whole conſtitution feels the local diſeaſed action.

V. THE NATURAL CAUSE OF THE ADHESIVE INFLAMMATION BEING LIMITED.

As the body is made up of diſſimilar parts, whoſe conſtruction and functions are peculiar to themſelves, yet all tending to the benefit of the whole, we find them alſo keeping themſelves diſtinct in many of their diſeaſes as long as they can; and if it is a diſeaſe ſomewhat peculiar to the part it will be kept in proportion longer confined. Thus a cancer in the breaſt will ſpread faſter in the glandular part of the breaſt than in the ſurrounding parts which may even be in contact with it. A diſeaſe taking place in any part of a lymphatic gland, will communicate its diſeaſe to the whole of that gland much ſooner than to the ſurrounding cellular membrane. Even a diſeaſe common to all parts alike, if it takes place in any diſſimilar part will keep diſtinct at firſt.

Thus an inflammation in a lymphatic gland is not taken up by the ſurrounding cellular membrane, till the inflammation has made ſome conſiderable advancement, and then it begins to inflame. Thus a lymphatic gland ſhall inflame and the ſurrounding parts ſhall not, till other proceſſes beſides inflammation are going on, viz. ſuppuration; this, however, will be more or leſs, according to the conſtitu-

tion, for if it has a ſtrong ſuſceptibility for the eryſepelatous, the diſſimilar parts will more readily ſympathize with the ſeat of the diſeaſe.

Thus the inveſting membranes have not this ſympathetic connexion with the parts which they either cover or line, nor have the parts either covering the inveſting membrane, or lined by it, any ſympathizing affection with it in the adheſive ſtages of inflammation. Thus the peritoneum is both a lining and a covering, and ſo is the pleura. If the peritoneum which lines the cavity of the abdomen inflames, its inflammation does not affect the parietes of the abdomen; or if the peritoneum covering any of the viſcera is inflamed, it does not affect the viſcera. Thus the peritoneum ſhall be univerſally inflamed, as in the puerporal fever, yet the parietes of the abdomen and the proper coats of the inteſtines ſhall not be affected; on the other hand, if the parietes of the abdomen, or the proper coats of the inteſtines are inflamed, the peritoneum ſhall not be affected.

The ſame principle will lead to diſtinctions between an inflammation of the lungs and that of the pleura; but I ſuſpect that the reticular or connecting ſubſtance, which joins the air-cells of the lungs, has a greater ſympathetic affection with the air-cells, or reciprocally with each other, than the beforementioned parts; and this may ariſe from the thinneſs of the air-cells. And it is alſo upon the ſame principle that inflammation of the pia-mater is ſeldom continued into the ſubſtance of the brain, although the pia-mater may be in ſome degree conſidered as a continuation of the ſame veſſels.

Contiguity of parts does not communicate inflammation. Thus when an inteſtine is inflamed the inflammation is not communicated to the peritoneum, lining the abdomen, although in contact; but I have already obſerved it produces ſomewhat of a ſoreneſs, even to the external touch; but if continuity by adheſions takes place, then inflammation will be continued from the one into the other.

The ſecond cauſe of the limitation of inflammation is ſimple contact. I have already obſerved, that expoſure of internal ſurfaces becomes an immediate cauſe of inflammation; and when it extends further than the ſurface of expoſure, it is then by continued ſympathy only, and that a whole cavity, if wholly expoſed, will wholly acquire the inflammation; but we may now obſerve, that although a

cavity is opened and so far rendered imperfect, yet simple contact of its sides renders it perfect again, and sets bounds to the immediate cause.

To explain this further, we may observe that there is no such thing in an animal as empty space, exclusive of outlets or reservoirs, which cannot be reckoned internal or circumscribed cavities, for they are perfect by not being such. Every part of the body is either connected by a continuation of one part into that of another, or by simple contact.

This takes place equally, either in the common cellular membrane, or in the circumscribed cavities; for, if a wound is made either into the cellular membrane, or into a circumscribed cavity, we find that the surfaces of both, beyond the cut edges, are naturally and generally in contact with one another, for without this, union by the first intention would not take place, either in circumscribed cavities, or in the common cellular membrane. To explain this position, let me suppose a case.

If we make a wound into the cavity of the belly, and in a sound state of those parts, we shall find that every viscus is in contact with some other viscus, and that the whole inside of the peritoneum is in contact with the viscera in general; so that no space is unfilled while this contact of parts remains. If this wound is not allowed to heal by the first intention, still we shall find that no inflammation will take place, or extend further than the attachment of those parts to the cut edges; except what is owing to continued sympathy. If this was not the case, every part of the same cavity must inflame, because every part would be equally imperfect; for if this contact was removed, upon the receiving of the wound, or at any time afterwards, the whole cavity must inflame, because every part is equally under the same predicament with regard to exposure. The same thing would take place in the common cellular membrane, if those cells were not (in a natural state) in contact. Inflammation, in case of wounds, would as readily extend over the surface of each cell, as air does through the cavity of each cell when blown into. Now this simple and natural contact of natural parts, keeps off the inflammation beyond the cut edges of exposure; and inflammation only takes place at this part, to preserve this contact, as also to serve as a basis for the future operations. This, I apprehend is upon the principle of contiguous sympathy, two

ſurfaces being ſimply in contact, mutually agreeing not to inflame; or perhaps, more properly expreſſed, by being in contact there is a mutnal harmony which prevents their being excited to inflammation. This circumſtance is a reaſon why we ſhould not attempt to bring circumſcribed cavities to univerſal ſuppuration, by ſimply opening them, and allowing them to collapſe; for we may be pretty certain, that union only will take place at the expoſed edges of contacts which excludes the general cavity, and which is the reaſon why the operation for the radical cure in the hydrocele often fails. If, on the other hand, this natural contact of parts did not preſerve the whole beyond the cut edges, then we muſt allow, that the cavity is under the ſame predicament with the cut edges; and if the cut edges inflame, ſo muſt the whole.

In caſes of ſpontaneous inflammations of circumſcribed cavities, we find where this contact is completeſt, that the inflammation and its conſequences are the leaſt; for inſtance, in the abdomen, in the caſes of the peritoneal inflammations, the inflammation is the greateſt where the ſurfaces are not ſo well oppoſed to one another, viz. in the angle between any of the two viſcera.

This fact of ſimple contact being ſufficient to exclude the irritation for inflammation, was well illuſtrated in a woman who had the Cefarian operation performed upon her, where a wound of eight inches long was made into the cavity of the abdomen to extract the child. After the child was extracted, the wound could not be brought exactly together; therefore ſo far gave riſe to a peritoneal inflammation; but the belly collapſing, and falling on its contents, they all came in contact as before, and the woman living twenty-ſix hours, gave time for the inflammatory irritation to take place. After death it was found, that the inteſtines were united to the peritoneum, all round the wound for about half an inch in breadth, and the ſurface of the inteſtines which lay unattached and expoſed at the bottom of the wound were inflamed, while every other viſcus as well as the peritoneum, beyond the adheſions, were free from inflammation.

Ulceration does not ſeem to obey this law ſo much, and the reaſon is, that ulceration is a ſecond operation, and is preceded by inflammation, ſo that pus is brought equally through every part, if equally ſuſceptible of ulceration, which all parts are not, although not depending upon their

being similar or dissimilar. Thus a muscle or artery will not ulcerate so readily as cellular membrane; but if pus was formed on the inside of an artery, or in the centre of a muscle, they would ulcerate very readily, and the ulceration would not stop, or remain stationary, when it came to the cellular membrane, but would go on; if pus too be formed in a lymphatic gland, ulceration would go on in the parts between it and the external surface, as fast as it did in the gland, if not faster, because, inflammation would have gone before, and as it were assimilated the parts, and all from this cause, viz. being equally disposed to ulcerate. The cause of the spreading of inflammation is sympathetic; but, the cause of ulceration is immediate.

VI. OF INFLAMMATION—ITS STAGES.

I have given the most simple idea I can form of an injury done to a part, with the natural, immediate, and consequent means of restoration. I have also treated of cases where they become a little more complicated, requiring the aid of art as a substitute for the simplicity of the first. The action of the parts is not necessary in either of these, except that of the blood forming its vessels and other solid parts, and becoming of the nature of the parts in which it is extravasated. But I took notice that the violence done was often so great, or that restoration did not take place so readily, as in all cases to exclude irritation; we had, therefore, an action in such cases taking place in the parts called inflammation. That this action assisted in the restoration by producing an extravasation of the coagulating lymph, which became the second bond of union. I have also stated what may be called the natural tendency to inflammation, to serve as a kind of leading principle. We shall find that inflammation may arise from very different causes, and often without any apparent cause, and that its operations are far more extensive than simply the act of producing union in parts divided by violence; for it more commonly produces union in whole parts or in natural separations, such as the common cellular membrane, large circumscribed cavities, joints, etc. because such sur-

faces are not naturally disposed to unite, but only in consequence of some uncommon action being produced; and although these adhesions are unnatural, yet that tendency of the parts to admit of this union becomes a species of cure. It is in consequence of the parts taking on, in some degree, the same mode of action which divided parts do when brought in contact, that in such cases suppuration is precluded. As inflammation often arises from disease, its salutary purposes are in many instances not so evident, although they may finally take effect; as it likewise takes place in disease, or becomes the ultimate in disease where it did not begin it, as in the scrofula, cancer, etc, and some indolent tumors; on these accounts too its salutary purposes are sometimes not obvious. However, upon the whole, as inflammation is an action produced for the restoration of the most simple injury in sound parts, which goes beyond the power of union by the first intention, we must look upon it in such instances, as one of the most simple operations in nature, whatever it may be when arising from disease, or in diseased parts. Inflammation is to be considered only as a disturbed state of parts, which requires a new but salutary mode of action to restore them to that state wherein a natural mode of action alone is necessary: from such a view of the subject, therefore, inflammation in itself is not to be considered as a disease, but as a salutary operation, consequent either to some violence or some disease. But this same operation can and does vary; it is often carried much further even in sound parts, than to accomplish union, producing a very different effect, and forming a very different species of discharge from the former; instead of uniting and confining the parts, rather separating and exposing them, which process is called suppuration, and varies with circumstances. However, even this in sound parts leads to cure, although in another or secondary way; and in disease, where it can alter the diseased mode of action, it likewise leads to a cure; but where it cannot accomplish that salutary purpose, as in the cancer, scrofula, venereal disease, etc. it does mischief.

This operation of the body, termed inflammation, requires our greatest attention, for it is one of the most common and most extensive in its effects of any in the animal body; it is both very extensive in its causes, and it becomes itself the cause of many local effects, both salutary and diseased.

It has its different ſtages in which it produces more immediately its different effects, which are local; ſuch as adheſions, ſuppuration, and ulceration, and often death in the part inflamed, together with ſecondary complaints which are univerſal, as fever, nervous affections; and when in parts that cannot heal, or in conſtitutions which are too weak, the hectic fever, next diſſolution, or univerſal death. However, by its forming thoſe adheſions, it often precludes the neceſſity of ſuppuration; and alſo entirely prevents many local diſeaſes where probably ſuppuration would be the conſequence, if ſuch adheſions had not taken place, with all the train of conſequences of ſuppuration, ſuch as abſceſſes, fiſtulæ, diſeaſed bones, etc. which are prevented by it. It is alſo one of the modes of action in many ſpecific diſeaſes, and in morbid affections proceeding from poiſons.

Inflammation is not only occaſionally the cauſe of diſeaſes, but it is often a mode of cure, ſince it frequently produces a reſolution of indurated parts, by changing the diſeaſed action into a ſalutary one, if capable of reſolution.

By theſe extenſive powers inflammation becomes the firſt principle in ſurgery. In one point of view it may be conſidered as a diſeaſe in itſelf where it takes place without any viſible cauſe; and it may be looked upon as an increaſe of the miſchief, when it is a conſequence of ſome injury; but in either caſe it is a ſign of powers, and of neceſſary powers; for if a part under the influence of ſuch irritation as ſhould naturally excite inflammation, had either no powers or diſpoſition to exert them, the conſequences would be much worſe, for mortification would probably take place. I intend at preſent to conſider the moſt common cauſes and effects of inflammation, together with the end propoſed by nature, in producing it, and the uſe to which it can be applied in ſurgery.

It becomes therefore neceſſary, firſt to begin with deſcribing its moſt ſimple forms, together with its general effects, and then to particularize as I proceed.

Inflammation has ſeveral well marked local peculiarities by which it is diſtinguiſhed.

I ſhall call by the name of inflammation whatever produces the following local effects, viz. pain, ſwelling, and

redneſs, in a given time, and theſe dependent on or the effects of one immediate cauſe.

Inflammation appears capable of ariſing from three cauſes which may be called remote.

Firſt, from ſome accidental force applied to a part, making a wound or bruiſe which cannot recover itſelf, unleſs by inflammation. Such violence at leaſt is naturally capable of exciting it.

Secondly, from ſome irritation which does not deſtroy the texture of parts, but ſimply the natural actions, as many irritations, ſuch as preſſure, friction, heat, cold, bliſters, pungent applications, and often fevers of every kind.

Thirdly, From a particular diſpoſition in parts themſelves, as boils ariſing ſpontaneouſly without the conſtitution having been preconcerned, ſo little ſo, as to have given the idea that ſuch inflammations were healthy. Each of theſe will be of a kind peculiar to the conſtitution; but from whatever cauſe inflammation ariſes, it appears to be nearly the ſame in all, for in all it is an effect intended to bring about a reinſtatement of the parts nearly to their natural functions.

Inflammation may firſt be divided into two kinds as firſt principles, viz. the healthy and the unhealthy.

The healthy probably conſiſts only of one kind, not being diviſible but into its different ſtages, and is that which will always attend an healthy conſtitution or part, is rather to be conſidered as a reſtorative action than a diſeaſed one, and would rather appear to be an effect of a ſtimulus than an irritation. The unhealthy admits of vaſt variety, (diſeaſes being almoſt numberleſs) and is that which always attends an unhealthy conſtitution or part, and will be according to the kind of health in that conſtitution or part, but principally according to the conſtitution; however, many parts naturally have a tendency to run into inflammations of particular kinds. Moſt of theſe ariſing from the nature of the conſtitution, are, I conceive, in moſt caſes, if not in all, called, although erroneouſly, the eryſepelatus inflammation; which will be further taken notice of.

The ſimple act of inflammation cannot be called ſpecific, for it is an uniform or ſimple action in itſelf; but it may have peculiarities or ſpecific actions ſuperadded.

Inflammation is either ſingle or compound; it may be called ſingle when it has only one mode of action in the part inflamed, as in its firſt ſtages; compound, when at-

tended with another mode of action, or when it produces other effects.

Inflammation is capable of producing three different effects, viz. adhesion of the parts inflamed, suppuration in the parts, and ulceration of those parts; which I have called the adhesive, the suppurative, and the ulcerative inflammation; the last or ulcerative, is properly speaking, only a secondary effect of inflammation, not being performed by the same vessels; however it is possible it may keep up inflammation, as it always keeps up a species of violence, viz. a destruction of the parts.

The two first do not take place in the same vessels, at the same time, but succeed one another, although all the three effects may exist at the same time in the different parts of the same inflammation.

I have placed the adhesive first in order, although it is not always so, for with the respect to the priority of those three actions of inflammation, it depends principally upon the nature of the parts, together with the degrees of violence of the inflammation.

To explain this more fully, we shall first divide the body, respecting inflammation, into two parts, viz. the cellular membrane, or the body in general, together with the circumscribed cavities as belonging to the first; and then all the outlets of the body, as the second. We shall treat of each according to the nature of the parts, and of the inflammation joined, and observe their effects, which will show that the common effects of one, as to priority, may be changed into those of the others and become second or third, according to the nature of the parts, the inflammation, and its degree of violence.

We may observe that inflamation, but more especially the supperative, in the first order of parts, more readily takes place nearer to the surface of the body than in parts more deeply seated, and as a proof of this observation, it has been formerly observed that tumors, and even extraneous bodies, will make their way from some deeper-seated part to the skin, but no inflammation shall take place till they arrive near the skin; but this circumstance will be more fully described when I treat on suppuration.

It does not seem necessary that both surfaces which are to be united should be in a state of inflamation for the purpose of effecting an union; it appears only necessary that one should be in such a state, which is to furnish the ma-

terials, viz. to throw out the coagulating lymph, and the oppoſite uninflamed ſurface ſhould be in a ſtate of inflammation, to admit of union; for I juſt obſerved, that extravaſated blood produces an union without inflammation; and we often find adheſions of parts which can hardly be called inflamed.

Thus a truſs applied to a rupture will produce adheſions as has been obſerved, although it may ſit very eaſily.

In deſcribing inflammation it will be found that the principal theory of inflammation will be introduced in the adheſive ſtages; for in the firſt ſtated parts it appears only preparatory to the ſuppurative either in preventing or promoting it.

When inflammation takes place in the firſt order of parts, it is commonly the adheſive, but it will be according to circumſtances whether the ſuppurative or the ulcerative follows firſt. That either the one or the other ſhould follow, ſeems to riſe in many caſes from an increaſe of the inflammation; but it ſometimes happens that the ſuppurative takes place almoſt immediately, and probably from two cauſes; the firſt is, the intenſity of the inflammation, its exceeding the adheſive almoſt immediately; the ſecond, an inflammation of a different kind, where the adheſive makes no part of the inflammation, and ſuppuration takes place in the firſt inſtance. I ſuſpect that the eryſepelatous inflammation has very little of the adheſive in its nature, and therefore probably theſe inflammations are in ſome degree of this nature, and go into ſuppuration without adheſions. In ſome caſes ulcerations muſt take place prior to ſuppuration, as when an inflammation happens on a ſurface, viz. the ſkin, as for inſtance, in a chancre, and with ſuch violence as is neceſſary for ſuppuration to take place, then ulceration muſt begin firſt, ſo as to expoſe internal ſurfaces for ſuppuration; but in the parts of the ſecond order, viz. internal canals or duct, it is the ſuppurative inflammation which moſt readily takes place firſt; but if carried further the adheſive follows, as will be more fully explained hereafter. When it is an inflammation of the firſt order of parts, the ſuppurative ſucceeds the adheſive, and the ulcerative may be ſaid to be an action ſuperadded to the ſuppurative, ariſing out of effects produced by the firſt, now becoming new cauſes, the ſuppurative naturally taking place in the time of the firſt, and the ulcerative in conſequence of the ſuppurative, which has called forth the ac-

tion of another syſtem of veſſels, the abſorbents; all of which may be reckoned as three different modes of action ariſing from the firſt irritation or cauſe.

The adheſive, as alſo the ſuppurative inflammation, either in the firſt or ſecond orders of parts, with their varieties, may have a principle ſuperadded, which does not in the leaſt alter their inflammatory mode of action, which ſtill continues to go on. This principle is ſome ſpecific diſpoſition, from ſcrophula, or poiſons, as the venereal, ſmall-pox, etc.

Theſe three different modes of action, viz. the adheſive, the ſupperative, and the ulcerative, when carried on perfectly, are generally the effects of a good conſtitution, ſeldom attending the unhealthy; they are what I would call common inflammation.

I have already obſerved that common inflammation either takes place in parts that conſtitute the largeſt part of an animal, which are all the circumſcribed cavities, all the cellular membrane, and the ſubſtance of every part, the two laſt of which are the moſt univerſal; or upon internal canals or outlets, which are, in common, only excretory ducts.

That whatever has a tendency to diſcharge any extraneous matter, whether already exiſting, as matter already formed, or a ball lodged, etc. or only preparatory to its formation ſuch as inflammation that has a diſpoſition to ſuppurate, the inflammation is always greateſt and extends fartheſt on that ſide next to the ſkin; for inſtance, ſuppoſe a man ſhot in the thigh, the ball paſſes through to within an inch or two of the oppoſite ſide; the ball has not deadened any part for an inch or two of the laſt part of its paſſage ſo as to allow this part to unite, we ſhall find if that ball excites inflammation, it will not be along its paſſage where we ſhould (without knowing the principle) have moſtly expected it, but the inflammation will commence on that ſide next to the oppoſite ſkin that has not in the leaſt been hurt. If a ball paſſes quite through, a piece of cloth is carried in, and lies in the middle between the two orifices; if the paſſage is pretty ſuperficial, ſay only an inch diſtant from the ſkin where the cloth lies, but which is two or three inches from either orifice, we ſhall find that the inflammation, for its exit will not lead to either orifice, but directly acroſs to the ſkin.

As the adhesive inflammation precedes the suppurative in every part of the body, except the outlets, as was observed, and the suppurative commonly proceeds the ulcerative, excepting on an external surface, the propriety of following, likewise, this order of nature in treating of them will appear evident, especially as each succeeding inflammation is in some measure illustrated by that which has gone before.

VII. OF THE DIEFERENT DEGREES, AND DIFFERENT KINDS OF INFLAMMATION.

Inflammation will in general be in proportion to the exciting cause, (in which may be included the mischief done), the constitution and the nature of the part; in all which, as there is great variety, so must there be in the inflammations. The degrees of inflammation will be more in the adhesive than in the suppurative, for the adhesive may have all the degrees of violence between the most slight inflammation and suppurations; but the suppurative is a more fixed or determined quantity, for when got to a certain point, it takes a new action, and inflammation ceases; however, we have not always inflammation producing suppuration when it has arrived to a certain degree of violence, for in some it often goes beyond that point which would produce it in others, and in such cases there is no disposition for suppuration, and it seems to become stationary, for neither has it any disposition for resolution.

Spontaneous inflammations which are to suppurate, are more violent than those inflammations arising in consequence of an operation or accident, which also must produce suppuration; and those inflammations from either operations or accidents, if they have not produced death in the part operated upon, are more violent, and of greater extent than those where death in the part has been produced.

The inflammation of a boil or abscess is more violent, and commonly more extensive than that in consequence of a cut, or even an amputation of a leg. The inflammation in consequence of a cut or amputation of a leg, will be more violent than that from a gun-shot wound, or from the

application of a cauſtic, which produces death in the part, and even although more parts have been deſtroyed by theſe means; neither do ſpecific diſeaſes, except the gout, produce ſo violent inflammation, nor are they commonnly ſo painful as what I have called the common inflammation.

It may appear not to be an eaſy matter to account for all thoſe differences; however it is poſſible that in the ſpontaneous inflammation there is more occaſion for inflammation than ſuppuration; the inflammation being the only action which is neceſſary to produce the ultimate effect, as for inſtance, in the gout; in this diſeaſe the inflammation is the only thing neceſſary for its action, and the inflammation runs much higher than many others do which produce ſuppuration*.

The ſpontaneous inflammation ariſes often from diſeaſe, which probably makes the parts more ſuſceptible of inflammation.

When inflammation ariſes from the irritation of death in a part, let the cauſe of that effect be what it will, whether mechanical, as in bruiſes, gun-ſhot wounds, etc. or by chemical means, as cauſtic, etc. the inflammation is late in coming on, and in compariſon with the others gentle when come on.

However, in many bruiſes, even where the death of parts has taken place, we have inflammation quick and violent, but then the living parts have alſo ſuffered, and have ſuffered much more than if ſimply wounded.

In many bruiſes we alſo have inflammations quick and violent, even where death has been produced in a part; but then death does not take place in all the hurt parts, as in many gun-ſhot wounds, ſuch as thoſe attended with fractured bones, in which the ſurrounding parts were only hurt ſo far as to bring on irritation and not death.

If cauſtics do not act with vigour, they will irritate ſo as to bring on the inflammation ſooner than if they had killed the part quickly.

* It is a curious circumſtance in the gout, that although it is attended with all the common effects of the adheſive inflammation, as conſiderable ſwelling, etc. which ſwelling muſt ariſe from extravaſation of the coagulating lymph; yet, adheſions do not ſeem to be the intention, for none are produced; the lymph is in general taken up, and chalk-ſtone or tophaceous matter put in its place.

Irritating ſubſtances, when of no ſpecific kind, produce inflammation ſooner than other viſible cauſes of inflammation. If of a ſpecific kind, then the time, ſort, and violence, will be according to that kind.

But irritating applications muſt be continued for ſome time to produce violent inflammation.

Theſe differences are eaſily accounted for; quick death does not irritate the part killed, and the contiguous living part, not being itſelf hurt, is only irritated to get rid of the dead part.

A wound is a quick irritation of a living part, ſo that it inflames more readily, and more violently, according to the quantity of irritation; but that cannot be of long ſtanding, as nature ſets about procuring relief. But when irritating ſubſtances are applied, the part inflames quickly, according to their power of irritation; and if they are continued, nature is not allowed to relieve herſelf, but is conſtantly teazed, by which means the inflammation becomes alſo violent.

I need hardly mention, that fever is often the cauſe of local inflammation. We ſee this happen every day.

Theſe cauſes, and of courſe the inflammation, are of two kinds, one which may be called accidental, as inflammation ariſing in conſequence of common fever; the others are more determined, depending upon the ſpecies of a fever, which may be called ſpecific, as the ſmall-pox, chicken-pox, etc. Theſe inflammations in conſequence of fever, are commonly ſuppoſed to be critical; but I very much doubt the truth of this opinion. The ſmall-pox and chicken-pox are, perhaps, the ſtrongeſt inſtances of an appearance in proof of this opinion; and, perhaps, the meaſles, as a critical inflammation, might be produced as another; but, I believe, that it is peculiar to theſe diſeaſes to form inflammation and ſores. We muſt allow, however, it is not abſolutely neceſſary, even in them, that abſceſſes ſhould be formed, viz. the pock to leſſen or carry off the fever. For the ſpecific fever in them cannot exiſt beyond a certain time, even although no eruption appears.

But I think that in the caſes of the ſmall-pox, chicken-pox, and the meaſles, thoſe diſeaſes often prove the contrary to that which is ſuppoſed to be the caſe; for we have large abſceſſes as often formed after thoſe diſeaſes as after any other, which are commonly ſuppoſed to be the ſettling

of the fever in this part, but which are equally accidental with thoſe from common fever, and therefore we cannot ſuppoſe that thoſe abſceſſes are critical in ſuch diſeaſes, becauſe they are either common abſceſſes, or ſcrophulous; for no one diſeaſe can have two diſtinct and different critical inflammations. In further confirmation of my opinion, thoſe inflammations are found to be not in the leaſt of the nature of the diſeaſe which produces them, ſo little ſo in moſt caſes, as to be truly ſpecific of another kind, viz. the ſcrophulous. Now we certainly find it difficult to conceive one univerſal ſpecific diſeaſe, as the ſmall-pox, etc. producing a local one of another ſpecific diſpoſition to cure the firſt, or terminating in another diſeaſe, whoſe mode of action is totally different; and the more ſo when we ſee that the ſame local diſeaſes can and do ariſe from every kind of fever. To aſcertain this fact, therefore, we are to look out for that diſpoſition, or that mode of action common to all fevers which are capable of producing this effect, with the diſpoſition of the conſtitution, or of the part at the time, and we ſhall find that this kind of inflammation depends upon the conſtitution and part at the time, and not upon any peculiarity in the fever, as is alſo the caſe with the ſmall-pox eruptions, viz. they partake of the conſtitution.

This common principle in fever, of producing local inflammation, is the ſimple fever itſelf, abſtracted from every peculiarity. A fever in all caſes or of all kinds, is a diſturbed action, like inflammation itſelf, which may be joined with any ſpecific mode of action, and this diſturbed action will always be according to the conſtitution, even when joined with any ſpecific quality. The inflammatory fever is, perhaps, the moſt ſimple, becauſe it is a ſimple fever on a conſtitution having no peculiarity of diſpoſition. The putrid fever (as it is called) is perhaps no more than the ſame fever upon a conſtitution that has a peculiarity of action under that diſturbance, and therefore it proceeds according to that peculiarity.

This is well illuſtrated in ſpecific diſeaſes; for inſtance, in the ſmall-pox. The ſmall-pox produces a fever, viz. a diſturbed action, joined with the ſpecific, and although this action is produced by the ſame poiſon in two different perſons, yet the one ſhall be the true inflammatory, and the other the putrid, the eryſepelatous, etc. Now the ſame

poiſon can have but one mode of irritating, abſtracted from its poiſonous quality, and this one mode produces fever; and it alſo can have but one mode of irritating in reſpect of its poiſonous quality, but that fever abſtracted from its poiſonous quality will be according to the nature of the conſtitution at the time, the poiſon being capable of producing nothing but a fever joined with its ſpecific poiſon, and that ſpecific quality takes place equally on every kind of conſtitution, the poiſon itſelf having no power of affecting the conſtitution in one perſon differently from that of another, it can only act in a greater or leſs degree, according to the ſuſceptibility of the perſon for ſuch irritation.

Now ſince every fever, whether common or ſpecific, is equally capable of producing local inflammation, which may be carried the length of ſuppuration; and as it cannot with any degree of reaſon be called critical in ſpecific fevers, we have no reaſon for ſuppoſing that thoſe ſuppurations are critical in the common fever, or in thoſe fevers, which are of no ſpecific kind.

It was a leading doctrine of Boerhaave, that inflammation conſiſted in an obſtruction of the minute veſſels, in conſequence of too great a ſpiſſitude of the fluids, and his practice conſiſted in ſeeking for attenuants; but this theory ſeems to be almoſt entirely exploded.

This was certainly too confined an idea of all the cauſes of inflammation, and reduced all inflammations to one ſpecies. The only diſtinction between inflammations, muſt have ariſen from the nature of the obſtruction, if there could be any; but this could never account for the action of many ſpecific diſeaſes and poiſons.

It was alſo too mechanical. If they had ſaid that any obſtruction to the natural actions of a part which could ſtop the blood's motion in it, became a cauſe of inflammation, they would not have been ſo materially wrong as to a poſſible cauſe of inflammation.

It has been as much laboured on the other hand, to ſhew that the cauſe cannot on any occaſion be obſtruction in the blood's motion through the ſmall veſſels; but I will venture to ſay, that any cauſe which can obſtruct the motion of the blood, for a given time, will become the cauſe of inflammation, for either the cauſe of the obſtruction itſelf or the blood being retained in the ſmaller veſſels for a certain time, will either irritate or unite the parts, or where

it irritates will throw the veſſels into ſuch actions as naturally ariſe out of an extraneous irritating cauſe, but not an increaſed motion of the blood behind, to drive on the obſtructed blood through theſe veſſels, as has been ſuppoſed. It will excite that action which in the end produces ſuppuration, in order to get rid of the extraneous matter, which was the cauſe of the obſtruction; ſuch as preſſure on external parts, or the obſtructing matter itſelf, which is to be reckoned extraneous. But though pure inflammation is rather an effort of nature than a diſeaſe, yet it always implies diſeaſe or diſturbance, in as much as there muſt be a previous morbid or diſturbed ſtate to make ſuch effort neceſſary.

All inflammations attended with diſeaſe have ſome ſpecific quality which ſimple inflammation has not; and in ſuch caſes it is the ſpecific quality which is the diſeaſe, and not the inflammation; for ſuch conſtitutions or parts as are capable of falling into the true adheſive and ſuppurative inflammation, are to be looked upon as the moſt healthy, and the freeſt from diſeaſes of all kinds. Indeed, even where there is a ſpecific quality, it often can hardly be called diſeaſe; for in the ſmall-pox, where the diſorder goes through its different operations well, it is exactly ſimilar to common healthy inflammation; for if ſuch an irritation as above deſcribed were to attack a conſtitution or parts, in another ſtate than that of health, we ſhould then not have either the adheſive, or ſuppurative inflammation taking place, but moſt probably ſome other, ſuch as the eryſepelatous or ſcrophulous, according to the nature of the conſtitution or parts at the time.

This ſtate of health in a conſtitution is ſo remarkable, that we ſee in the time of the ſymptomatic fever, when nature would ſeem to be univerſally diſturbed, a kindly or benign inflammation going on, and kindly ſuppuration; which ſhews that this fever has no ſpecific tendency to wrong action, the conſtitution being only diſturbed by ſympathizing with a local injury, but not capable of giving or reflecting back upon the part inflamed, a diſeaſed diſpoſition or action.

And this is ſo remarkable, that ſuch inflammations as ſeem to affect the conſtitution by ſympathy only, which is commonly either from extent, quantity, or the ſeat of it being a part eſſential to or connected with parts belonging

to life, go on as kindly as they do in a ſmall inflammation, as a boil, which does not affect the conſtitution in the leaſt. Indeed fever is a good ſymptom when equal to the injury and of the ſame kind with the local affection, when that kind is good.

Let us take an amputation of a leg as an example, which produces ſomething more than a diſturbed conſtitution, for there is a great loſs of a ſubſtance to that conſtitution, which, abſtracted from the violence, would probably produce conſiderable effects till the conſtitution became accuſtomed to the loſs; but even with all this loſs we often find that a healthy inflammation ſhall come upon the ſtump, and a kindly ſuppuration take place while the ſymptomatic fever laſts; in many caſes alſo it ſtill keeps its ground even when affected by many ſpecific irritations which are foreign to it; and nearly in the ſame manner as when affected by a common irritation, which will only rouſe that conſtitution into action, but not alter it, having only the ſpecific difference added, ſo that the parts will go readily through the adheſive or ſuppurative inflammation; the ſpecific being only an attendant on this healthy action; this we ſee plainly to be the caſe in the healthy ſmall-pox, and the lues venerea in its firſt ſtages. But on the contrary, if the conſtitution is ſuch at the time as would readily fall into an unhealthy inflammation, from common irritation or accidental violence, then it will alſo fall into that ſtate, when irritated by a ſpecific irritation foreign to the conſtitution, ſuch as the ſmall-pox, which in this caſe will run into the confluent kind.

There are many conſtitutions which have a tendency to ſpecific diſeaſes, that when injured by fever, or any conſtitutional complaint, readily produce the ſpecific inflammation in ſuch parts of the body as have the greateſt ſuſceptibility for any ſpecific action; or if ſuch parts are affected by any local violence, the parts affected will go through the healthy adheſive inflammation, nor will they enter into the healthy ſuppurative inflammation, but will fall into the ſpecific inflammation peculiar to the habit; ſuch is the caſe with an eryſepelatous habit. Or if a ſpecific inflammation has already taken place, any violence done to it, when already begun, will increaſe that diſpoſition, and action, which we plainly ſee to be the caſe with the ſcrophula; becauſe this diſeaſe can and often does ariſe from ſuch a cauſe alone. Beſides the conſtitution producing ſuch ef-

fects, there are many parts of the body have a greater tendency to ſome ſpecific diſeaſe than the conſtitution in general; which particular parts will fall into theſe ſpecific inflammations more readily than others, either upon the conſtitution being affected, or a violence committed upon themſelves; for inſtance, many parts of the body have a greater tendency to fall into the ſcrophula than others, and theſe will fall into that mode of action when injured, either by means of the conſtitution, or from accident; except the conſtitutional complaint is ſuch as to be a ſpecific for the ſcrophula, which I can eaſily conceive it may; in the cancer alſo, if the diſeaſe has previouſly taken place, then the tendency of an injury is to exaſperate and increaſe it.

But there are ſpecific irritations which do not affect either the part or the conſtitution, as a common irritation, but affect them in a way peculiar to the irritation, altering at the ſame time both the parts affected and the conſtitution, from an healthy ſtate to an unhealthy one of its own kind.

This ſeems to be the caſe with the plague, perhaps with the putrid and jail-diſtempers in a leſs degree; for whatever be the kind of conſtitution which they attack, they always reduce that conſtitution to their own kind; it is not a healthy operation going on, and the ſpecific ſuperadded, as in the healthy ſmall-pox etc. However, even the plague has its degrees of power over a conſtitution, ſome being much more eaſily, and of courſe more violently, affected than others.

This change in theſe caſes, eſpecially in the firſt, is often ſo great, that the conſtitution hardly ever recovers it, ſo that the patient dies; which we have obſerved above, is not the caſe with many other ſpecific diſeaſes or poiſons, as the ſmall-pox, etc. for this diſeaſe makes no change in the conſtitution peculiar to itſelf.

From what has been ſaid, it muſt appear, that the irritations which are capable of producing thoſe inflammations may be either ſimple, as the adheſive, or producing with it other modes of action, as either ſuppuration or ulceration; and alſo either of the above modes of action may be joined with ſome of the ſpecific actions.

Hence we may conclude, that irritations of whatever kind, either produce an inflammation peculiar to the conſtitution, or the nature of the parts; or, according to the irritating cauſe, as in the plague; and where it is accord-

ing to the conſtitution, that many ſpecific irritations may be added, without altering the nature of the inflammation itſelf, and that they only determine its ſituation, extent, duration, etc. according to the ſpecific diſpoſition added, provided the conſtitution be healthy; but if the conſtitution be unhealthy, whether affected with eryſepelas, putrid fever, or plague, and the ſpecific diſeaſe is ſuperadded, it will be a mixture of both, that is, it will be a ſpecific inflammation, ſet down upon a conſtitution of a peculiar kind, which partakes of both, and thoſe ſpecific properties will not be ſo diſtinct, or ſo well formed, as when they appear in a ſound conſtitution.

If the conſtitution has a ſuſceptibility to be putrid, and the ſmall-pox attacks it, the inflammation will be the ſmall-pox joined with the putrid mode of action of the conſtitution, which will affect the mode of action peculiar to the ſmall-pox, and deſtroy the ſpecific difference of the inflammation belonging to the ſmall pox, the puſtules will ſpread, not ſuppurate, and look livid, according to the putrid diſpoſition.

Theſe conſtant effects, peculiar to the conſtitution, may be changed from one to the other, juſt as the conſtitution changes, for the ſmall pox may begin upon a healthy conſtitution, in which they will be diſtinct or circumſcribed; but if the conſtitution becomes diſeaſed, they will ſpread; and if the conſtitution takes a healthy turn again, they will begin to contract to their ſpecific diſtance again*.

* The knowledge of theſe facts, is of great ſervice in the cure of many ſpecific diſeaſes; for whatever the ſpecific diſeaſe may be, we are always to treat the patient in one reſpect according to the general nature of the inflammation; and if we have a ſpecific remedy, we are alſo to join that with the other; but if we have not a ſpecific remedy, we are then only to take up the diſeaſe according to the conſtitution.

Let us illuſtrate the foregoing propoſitions by example. The firſt caſe is explained by the venereal diſeaſe in the form of chancre; the venereal matter produces an inflammation and ulceration according to the nature of the ſpecific diſeaſe, and the conſtitution; if the conſtitution is perfectly healthy, then the effects are the ſuppurative and ſpecific diſeaſe joined; the limits of both are confined according to the conſtitution and the nature of the ſpecific diſeaſe. For the inflammation and ulceration never extend beyond the ſpecific affection: but if the conſtitution is ſuch as readily to fall into the eryſepelatous, then it becomes

Many people are much more ſuſceptible of inflammation than others, even of the common kind, and thoſe probably may be reckoned ſimply irritable. In ſuch it is more violent, and in ſuch it is more apt to ſpread, the ſurrounding parts being ready to act or ſympathize with an action to what they are prone; continued ſympathy more readily takes place in ſuch caſes*; but this is not univerſal, for we find many very conſiderable inflammations confined to the part irritated, and in ſuch inſtances continued ſympathy is not great, only the part irritated takes up the action violently.

The term or idea of inflammation may be too general, yet it is probable that it may form a genus, in which there is a number of ſpecies, or it may be more confined in its claſſification, and be reckoned a ſpecies containing ſeveral varieties. Theſe are, however, ſo connected among them-

the eryſepelatous and ſpecific joined; and although the extent of the ſpecific affection is limited, that of the eryſepelatous is not; the conſequence of which is, that it ſpreads over the whole prepuce and often the whole ſkin of the penis.

In this diſeaſe, under ſuch circumſtances, we are led to the method of cure; for although we have a medicine for the venereal inflammation, yet bark is to be given for the eryſepelatous, the quantity to be given is according to the predominancy of the one or the other. The effects of this practice are very ſtriking; for as the eryſepelatous inflammation leſſens it becomes more confined in its limits, and, as it were, drawn into the original point; and when it becomes truly ſuppurative, and venereal, its limits then are brought within the ſpecific diſtance.

The ſecond caſe is explained by the ſmall-pox. The various matter in healthy conſtitutions produces the ſuppurative and ſpecific inflammations, the ſpecific is limited, and directs the ſuppurative; but if the eryſepelatous comes on, the ſuppurative ceaſes it then ſpreads along the ſurface, uniting inflammation with inflammation, and producing the confluent ſmall-pox.

We have no ſpecific remedy for the ſmall pox, nor can we readily have any for a diſeaſe which cures itſelf; our buſineſs then is to cure the eryſepelatous, if poſſible, and leave the conſtitution to cure the ſpecific.

* This one might illuſtrate by a piece of paper being either dry or damp; if dry, then ink will not ſpread, it will be confined to its point, but if damp, it will ſpread being attracted by the ſurrounding damp to which it has an affinity.

ſelves, that we cannot juſtly underſtand any one of the ſpecies or varieties without forming ſome idea of the whole, by which means, when treating of any one, we can better contraſt it with the others, which gives us a clearer idea both of the one we are treating of, and of the whole. So far as it appears to be neceſſary to take notice of the different inflammations, as illuſtrative, they may be comprehended in five diviſions: although, I muſt own that if we take in all the ſpecific diſeaſes which produce inflammation, ſuch as the venereal diſeaſe in its different forms, the gout, etc. they may be without number; however, many of them produce very much the ſame appearance and effect with thoſe which are of no ſpecific kind. The ſpecific is of no particular kind, but only the cauſe, and the ſpecific effect is a ſomething ſuperadded. The preſent, viz. the adheſive, with its different effects, as ſuppuration, I ſhall conſider as one. The œdematous, which comes neareſt to the adheſive, forms a ſecond diviſion. The eryſepelatous, the carbuncle, and that which leads immediately to mortification, form a third. There is another inflammation very like chilblains, which is not very lively and often in blotches, ſome the breadth of a ſhilling, others of the breadth of half a crown, and even broader, etc. This inflammation certainly ariſes from irritable debility; the blotches look more of a copper-colour, and the ſkin over them is often diſeaſed. All, except the firſt, have a kind of affinity to each other; although I think the œdematous has the leaſt affinity to the three laſt, and many vary ſo as to make it difficult to ſay to which ſpecies the varieties belong. There are a great many other inflammations, but which ariſe from ſome ſpecific cauſe, as the gout, ſcrophula, etc. or poiſons; but as theſe do not explain, or illuſtrate by contraſt, the adheſive or ſuppurative inflammation, I ſhall not give the outlines of them here, except juſt to mention the particulars of the gout, as an inflammation.

The action of the complete gout, has all the characters (while it laſts) of the true inflammation, and which may be called the inflammatory action of the gout; but it has many ſingularities attending it, which attend no other inflammation, and which of courſe become ſome of its ſpecific characters.

The inflammation of the gout is very different from the adheſives and ſuppurative in its ſenſation. It ſeldom throbs;

it is a pricking, cutting, and darting pain; beſides which, there is a pain that feels as if the inflamed parts were all moving, and in that motion there was pain; therefore the action, which is the cauſe of the pain, muſt be very different, and is moſt probably from the action of the veſſels, not from their diſtention, as in the ſuppurative inflammation.

It probably comes on more quickly than any other. Its violence is probably greater. In duration it is probably the moſt uncertain; and its going off is quicker than of any other inflammation. Its ſhifting from one part of the body to another, is probably in ſome degree peculiar to itſelf; and it leaves parts in a ſtate which no other inflammation does. Without entering further into the nature of this diſeaſe than ſaying it is an act of the conſtitution, I ſhall deſcribe ſome of its viſible effects, which of courſe can only be obſerved when it falls on an external part, and when it does, it is moſt commonly on an extremity, more eſpecially on the lower, but ſometimes on the upper, and ſtill more commonly on the extreme parts of the extremity in either the upper or the lower; and its principal ſeat in the extremity is a joint. When it falls on internal parts, it is moſt commonly the ſtomach, which is only ſuppoſed by its effects or ſymptoms; from its being tranſferred, and from the mode of relief. It attacks alſo the brain, producing delirium, giddineſs, the loſs of the natural and accuſtomed feel of the body, inceſſant ſleepineſs, etc, which is alſo known by the above circumſtances. When it falls on other parts, either externally or internally, it is not ſo much determined on what part, it is moſt apt to fall. It ſometimes falls either on the lungs or muſcles of reſpiration, the throat, teſticles, urethra, producing a diſcharge, etc. on the anus, forming piles; which can only be known to be gout by collateral circumſtances.

Why the extremities, the ſtomach, and brain, ſhould be ſimilar in ſuſceptibility to take the gouty action from the conſtitution, is not eaſily accounted for. I ſhould be inclined to ſuppoſe that its effects on the ſtomach or brain are not ſimilar to thoſe on the extremity, or probably it does not advance ſo far in its effects there, becauſe in that caſe it would certainly kill. Its effects on the extremities are, I believe, always more or leſs an inflammation, or at leaſt it has the common viſible or ſenſible effects of inflammation.

It is moſt probably what may be called a true ſpecific inflammation, for it produces the ſame immediate effects in every conſtitution, therefore does not produce an inflammation according to the conſtitution, having the ſpecific action added, ſimilar to poiſons, but from its nature it produces nearly the ſame effects in every conſtitution. I have ſeen conſtitutions whoſe extremities were attacked with the œdematous inflammation, attended with a purpliſh appearance; violent pain in ſuch caſes comes on, which create, ſome apprehenſions of a tendency to mortification; upon looking at the part, we may ſuſpect ſuppuration, the inflammation to appearance being of that kind; but may think it odd that ſuch healthy inflammation and ſuppuration ſhould take place in the midſt of inflammation of ſo contrary a kind, but ſhall find no ſuppuration; the inflammation ſhall continue its period and then leave the extremities in a much better ſtate than it found them. Although the inflammatory action of the gout is attended with great pain, yet I think it is not ſo tender as the true inflammation is; a part may be violently inflamed, and yet it may be handled or ſqueezed, the nerves are not in ſuch a ſtate of irritation, its conſequent effects are very different from that of the true inflammation, for inſtead of entire reſolution, it gives the diſpoſition to the inflamed parts to fill the joint or whatever parts have been affected, as for inſtance, the cellular membrane with chalk.

However, chalk is not neceſſarily an effect of the gouty inflammation; for in a gouty habit we have chalk formed where there never had been any gouty inflammation, yet it is ſingular it ſhould attack ſuch diſſimilar parts as the ſkin, ligaments, etc. It has not only no tendency to ſuppuration, as an immediate effect of inflammation, but it leaves the parts in a ſtate not eaſily excited to inflammation; the chalk ſhall remain for years without producing inflammation, and ſeldom produces it at all, but from quantity; and when the interior ſurfaces are expoſed, they hardly take on common inflammation and ſuppuration, healing more readily than a ſore of the ſame magnitude from any other cauſe; even a joint ſhall be expoſed, yet common inflammation ſhall not come on, nor ſhall it ſuppurate, only a watery fluid ſhall come out, bringing with it the chalk occaſionally, and it ſhall heal up kindly. It is probable that the gout is not always an act of the conſtitution, but that parts may be ſo ſuſceptible, or rather diſpoſed for this ac-

tion, that they may immediately run into it when deranged: if this notion be well founded, then it may be a queſtion, whether this local affection relieves the conſtitution for the time from any ſuſceptibility for ſuch an action?

It may be diſputed, whether the following are all inflammations or not. They often riſe from the ſame cauſes; accident, for inſtance, produces all of them. They have certainly many characters in common, although not always the ſame reſult. The veſſels becoming inlarged, there is an extravaſation, pain, and a ſeparation of the cuticle, but ſeldom a formation of matter, although there ſometimes is, which happens when they have at firſt more of the adheſive ſtate; and there is a circumſtance which I think is common to them, namely, a red ſtreak paſſing from the inflamed part, generally towards the trunk, although not always in this direction. In common language they are called eryſepelatous, although very different; the eryſepelatous being one of the beſt marked inflammations of any. I do not mean to treat of theſe but in a general way, not even when conſidering the method of cure. It is probable there is no ſpecific diſtinction between any of theſe inflammations but what ariſes from the conſtitution or the parts, for we find them all proceeding from what may be called the ſame accidental cauſe, which therefore cannot produce any thing ſpecific; the diſtinctions in the mode of action of the inflamed parts being occaſioned by a peculiarity in the conſtitution, or the nature of the part itſelf, but probably in the conſtitution. It has been ſuppoſed that the different ſpecies or varieties of inflammation ariſe from the difference in the nature of the part inflamed; but this is certainly not the caſe; for if it was, we ſhould ſoon be made acquainted with all the different inflammations in the ſame perſon, at the ſame time, and even in the ſame wound; for inſtance, in an amputation of a leg, where we cut through ſkin, cellular membrane, muſcle, tendon, perioſteum, bone, and marrow, the ſkin ſhould give us the inflammation of its kind, the cellular membrane of its kind, the muſcles of theirs, the tendons of theirs, the perioſteum, bone, marrow, etc. of theirs; but we find it is the ſame inflammation in them all; it is the adheſive in them all if the parts are brought together; it is the ſuppurative if parts are expoſed. I ſhall at preſent only take no-

tice of the four laſt, as I mean to treat more fully of the firſt, which cannot be ſo completely underſtood without ſeeing the diſtinctions.

What I would call the œdematous inflammation, is when the extravaſated fluid is water; it has very much the appearance of the adheſive, and probably come the neareſt to it of any, being of a ſcarlet colour; but much more diffuſed. The fluid extravaſated, being principally the ſerum, renders the ſwelling more diffuſed than even the inflammation itſelf; it is very painful, or rather ſore, but there is not ſo much of the throbbing ſenſation as in the adheſive inflammation; it appears to be only on the ſurface, but moſt probably goes much deeper; for in ſuch caſes the extravaſated fluid is in too large quantity to be furniſhed by the cells of the cutis alone; but in this we have not the ſame guide as in the adheſive, viz. the ſwelling and inflammation correſponding with each other. The difference between this inflammation and the adheſive, ariſes, I conceive, from the principle of inflammation acting upon a dropſical diſpoſition, which is always attended with weakneſs; whereas a greater degree of ſtrength would have produced the adheſive inflammation under the ſame cauſe, or irritation; and what makes me conceive this, is, that in many caſes of anaſarcous legs we have exactly this inflammation come on from diſtention, which adds to the extravaſation of the ſerum, as well as in moſt caſes of ſcarifications of œdematous parts to evacuate the water. When inflammation takes place it is much more laſting than the adheſive; and, I believe, ſeldom, or ever produces ſuppuration; but if it ſhould run into this ſtage, it is more general, and the whole cellular membrane in the interſtices of parts is apt to mortify and ſlough, producing very extenſive abſceſſes, which are not circumſcribed.

The eryſepelatous inflammation is very peculiar; and moſt inflammations that are not of the true adheſive and ſuppurative kinds are called ſo, although probably they do not in the leaſt belong to it; and this may ariſe more from the want of terms, than the want of diſcrimination. This inflammation often ariſes ſpontaneouſly, or in conſequence of a low or debilitating fever. It often ariſes from accident, but then it is commonly a ſecondary inflammation, although not always; for the firſt ſhall have gone off, and

when ſuppuration was to take place, it ſhall have come kindly on, but afterwards the eryſepelatous ſhall take place.

This may be called a remote inflammation, and is, in this reſpect, ſomewhat ſimilar to the locked jaw.

It is more commonly a cutaneous inflammation than ſituated in the deeper ſeated parts; although in ſome conſtitutions every inflammation, wherever it exiſts, will moſt probably be of this kind; however, the ſkin appears to be moſt ſuſceptible of it, becauſe it will ſpread over a prodigious ſurface of ſkin, while it does not affect even the cellular membrane underneath; at leaſt not commonly. There is an inflammation which attacks internal canals, which is claſſed with the eryſepelatous, but how far it is the ſame I do not know; it is certainly not the ſuppurative; and as almoſt every other inflammation was formerly called eryſepelatous; this has been ſuppoſed to belong to this kind of inflammation. The inflammation I am ſpeaking of is more common to the throat than any other part, often going down the trachea: whatever it is, it may be conſidered in ſome of its effects to be in direct oppoſition to the adheſive and the ſuppurative inflammations; for where the adheſive moſt readily produces adheſions, there the eryſepelatous does not, as in the common cellular membrane; and where the adheſive ſeldom takes place, excepting from extreme violence, there this inflammation (if eryſepelatous) has a tendency to produce adheſions, as in canals or outlets; it alſo oppoſes, in ſome degree, the ſuppurative, in being backward in producing ſuppuration even in thoſe places where ſuppuration moſt readily takes place, ſuch as canals and outlets; for there, as above obſerved, it more readily throws out the coagulating lymph. Whatever the inflammation may be, it is certainly attended with nearly the ſame kind of conſtitutional affection. The fever in both appears to be the ſame, viz. accompanied with debility, langour, etc. The extravaſation in conſequence of the eryſepelatous inflammation is not ſo great as in either the adheſive, or the œdematous; nor is it of that kind which produces adheſions between the parts inflamed, which in this inflammation would commonly be unneceſſary, as it ſeldom produces ſuppuration, but is attended with very bad conſequences when it does. It appears to ſupport itſelf by continued ſympathy, for it commonly begins at a point and ſpreads, while it ſhall be getting well, where it firſt began.

This cannot be merely conſtitutional, for if it was, the parts already inflamed could not recover, if its increaſe in new parts aroſe from the conſtitution; but it gives the idea that when the parts have once gone through this action that they loſe the diſpoſition and become healthy. This property is not peculiar to this inflammation, the ring-worm has this peculiarity, as alſo many cutaneous ulcers*.

This inflammation is more common in the ſummer than in the winter, more eſpecialy in hoſpitals; and I think takes place oftener after wounds on the head than any other. I have often ſeen it begin round a wound, on the ſcalp, extending itſelf over the whole head and face; the eye-lids being very much ſwelled, the ears thickened, and it has advanced to the neck, ſhoulders, and body, creeping along both arms, and terminating at the finger ends; that which attacks the body often goes along the body to both thighs, down the legs, and terminates at the ends of the toes; and while this is going on, it is as expeditiouſly cured behind, and the ſkin peels off the cured parts; however, this is not always the caſe, it often ſtops, and where it proceeds ſo far, it is commonly becoming milder. This inflammation, when it runs along the ſkin, has a determined edge, not loſing itſelf gradually and inſenſibly in the ſkin beyond, as in the true adheſive, and indeed moſt of the inflammations; the ſkin feels as if only a little thickened, and not ſo pliable; for by paſſing the finger along the ſound ſkin to the inflamed, we feel an evident difference. The colour of the ſkin is of a darkiſh red. When it goes deeper than the ſkin into the cellular membrance, it often ſuppurates; but then I ſuſpect it is not the true eryſepelatous; for in ſuch caſes it commonly produces mortification in the cells, by which air is let looſe; this gives a ſtrange feel, neither of fluctuation nor crepitation, and as there are no adheſions the matter finds an eaſy paſſage into

* There appears to me two ways of accounting for this; one is, that the whole ſkin is very ſuſceptible of ſuch action, and readily goes on with it by continued ſympathy, and the part having gone through the action, like the ſmall-pox, etc. loſes the diſpoſition, and the action ceaſes.

The other is, that the inflammation is ſuch as to contaminate while it ſpreads, but when it has once acted it is cured as above obſerved. If this laſt be a true ſolution, then the right practice would be to ſtop its progreſs by deſtroying the parts beyond it.

the common cellular membrane, increasing the same kind of suppuration wherever it comes; and as mortification is a consequence of these inflammations, putrifaction ensues, and the discharge becomes very offensive. Whether this difference in the effect of the inflammation arises from the nature of the parts, I will not pretend to say. This effect takes place about the buttocks and side of the anus oftener than any where else; as indeed does common inflammation and suppuration.

This inflammation commonly begins with fever, lowness of spirits, and prostration of strength, loss of appetite, etc. but it commonly does not last long, and the inflammation shall spread even when the fever is gone off, but then it is not so violent: when it produces suppuration in the cellular membrane it is often dangerous, both from the disease itself, and the consequences of the matter diffusing itself much farther. This effect frequently takes place when this inflammation attacks the buttocks or parts near the anus, and often proves fatal. In such cases, as the sores seldom ulcerate, they should be opened early, for the matter either gets into the cellular membrane from the want of adhesions, or it separates parts that are only attached, as the periosteum from the bone, muscles from muscles etc. whereas the true suppurative ulcerates briskly, which, therefore, should not be opened early, but allowed to burst.

Many inflammations on the skin which come to suppuration, have something of the erysepelatous disposition, for we see them increasing the circle of inflammation, the cuticle separating, matter formed underneath from the cutis, and the sore healing in the centre; they perhaps begin like a pimple, but spread in that way to the breadth of a sixpence, shilling, or crown-piece; such often take place on the fingers.

The inflammation that produces the carbuncle is of a different nature from any of the former; it is stationary with respect to place, and is pretty much circumscribed, even forming a broad, flat, firm tumour; it begins in the skin almost like a pimple, and goes deeper and deeper, spreading with a broad base under the skin in the cellular membrane; and although considerably tumified, yet this does not arise from the extravasation of coagulating lymph producing adhesions which are to retain life, for

the very cells into which it is extravaſated become dead. It produces a ſuppuration, but not an abſceſs, ſomewhat ſimilar to the eryſepelatous when the inflammation paſſes into the cellular membrane, for as there are no adheſions, the matter lies in the cells where it was formed, almoſt like water in an anaſarca; but ſtill it is not diffuſed through the uninflamed cellular membrane, as in the eryſepelatous, for it appears to extend no further than the inflammation; one would almoſt imagine that there was a limitation to the extent, beyond which, this ſpecies of inflammation could not go, and at theſe limits the adheſive inflammation took place to confine the matter within the bounds of the carbuncle. A diffuſed ulceration on the inſide for the exit of the matter takes place, making a number of openings in the ſkin; there are generally more carbuncles than one at the ſame time, a great number ſucceeding each other, which would almoſt ſeem to produce each other in this ſucceſſion; they are commonly more on the trunk of the body than any where elſe; however, I have ſeen them on the head, and ſometimes on the extremities, although but ſeldom.

They are more commonly on the poſterior part of the body than the anterior.

This inflammation attacks more beyond the middle age than at it, and very few under it.

It is moſt common in thoſe that have lived well. I never ſaw but one patient of this kind in an hoſpital. It appears to have ſome affinity to the boil; but the boil differs in this reſpect, that it has more of the true inflammation, therefore ſpreads leſs, and is more peculiar to the young than the old, which may be the reaſon why it partakes more of the true inflammation.

As death is produced in a great deal of the cellular membrane, and I believe, in it only, except the ſkin giving way, which I believe is by ulceration principally, it becomes a queſtion, whether this mortification ariſes from the nature of the inflammation, or rather from the matter being confined in the cells of the cellular membrane? I rather ſuſpect the latter; for I find that if this matter eſcapes from theſe cells and comes into uninflamed cells, it produces mortification there. This is like the urine, for whenever the urine eſcapes into the cellular membrane it there produces mortification; the colour of the ſkin is at firſt more vivid than afterwards, for it becomes of a purple colour.

Inflammation often produces mortification or death in the part inflamed. This commonly takes place in old people that are become very much debilitated, and chiefly in the lower extremities. I ſuſpect it to be ſome what ſimilar to the carbuncle, viz. principally in thoſe who have lived well, although not ſo much confined to them as the carbuncle; however, it takes place in the young, where great debility has been produced from diſeaſe, eſpecially thoſe diſeaſes that have debility as a principle, ſuch as what are commonly called putrid fevers; but the ſituation of theſe is not ſo determined, and in ſuch, inflammation hardly takes place without an immediate exciting cauſe, as the application of bliſters, etc. Death in a part ſometimes takes place, almoſt immediately without inflammation; but this is not to the preſent purpoſe. Where mortification ſucceeds inflammation in the extremities, eſpecially in elderly perſons there is often an early ſeparation of the cuticle which forms a bliſter, filled with a bloody ſerum: and we ſhall obſerve dark browniſh ſpots, which conſiſt of extravaſated blood in the true cutis, and which ſhall at laſt bliſter, and then the cutis forms a ſlough.

Such inflammations have little of the adheſive tumefaction in them, but more of the œdematous; are not clear or tranſparent, but rather of a duſky red; as the colour of the inflamed parts ſhow ſomething of its nature, it is to be obſerved that it is different in all theſe inflammations from that of the true adheſive, and as we have reaſon to believe that the circulation is quicker in the adheſive inflammation than is natural, and that the colour ariſes from this cauſe, we may ſuppoſe that the motion of the blood in theſe is languid, and that it aſſumes the venal appearance, even in the arteries.

In moſt of theſe four inflammations there is an appearance that often ariſes, which is a rediſh ſtreak commonly paſſing from the inflamed parts towards the ſource of the circulation, but not always in this direction; ſometimes juſt the contrary; and this is more certain when it happens to take place in an extremity, becauſe there we know the courſe of all the veſſels better; but it does not always ariſe from the part inflamed. I have ſeen this laſt ſpecies of inflammation attack the toes, and red ſtreaks run up the foot, terminating about the ancle, while there were ſeveral ariſing on the fore part of the leg, juſt below the knee.

They often make a net-work on the leg, and are frequently a forerunner, and an attendant on mortification. They ſeldom go farther than a bluſh in the ſkin, ſeldom thicken, but are more of the œdematous kind; however, we ſometimes find hard cords running from ſores and inflammations, but theſe are commonly deeper ſeated, and I have ſuſpected them to be veins; as a proof of this, I have ſeen the ſuperficial veins of the leg have the ſkin red over them, ſimilar to thoſe above deſcribed, and the veins have felt hard under the finger. Theſe rediſh ſtreaks are ſuppoſed to be abſorbents, becoming inflamed by their carrying a ſtimulating fluid. I am apt to ſuppoſe them to be abſorbents, but I do not conceive that this effect ariſes from abſorption. If it aroſe from ſuch a cauſe, it ſhould be uniform, the cauſe ſhould always exiſt when the effect takes place. It is firſt to be obſerved, that it only takes place in certain conſtitutions, in which abſorption, one way or other explains nothing; and I find, upon obſervation, that this effect ſhall be coeval with the inflammation where no ſuppuration has taken place; I have even ſeen it ariſe from accident, prior to the poſſibility of inflammation taking place, viz. in the time of the pain ariſing from the immediate effects of the accident; this was in the finger, from the prick of a clean needle, which had been for ſome time piercing new buck-ſkin leather; the glands in the armpit were ſore, ſickneſs, attended with its uſual ſymptoms, ſuch as oppreſſion, was nearly as immediate. Its direction from the ſource of the circulation is another ſtrong proof of its not ariſing from abſorption, and its taking place at ſome diſtance is alſo a corroboration of the ſame opinion. Another ſtrong circumſtance in favour of this opinion is, that the morbid poiſons do not produce this effect, where we know abſorption has taken place. Thus the venereal ſeldom or ever produces it. The hard cord paſſing from the prepuce along the upper part of the penis, I do not conceive to be of this kind. In the ſmall-pox, after inoculation, it has been obſerved, but I imagine it was only in the above-mentioned conſtitutions. I could conceive it to ariſe in the plague, if there was any local diſeaſe. I am, therefore, rather apt to attribute this appearance to the irritation running along the lymphatics, more eſpecially in ſuch conſtitutions; and as we do not allow the veins to be abſorbents,

their being affected muſt be ſuppoſed to ariſe from the ſame cauſe. Whenever we ſee this effect, we may, in ſome degree, form an opinion of the kind of inflammation, and that it is not the moſt favourable.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

Med. Hist
WZ
270
H945t
1796
v.1
c.1